

Close Combat Mage

(近戰法師/近战法师)

Chapter 001-100 Cloud Sky (雲天空)

Story Description:

As a mage, it's very embarrassing to be in the water-type. Although it's a battle profession, the attack is very weak. Most people use it as a support profession.

But, the appearance of Suo Jia changed that convention. A water-type mage can also be incomparably strong!

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

Chapter 1: The Strongest Warrior

The screaming northern wind mixed together with the flying snow that filled the air devastated and ruined the plains of this northern country as they fused the sky and the ground together. The border line could not be found and the bare trees were mournfully shrieking in the cold wind like a young girl.

The formerly noisy alleys seemed especially bleak and desolate. Very rarely would a person walk. Occasionally, there would be a person fully equipped. From top to bottom they would be tightly covered and only revealing a pair of pitch-black eyes. They seem like a mysterious killer with a mask, but with the swelled cotton clothes and the thin body created the obvious contrast.

The winter of the north made people feel especially desolate as if all the living were hibernating. The days of the water droplets forming into ice made people's thoughts slow as well. If there wasn't many things to do, people would usually stay at home. Very seldomly would they go out the door so people also became more lazy.

Within a short cottage, Suo Jia was silently sitting on top of a wooden bed. Both his hands were skillfully turning and a stream of water which was as thick as a finger was continuously passing between his hands. This was his only toy and it was also his closest companion.

Cough cough...

Some quiet coughing sounds came from the room next door. Although it was obviously restrained, it still did not pass Suo Jia's sharp ears. He slightly spread both of his hands then the long stream of water went along Suo Jia's hands and withdrew itself. It magically disappeared and could not be found.

Nimbly jumping off the wooden bed, Suo Jia quickly walked out of the room. He went to the iron pot on the stove, poured a cup of boiling water, carefully held it with both hands, and walked towards the room next door...

Within the room, a weak woman was leaning on a pillow without strength. Her right hand was pressing on her soft chest, her eyebrows tightly wrinkling. Her face was full of pain, but when Suo Jia pushed open the door, at that instant, she quickly made all that vanish. The pain on her face disappeared in a flash, and her expression and attitude was like awakening from a sleep from spring.

Lightly walking over in front of the bed, “Mother...Is your illness better? Should we go ask for a doctor and take a look? It seems that your coughing is getting worse and worse these days.”

The woman warming extended her right hand and lightly stroked her son’s jet-black hair and lovingly said, “No need no need...I’m fine, it’ll get better after a few days.”

Frowning, Suo Jia looked at his mother as he half believed and half doubted. He touched the cup with his left hand, and after checking the temperature, he moved the cup of water in front of the woman, “Mother, drink some water. After drinking water, I want to hear you talk stories about father.”

Gratifyingly accepting the cup of water, the woman lightly sipped it, moistened her throat then smiled and said, “You want to hear stories about father huh, no problem... But, you need to show me how your ability is. If you’ve trained well, I’ll tell the story to you!”

Suo Jia excitedly lit up his eyes. He spread his hands apart, and coiling around his body was an almost 10 meter long water stream that was as thick as his arm. It quickly appeared around Suo Jia’s body, and magically spiralled around Suo Jia.

While nodding, the woman expectantly looked at his precious son, “Okay, you can perform now. Let me see what state did you reach in your control of the water streams!”

Nodding, Suo Jia cleverly moved both his hands and confidently controlled the near 10 meter long water stream that was around his body. It playfully danced as Suo Jia had absolute confidence in his control in the water streams. From the day of his 5th birthday, after his mother taught

this small game, he practiced everyday. Until today, it had been a whole 3 years. The water stream and him already became one. He could use it like his arms and however his heart wished to.

After a while, Suo Jia put away both his hands, and the long, faint-blue water stream slowly returned back into his hands and went missing. As he proudly looked at his mother, Suo Jia firmly said, "Don't worry mother, I will be like father and become the greatest warrior!"

Hearing her son's words, the woman bitterly nodded. Warrior? Was it possible for a water-type mage to be a strong warrior? She looked at her son with regret. She knew that because her son was a water-type, he was more suitable for being a mage. It would be very hard for him to have any achievements if his goal was being a warrior. The delicate water streams had no way of harming the enemy. Even if the water was solidified into ice, it was impossible to go against warriors that controlled fire.

Walking next to the bed, Suo Jia took off his shoes, climbed onto his mother's bed and snuggled against his mother's warm embrace. He acted like a spoiled child and said, "Okay mother, now...you can tell stories about father right?"

Ah...

Hiddenly sighing, the woman knew that the reason why her son wanted to be a warrior so badly was because she always told stories about his father. The father of the child was an extremely strong fire-type warrior. But sadly...The child's ability did not follow his father's, it followed his mother's which was a water-type!

Looking at the child who was snuggled against her and embraced by her, the woman tightened her arms and embraced her child even more strongly. The soft and pleasant to listen story started...

The light of the setting sun warmly shot into the room from the window. The story was finished and Suo Jia looked at the yellow that was outside the window as if it was a dream and he muttered, "Mother...Why hasn't father returned yet? When will he return? I want to see him!"

Her son's words made her nose sour and tears almost fell. As the

strongest warrior in the area, the child's father left with some of his comrades 6 days after the marriage. 9 years had passed since then. Perhaps he didn't even know that he had a son and the son was already 8 years old. Perhaps...not only the son, perhaps he even forgotten about his wife?

The woman's arms got even tighter. Now...Her son and herself relied on each other. But...her son was already 8 years old and it should be at the time to go to school.

The face of the woman became serious. She lowered her head and looked at her son who was in her embrace. She frowned in worry because in a few more days, it would be the time in which the school would start to enroll students. Although she didn't want her son to leave herself, for his future, she could not selfishly keep her son by her side.

But that wasn't the biggest problem. The thing that troubled her the most was as a water controller, her son only wanted to become the strongest warrior. Not to mention that it was a bad choice, purely on the side of the school, they would certainly not accept him!

The woman looked at her son and tried, "Suo Jia, listen to your mother. Don't be a warrior and become a noble mage. You should know that within the water-type mages, there are a lot of beautiful little girls. In the future, you don't need to be afraid of not being able to find anyone to play with you!"

"No! I don't want to !" Hearing his mother's words, Suo Jia resolutely shook his head and firmly said, "I have already decided to be the strongest warrior on the continent! I don't want to become any mage. Only little girls become mages."

You!

Hearing her son's words, the woman couldn't help but anxiously frown. A water controller wanted to be a warrior. The school would undoubtedly not accept him. Although children who were 8 years old had a chance to enter the school, the enrollment standards of the school were abnormally strict. There were millions of people living around this area, but they only

had 100 spots every year.

Looking at the son who made things difficult, the woman knew in the history of hundreds and thousands of years, there was never a water controller that could become a strong warrior. Just from that, no matter how much talent her son had, the school would not accept him.

The woman knew that her son's talent was not especially outstanding. It was just that his control with water was extremely proficient because of his training since he was young. The woman had never seen anyone that could control the water to such extend. Even the greatest water-type mages could not do it.

Although her son only trained for 3 years, in those 3 years, it was the quickest development for her son. The realm in which he reached by using 3 years to train was not achievable even if he used 30 years of training in the future. If one missed that period of time, a person would never be able to control the water currents as they wished.

Extra Information

Close Combat Mage (近戰法師/近战法师 Jin Zhan Fa Shi) is a Chinese web novel written by Cloud Sky (雲天空/云天空 Yun Tian Kong). It is finished with 790 chapters, and it belongs in the "Strange Fantasy" category and the subcategory of "Western Fantasy". It has over 14 million views and over 2 million characters.

Chapter 2: Becoming a Mage

Children are innocent, and they are also the most intelligent. They are like a blank sheet of paper, able to write whatever they want and be whoever they want to be. If an individual wants to have achievements in martial arts, then they must practice while they are young. If they waste their first eight years, then even within their whole lives it will be impossible to achieve unity between heaven and man and reach the realm they want to reach.

However, children are also naughty and playful, so how much benefit do they really receive from this precious period of time? If we weigh this precious time on a scale of ten units, even if the child utilized one or two units, then that child is already considered to be smart!

Suo Jia's mother looked at Suo Jia with pride. She knew that when she contracted her illness three years ago Suo Jia was still too small, and couldn't play outside by himself. Ever since then, that stream of water was his only companion, as well as his only form of toy.

She watched Suo Jia with an apologetic look, knowing she owed him too much. Within these three years, Suo Jia had already avoided communicating with others. If he wasn't sitting on the side practicing with water alone, then he was by his mother's side listening to stories about his father.

Every day around this time, Suo Jia's mother would always watch her son perform his water-control techniques and afterwards, give her son encouragement, and fill him with praise. This is why although only three years had passed, Suo Jia's water control techniques can be considered to almost have reached the magic expert level.

However, controlling water is not the same as water magic. Controlling water is like adding, subtracting, multiplying or dividing; simply a basic foundation. Water magic, however, was an advanced practice that used high-rank water techniques. Right now, Suo Jia can only be considered to have an exceptional foundation.

Suo Jia's mother sighed, and embarrassingly said while looking at son, "Suo Jia, listen to your mother's words, mother knows that you want to become a powerful warrior, however the truth is that warrior schools won't accept any water-controlling warriors. If you aren't accepted to a school, then you could never become powerful.

Ah!

After listening to his mother's words, Suo Jia could not help but sit up and impatiently say, "This cannot be mom! How can they not accept me? I will definitely become powerful and for mother's sake bring back father!"

Suo Jia's mother smiled gently, and while softly stroking Suo Jia's hair said: "Your mother is very pleased with your intention, but the truth is obvious! If you want to become powerful, then you need to become a water mage."

Suo Jia looked at his mother stubbornly, hoping that she would have an alternative way to solve this problem. However, after looking at her for a long time, she did not say anything, only looking at him helplessly. Suo Jia understood that some things simply could not be changed.

Suo Jia's mother watched the stubborn Suo Jia who unwilling to look at her. Finally, she was unable to continue looking at her miserable son, and with a loving hug she gently said, "Child, regardless of other things, just become a water mage okay? If you don't, then there's no way of becoming more powerful. Just forget about your dream of becoming the strongest warrior!"

"Is going to school the only way to become stronger?" Suo Jia looked firmly at his mother, with his final effort.

Suo Jia's mom nodded with difficulty, and reluctantly said, "That's correct, only by going to a school can you receive the most systematic and well-rounded education. If you don't go to a school, then then you won't become strong."

Suo Jia took a deep breath, and firmly said, "Alright mother. Since it's like this, for the sake of becoming stronger, I will become a water mage. However, I will never throw away my goal. One day, you will definitely see

me become the greatest warrior.” After saying this, Suo Jia jumped off the bed and took large strides out of the room.

Looking at Suo Jia’s stubborn back, Suo Jia’s mother face was bitter. Maybe her child’s wish was naïve and without reason, but at the same time he was stubborn and determined! When Suo Jia returned to his room, he sat unhappily on his bed and once again pulled out that thumb-think stream of water and skillfully began to control it.

Suo Jia, while looking at the pure and glistening water stream in his hands, secretly wondered why couldn’t water controlling individuals become great warriors. Why did all water controllers need to become mages? This wasn’t fair at all!

While looking at the tricking water in his hands, Suo Jia felt what it meant to be hopeless for the first time. No matter how skilled he was at controlling water, if he could not become a powerful warrior, then what was the point?

Heng!

After playing with the stream of water for a while, Suo Jia finally put away the water stream and stubbornly said to himself, “Forget it. No matter what happens, I still want to become a strong warrior like my father. Even if I enter school as a mage, I still will work hard to become the strongest warrior.”

After thinking about this alone in his room, Suo Jia finally found peace. With a happy grin, he put his mind to ease and extending both hands, freely began to control the sparkling water stream. The stream moved around both his hands and his body continuously, and after a short period of time, a happy laughter could be heard within the house.

Five days later, Suo Jia and his mother arrived at Holy Light Academy’s preliminary assessment area early in the morning. Only by passing the preliminary test could you have a chance to take the formal exam at Holy Light Academy’s Headquarters.

The weather was extremely cold. Even though it had just stopped snowing, it felt even colder than before. Despite the fact that it was dawn,

the examination area was already packed with people in groups of twos and threes. Everyone was silently waiting for the start of the exam.

Only after the sunlight had just began to sneak out of the mist and a slight red appeared over the horizon, did Holy Light Academy's Examiners come out one by one into the already decorated exam room. The children said their goodbyes to their parents, and entered the examination room.

The examination took place at a big building nearby, and since this was a small village, not many children took part, only roughly 200 or 300. Looking at the surrounding decorations and scenery, when Suo Jia saw the nearby children talking and laughing he began to feel awkward and uncomfortable. No one talked to him, and he didn't try to talk to others either.

Fortunately Suo Jia didn't have feel this way for too long, as the exam was going to begin soon. One by one, the children entered the examination room to begin. The exam was extremely fast, lasting about only one minute per person.

Suo Jia didn't want to come into contact with others too much, so he moved towards the back of the line. Only after almost all of the other children were tested did he get the opportunity to enter the testing room. By now, there were only a few children that haven't been tested yet.

"Sigh... In this city, there's not even one talented child. Not only that, none of the parents knew that encouraging them to practice was important. Don't tell me that they don't know that spoiling the children can only be bad for their future?" Suo Jia heard this heavy voice upon entering the door.

Suo Jia lifted his head and saw within the examination room, there was a long wooden table. Behind the wooden table sat three examiners who were talking among themselves.

While Suo Jia was observing the room, another voice replied, "You shouldn't have too high expectations, this is only a small city. If not for that powerful warrior Suo Luo Si originating from this village, this place wouldn't be necessary for our selection process. We really only take about

one in a million!”

Hearing the examiner’s words, his eyes lit up. Soros was his father! That was the first time Suo Jia heard someone else talk about his father. Super powerful warrior? That was really too cool.

“Alright, alright that’s enough. We can talk about these things after the exam is over. Either way there aren’t many children left, let’s finish early and grab a couple of drinks. The weather is so cold, and there might not be anything that tastes very good.” The examiner said in a serious tone when he saw Suo Jia.

Gesturing his hands towards Suo Jia, the examiner opened his mouth and said, “Kid, come a bit closer. It’s just a test, uncle won’t eat people, you don’t need to be so far away.” (TL: whoa pedo alert)

Suo Jia, hearing those words, turned a little red and stepped forwards obediently. After taking a small step, he immediately stopped again. The examiners could not help but laugh a bit. Standing so far away, how could they test him?

However, after so many failed children, the three examiners did not think too highly of this child. If he wanted to stand far away, so be it! As long as they let him demonstrate for a bit, they could ask him to leave. These three examiners already inwardly thought that they had wasted their time coming to this village.

The examiner smiled and said, “Alright! Demonstrate some of your skills for us! Show us your best techniques so we can evaluate them.”

Chapter 3: An Admirable, Strong and Wise Man

Perform? Hearing the examiner's words, Suo Jia's eyes lit up with excitement. Ever since he could remember, Suo Jia had been depending on his own ability to perform for his mother. Only today, it was simply performing his water controlling techniques, giving him a lot of self confidence. For Suo Jia, controlling water was like breathing, a completely natural thing to do.

Looking at the examiners with confidence, Suo Jia's casually waved his hand, and a stream of water as thick as an arm appeared out of nowhere, circling his hand. It formed a coiling water dragon (TL: cough), and from head to toe, Suo Jia was enveloped within that water dragon!

"What!" Seeing his performance, the three examiners stood up with dumbstruck expressions. It looked as if they had just seen a ghost. What was this supposed to be? Was it even possible for an eight year old child to be able to control water at this level? This was too unbelievable.

In order to watch this more clearly, the three examiners unconsciously moved from behind the table in turn towards Suo Jia's side with concentrated admiration. Under their gazes, Suo Jia's hands danced cleverly. Under Suo Jia's commands, the clear water dragon moved as if it was alive, baring its fangs and brandishing its claws*, ready to wreak havoc.

Without knowing how much time had passed, Suo Jia's performance eventually ended. Only after watching the obedient water dragon did the three examiners let out a deep exhale. This was brilliant, truly too spectacular!

[The examiners] took a moment to look at each other, then... without hesitation revealed a red-colored scroll. Handing it over with a smile, they said, "Excellent, you were truly excellent, there is absolutely no need for you to take the second examination. Right now... take this scroll home, tell your mother and father to prepare 1000 gold, and report to Holy Light

Academy in a month!”

Hearing the examiner’s words, Sui Jia began to laugh happily, accepting the red scroll. He hesitated for a bit, then asked the examiner tentatively: “Uncle, with this scroll, can I learn the skills of a warrior at the academy?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the judge stared blankly for a moment, then laughed loudly. “Don’t be silly child, how could such a talented water control mage become a warrior? To warriors, controlling abilities are rarely used. Go home quickly, I trust that your father and mother would not want you to become a warrior either.”

Disappointed, Suo Jia closed his mouth and silently turned away, leaving the test room. Although he had already heard his mother say that [becoming a warrior] was impossible, after hearing an actual confirmation of this, Suo Jia knew that he couldn’t avoid this fact. Thus, he was once again hurt by hearing it.

As Suo Jia walked out of the testing area, he saw that all traces of the other parents and their children had disappeared. Only his mother alone, shivering from standing in the chilling winds for such a long time, was quietly waiting for Suo Jia. After seeing his frail mother, Suo Jia relinquished his regrets and quickly ran to meet her.

Seeing Suo Jia’s disheartened face, the woman thought that he had not passed the test. Even though she felt regret inside her heart, she still quickly held her son to her chest, gently consoling him, “Don’t worry if you didn’t pass this year Suo Jia, let’s go home and practice well. We can always take the test again next year. Mother believes that Suo Jia is the best, and there will definitely come a day where you pass.”

Hearing his mother’s words, Suo Jia stare blankly, then immediately shook his head: “No mother, I passed.” While speaking, Suo Jia pulled out the red scroll from his chest, handing it over to his mother.

Ah!

Seeing that flaming red scroll, the woman opened her small mouth in shock. Although she had faith in her son, Holy Light Academy’s selection

process was still considered very strict. She did not actually believe her son would be accepted, which was why she was having a hard time accepting this even with the official proof right in her front of her.

Looking at his mother's shocked expression, Suo Jia said in a low voice: "The examiner said to prepare 1000 gold, and to report back to Holy Light Academy in a month."

"A thousand gold!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, the woman inhaled a cold breath. Even though she wanted her son to enter Holy Light Academy, she never thought the tuition would be so expensive, expensive to the point where the amount wasn't something she could begin to fathom about.

That year when Suo Jia's father had left, he had left some gold behind. As one of the strongest warriors, Suo Luo Si had some assets, and left an entire 10,000 gold. However, nine years had passed, and most of the money had already been spent. Adding on the last three years, since [the woman] was sick in bed, their financial state was one disaster on top of another*.

Looking at the blazing red admissions certification in her hands, the woman trembled; right now....they could pay out 1000 gold, but from then after, what were they to eat?

Feeling his mother's trembling frame, Suo Jia realized something. He slightly lifted his head, looking at his mother's pained face, and asked in a low voice: "Mother, have we run out of money?"

This....

Confronting Suo Jia's question, the woman started, and shook her head. "No, no that isn't a problem, don't worry. We still have money; there's no need for you to concern yourself with that. No matter what, let your mother handle financial issues. You just need to study well." As she was speaking, the woman gently held Suo Jia in her arms, slowly leading them back home.

That evening, even though it was already deep into the night, the woman tossed about in her bed, unable to sleep. To not let her son attend school was out of the question, but if the school tuition was paid, how

would they survive? Putting herself aside, Suo Jia still had to eat and wear clothes right?

Opening her eyes, the woman absentmindedly stared at the beautiful ceiling. Since the situation had already reached this stage, the only option left was to sell the house. This house was left behind by Suo Jia's maternal grandfather. The area was large, gorgeous, and very cozy, but for the sake of Suo Jia, did she have any other options?

"Did you fall asleep mother?" asked Suo Jia in a quiet voice.

Turning towards the door, she sat up and said, "Mom didn't sleep yet, come inside Suo Jia."

Hearing his mother's voice, Suo Jia gently pushed open the door and walked in wearing his pajamas. Standing near his mother's bed, Suo Jia waited silently for a long time before saying resolutely, "I don't want to attend school anymore. Let's not go, okay?"

After listening to Suo Jia's words, the woman's eyes could not help but moisten. Shaking her head, she said with a smile, "Suo Jia, you don't need to worry about these things. Your mother has already planned this out. In a few days, mother will follow you to Holy Light City. Regarding the tuition, you do not need to worry; mother has ways to resolve this."

"What? Mother is going to go together with me?" Suo Jia excitedly shouted after hearing his mother's words.

Nodding her head, the woman lovingly said, "That's correct, Mother does not want to leave Suo Jia since I won't be at ease if you are by yourself outside. Mother will accompany you. Don't worry and go to sleep; everything will work out."

Suo Jia nodded his head excitedly and did say anything else. Right now..... he only wanted to grow up quickly, and quickly get stronger. Only after that happened could he help his mother.

"Mother..... I want to sleep together with you." Suo Jia said spoiledly.
(TL: Whoa Bic Boi)

Watching her son's cute actions, the woman helplessly shook her head,

and lifted her fragrant bed covers. At the same time, Suo Jia quickly snuggled inside. In the cold winter night, the two bodies warmed each other.

Within the next couple of days, Suo Jia's mother sold their house at a suitable price. Soon after, she left the city with Suo Jia at her side, heading quickly towards Holy Light Academy.

Holy Light City was extremely busy, with a population of several millions. In such a big city, finding a place to live was very expensive. With the amount of money Suo Jia's mother currently possessed, purchasing a house was impossible, even if it was the smallest one.

In this helpless situation, the woman could only rent a small, dark room near Holy Light Academy. This would be the mother and son's home for several years.

Looking at the dark and shabby room, Suo Jia understood everything. It was obvious that their financial situation was terrible. Looking again at the dark and shabby room, which was not even 20 square meters in size, it could only fit only two run down wooden beds and a dinner table.

Within the cramped and dark room, the beautiful and gentle mother was currently occupied. She was thinking back to her original bright, spacious, gorgeous and comfortable home. At that moment, Suo Jia's two eyes turned a bit red. Because of him, his mother had to deal with so much pressure. For the first time, Suo Jia began to feel hatred towards his father. Where did he go? Why didn't he care about his wife's and son's lives?

Chapter 4: Entering Holy Light

Holy Light Academy had over a thousand years of history. Countless great warriors and mages had originated from this institution, and now... Suo Jia was lucky enough to become a part of it.

Wearing dark blue mage robes, Suo Jia silently entered the classroom. Nobody paid attention to him, and he didn't bother them either. He walked to the corner of the classroom alone and quietly sat down, waiting for the class session to begin.

This was Suo Jia's first class in school. Sitting around him were many amazing geniuses from other areas. After all...everyone here had been specially selected out of millions of people. If they didn't have the talent, they would not have the qualification to be sitting here.

After surveying his surroundings, Suo Jia realized the strange truth that out of his entire class he was..... he was actually the only male student! The other a hundred students were actually "all the same color"; all of them were young girls! Within the classroom, a subtle smell of flowers floated about; no, the smell of it surpassed that of flowers.

Water arts are favored by females, and is under their domain! With regards to water mages, women will always be more blessed than men! This is similar to the idea of how men are more blessed with fire arts than women. What excites earthly people the most about this is that all men with the fire attribute are mighty, powerful, and formidable warriors, while all women with the water attribute are tender, loving, and charming.

After a long time, a woman in her 20s walked in with indescribable daintiness, wearing a purple mage robe, and carrying a magic book in hand. As she walked in with a sweet smile, the entire classroom became silent in a flash. Lightly placing the magic book down on the podium, the instructor asked, "Before I begin class, I would like to ask everyone a question. What exactly is the greatest difference between a mage and a warrior?"

Hearing the question, all the girls began to noisily chatter, answering the question all at once. Some said that the difference was in the limitation of the types of attacks, others said it was the strength of attacks, while there were those that didn't answer at all. However, not a single individual could clearly, with concrete reasoning, correctly answer the two largest differences.

Helplessly wrinkling her brow, the lecturer gave up and answered in a heavy voice: "Let me explain it to all of you then. The largest difference between a warrior and a mage is distance. From today on, I would like you all to remember that to be able to maintain the distance between you and the enemy is the foundation of being a mage. Close combat is within the warrior's realm!"

Listening to the lecturer's words, Sui Jia's eyes lit up in excitement. Hear that? Warriors were still the coolest; mages were under the warriors' realm. The warriors were so majestic and formidable. As a man, if he could not become a hot-blooded warrior, he would regret it for the rest of his life!

Suo Jia pondered for a bit, as the lecturer with indescribable beauty continued: "As long as you widen the distance, then...no matter how powerful the warrior, they can only be reduced to our target. Thus...as mages, we only have two goals: to learn how to evade, and to learn strong magic. It's that simple!"

As the female lecturer's voice fell, all of the girls started chatting again. Straining his ears, Suo Jia could hear the surrounding girls discuss: "Aye, we totally don't want to fight with those males, how crude. Mages are still the best, to be able to beat them up with magic from afar."

Sigh...

Hearing the thoughts of the girls around him, Suo Jia laughed bitterly. For such hot-blooded fights to be insulted so easily... Using a cowardly method like hiding from far away and throwing magic spells out, these girls would really never understand the passionate feelings attained by warriors.

“Pa pa pa!” After clearly clapping a few times, waiting for all the girls to quiet down, the female lecturer continued, “Okay students, we will be spending the next ten years together. I hope that everyone will study diligently, build harmony together, and help each other out.”

“Ten years!” After hearing the lecturer’s words, Suo Jia inhaled a cold breath. Originally, he had thought that he could graduate after learning for only a single year. After hearing the teacher’s words, he realized that it actually took a time period of ten years!

Suo Jia clearly understood that the thousand gold his family paid could not be ten year’s worth of tuition. In this world, such cheap things did not exist. If he wanted to continue learning after a year, he would have to pay another thousand gold. To Suo Jia however, this was an impossible task.

Originally, Suo Jia had planned it all out. After graduating, he would definitely work hard to earn money, buying his mother a spacious and cozy house just like their previous one. With this turn of events, he wasn’t even sure where to find money for next year’s tuition, let alone be able to buy a large house .

Even though Mother was constantly saying that he should just study diligently and not worry about money, Suo Jia, although still a child, was not dumb. He knew that if they had the money, Mother would not be living in such a dark and cramped house. Even if Mother could endure it, she definitely would hate to see Suo Jia suffer too.

In a daze, the first day of classes had passed just like that. Leaving the school grounds, Suo Jia rushed home with heavy emotions. As soon as he pushed open the door, he was suddenly met with an alluring smell. He looked over disbelievingly, and saw a piping hot plate of barbecued meat placed in the middle of the wooden table.

Looking at the enticing barbecued meat, Suo Jia could not help but swallow his saliva. He could not remember how long it had last been since he had eaten such savory barbecued meat. Why had his mother been willing to spend the money today?

While he was contemplating, Suo Jia’s mother noticed Suo Jia and

smiled. "Come quickly Suo Jia, let's celebrate properly!"

"Celebrate?" Suo Jia gave his mother a puzzled look. He could not think of any occasion worth celebrating. He still complied however, and walked in front of the table to sit down.

Seeing Suo Jia's puzzled expression, the woman laughed. "There are two things to celebrate today. The first is celebrating Suo Jia attending school, and the second is celebrating Mother finding a job!"

Hearing his mother's words, Suo Jia's heart raced. He knew very clearly that with a job, they could earn money, and with money, their lifestyle could be maintained.

The woman had already placed a few pieces of the barbecue in front of Suo Jia, and tenderly said, "Eat quickly Suo Jia, while it's still warm. You are currently growing and need the nutrition, so eat a bit more."

Although his nose was smelling the barbecue's fragrance, his eyes were fixed on his mother's delicate hands. In his memory, her tender and lovely lily-white hands were soft and satiny, so smooth that no wrinkles could be seen. Now however, Suo Jia clearly saw several blemishes on his mother's fingers.

Stunned, Suo Jia unconsciously asked: "Mother, how did you find a job? Why are your hands..."

Hearing her son's words, the woman was shocked as she looked at her own hands. As if suddenly realizing something, she quickly withdrew her hands behind her back. With a charming smile on her face, she narrowed her eyes, shook her head, and replied: "Nothing happened, nothing at all. Mother only helped some people wash their clothes. It gives a salary of 1 gold a day!"

Although his mother's words were light, Suo Jia's thoughts swarmed inside his head as he heard these words. What kind of horrible experience was this, washing clothes in such cold weather? A gold a day was in fact not a small amount, but nobody would ever give away money for no reason. If you cannot do anything to deserve the money, then nobody will give any to you.

Tears quickly began to blur Suo Jia's vision. Eyes filled with glistening tears, Suo Jia's heart could not help recalling the images of his mother's delicate and beautiful hands now covered in scratches. How could a gentle and beautiful woman like his mother, who was meant to be pampered and loved, do such rough work?

Suo Jia knew that his affinity with water was inherited from his mother. As a woman with water affinity, his mother's beauty was irrefutable. In fact, all women with water affinity can never be ugly; they are all women with charming looks and clear expressions. Women with water affinity represent beauty itself.

Many men had chased after his mother in past years, despite knowing that his mother was married and had a child. Although he didn't really understand, even though many men chased after his mother, his mother's love for his father was too deep, and she never considered accepting any of them.

However, it was surprising to see that a once delicate and beautiful woman would actually live this type of lifestyle, working hard for the sake of a better life and for Suo Jia. This made Suo Jia's heart grieve, and he couldn't quite come to terms with this.

Suo Jia really wanted to stop his mother from continuing this job. However, just as the words were about to reach his lips, Suo Jia could not actually say the words. If the job wasn't done, then how could their lives continue? Unless he earned money himself, on what basis could he stop his mother?

Tormented, he grabbed the hands being held behind his mother's back. His large tears fell drop by drop onto her blemished hands, and looked at the hands that were now covered in angry red scratches. At this point, guilt and helplessness hit, and Suo Jia wished that he could grow up quicker. The truth remained however, that he still a mere 8-years old child.

After a while, Suo Jia said in a heavy voice, "Mother, I hate Father."

Chapter 5: Encountering a Challenge

On the second morning, Suo Jia arrived at school on time while his mother also left to rush to work. The world is just like that: even though there are many things we don't want to do, we have to endure and do them anyways.

Suo Jia sat in his seat with a downcast mood. His mind was filled with endless thoughts about his mother's pale-white, creased and scarred hands. Suo Jia knew that soon his mother's hands would be completely worn out, while Suo Jia was powerless to stop it.

His mother may have a child as old as he was, but when she gave birth to him she had only been around 16 years old. This means that his mother was currently only 24 to 25 years old, This was the most beautiful period of age for women, but right now his mother could not enjoy this because of him....

Suo Jia knew that as he sat in his warm classroom and absorbed the information that the teacher was presenting, his beautiful mother was instead sitting in a chilly room using piercing, ice-cold water to wash clothing, bundle after bundle. Only after washing enough clothes would others pay her the money. Thinking deeply, Suo Jia's body could not help but tremble. He could not wish for anything other than being able to help his mother.

"Hey!" Just as Suo Jia was thinking painful thoughts, a clear and delicate voice rang from beside his ear.

Stunned, Suo Jia opened his eyes, and puzzled, he looked towards the direction of the voice. He saw that, for some unknown reason, all those cute and charming girls in his class had gathered in front of him (E: Harem plz). With three layers inside, and three layers outside, they tightly surrounded him. Suo Jia could not understand; what did these girls want to do, and why were they surrounding him?

Just as Suo Jia was pondering this, a girl with long blue hair attractively bent over, sized him up, and asked in a suspicious tone: "We were all very

curious; how did you enter this school? Is it possible....that your talent in water magic is greater than a girl's?"

This...

Hearing the girl's words, Suo Jia's face involuntarily blushed. It was definitely strange for a male's water affinity to be higher than a female's. It was similar to how unconventional it was for a female to be stronger than a robust male. Calling him a freak was definitely not wrong; he was definitely not a normal person.

In reality, Suo Jia knew very well that his talent in water could not be called exceptional. Compared to others in his class, he was actually the weakest. His strong point was his ability to control the water, not his ability to use water magic!

Seeing Suo Jia blush, yet not answering her question, the blue-haired girl could not help but pout, arrogantly declaring: "Since you refuse to answer me, fine....I want to challenge you, and see exactly on what basis you were able to enter our class!"

"Challenge!" Hearing the girl's words, Suo Jia's eyes could not help brightening. In Suo Jia's mind a challenge was just a performance, something that Suo Jia enjoyed and had much confidence in.

Pondering, Suo Jia nodded without hesitation and accepted the girl's challenge. Since he had never gone outside, and never had any friends, Suo Jia did not know that a challenge was not an individual performance, but two people taking the initiative and attacking each other to reach a certain goal!

The girl had not expected Suo Jia to accept her challenge so happily, and she could not help but be shocked at his response. Originally, girls didn't fight much. The reason she had brought up the challenge was to simply to simply give herself face. If Suo Jia had taken that chance to explain his reasoning, then the girl might have sulked for a bit, and it wouldn't have been a big deal. However, she had not expected Suo Jia to happily accept it!

No matter how good her ability is, a girl is still a girl, and before even

starting the fight, she began to feel apprehensive. She easily backed a few meters away in a mechanical matter, stiffly turning towards Suo Jia to say: “Fine...since you agreed to the challenge, then....then I will not show mercy!”

As she spoke, the girl reached her hand behind, pulling out a magic staff from her waist, and told Suo Jia: “Hurry up and stand. You had better receive my water sphere magic seriously, or else, beware....beware...” Besides from saying a few ‘beware’s, the girl could think of anything menacing to say towards Suo Jia.

Hearing the girl’s words, Suo Jia excitedly stood up, and walked to the empty space nearby, standing to face the girl directly. In Suo Jia’s mind, he thought that if his opponent wanted him to receive a sphere of water, then that definitely meant that she was willing to perform for him. If that was the case, then he would obediently wait to receive it.

While thinking of this, Suo Jia smiled at the blue-haired girl, and lifted his right hand. Waving a finger at her, he confidently said: “Fine, I’ve already finished preparing. Go ahead and throw it!”

To Suo Jia, his idea of a challenge was just a performance, or a game. These types of things were nothing major, and he had become an expert on them. But to the girl, the situation was completely different.

To the girl, the challenge was a battle, a fight. Even the more courageous blue-haired girl, was shaking from her hands to her feet. However, seeing Suo Jia, who was calmly and comfortable standing there with a completely relaxed smile, this....this manner meant that he could be one of those top experts!

In this world, there exists a profession called a traveling bard. He will spend his entire life traveling to different cities around the world. Every time he visits a new place, he stays at a hotel and shares his knowledge. All well known figures become a part of his song, and reputations are thusly built.

It can be said that traveling bards are the most authoritative critics! Epics about legends, epics about heroes, and epics about treasures all

originate from their mouths. The evaluation of such an epic would thus be a top assessment!

At present, the challenge had turned into a performance, a game, to Suo Jia. Unconsciously, he had shown the poise and temperament of an epic-level figure. All in all, not only did he cause the surrounding girls to stare in daze, even the teacher that had just entered the room, prepared to stop the battle, was obediently closing her mouth. Every single person wanted to witness the epic-level figure fight!

In this world, there is a very popular saying that is upheld as the truth and passed down in generations—when confronting your opponent, whether it be you or your enemy, one person will definitely be intimidated. If you are not intimidated, then your enemy definitely is!

Whether or not this statement is the truth will be put aside for now. Facing the relaxed and composed Suo Jia who was filled with confidence, the blue-haired girl could not help but be frightened at that point. However, she was unable to say anything, and spilled water cannot be recovered. At this point, the “prepped arrow could not help but fly forwards”.

Biting her lip hard, the girl lifted the cute and delicate blue staff, swiftly speaking the incantations necessary to activate the water sphere magic. Very quickly, a blue sphere rippled out from the magic staff, whizzing in Suo Jia’s direction. Seeing this, the female instructor standing behind the crowd nodded her head in praise. This young girl’s talent was definitely good! Being able to produce water sphere magic so quickly was definitely not an easy task!

“Well delivered!” Right as the female instructor was silently admiring the attack, Suo Jia was watching the water sphere fly towards him at high speeds. Eyes brightening, his right hand flashed out with a shout, and the perfectly round sphere of water was suddenly pulled to a length of ten meters, with a thickness of a thumb. Under Suo Jia’s clever hands, the water was manipulated so that it wrapped around his body, fluidly coiling around him.

Seeing such an episode, the people watching opened their mouths wide in shock, unable to believe what was happening in front of them. What was this? Was this some time of acrobatics performance, or a magic performance? This was too incomprehensible; nobody had ever manipulated water like that before! Everyone knows that water was composed of the most basic droplets of water to form a large body—a water sphere, not a water ribbon!

Seeing the shocked expressions on the surrounding students' faces, Suo Jia could not help but be secretly delighted; To show off to the spectators, Suo Jia's hands suddenly pushed and pulled....causing the long water stream to circle once, and then like a dragon controlling the seas, it leaped up towards the blue-haired girl opposite of him.

“Ya!” Facing the berserk water stream leaping towards her, the blue-haired girl shouted hysterically. Unable to evade, the girl could only use her hands to cover her face, her whole body taut, and gritted her teeth, waiting for the pain to hit her.

Chapter 6: Laws of Water: Moisture

After shutting her eyes tightly in anticipation of the impending pain, the blue-haired girl noticed that she actually didn't feel any. She secretly spread out the fingers covering her eyes and stole a peek across from her through the cracks.

Based on the blue-haired girl's inspection, that clear flowing stream of water had at some point already returned to the boy's side. The stream of water was coiled around the boy, circling around him as if it had a spirit of its own. It was truly mystical!

Seeing her opponent's display, the blue-haired girl knew that her opponent had only been playing with her. At this point, the blue-haired girl could not help but scrunch her mouth, and feel like weeping passionately. At home, she was the family's little princess. When had she ever felt such a frightening and embarrassing event like this? In the end... the girl opened her mouth, and began to cry loudly.

Suo Jia, seeing the girl opposite of him suddenly cry heavily, was left flabbergasted. What was happening? Even though her performance may have been inferior to his, that was not enough of a reason to cry, right? Could this possibly mean that during their performance, he had frightened her somehow?

Considering such thoughts, Suo Jia could not help but feel guilty. He quietly walked up to the blue-haired girl, and said to her sincerely: "I'm sorry, I shouldn't have scared you earlier. Please don't cry, I won't frighten you anymore."

Hearing the sound of Suo Jia's sincere apology, the blue-haired girl choked and stopped crying. Wiping her tears, she pouted: "I could forgive you, but you first need to tell me: how did you enter our class? Your talent is..."

Aye...

Not waiting for the girl to finish her words, the female instructor sighed loudly. Splitting the crowd, the female lecturer walked in front of the two.

She first concentrated her gaze at Suo Jia, then sincerely said to the blue-haired girl: "Do you understand now? The reason he could enter this class was not because his talent was high. Truth be told, amongst our class, his talent is actually the lowest."

After saying these words, the female lecturer clapped her hands, and with a serious face, said: "Everyone is to return to their own seats right now. I have something to say!" Hearing her words, all the girls quickly returned to their seats.

Returning to the podium, the female lecturer said in a serious voice: "Currently everyone must be wondering: if Student Suo Jia's talent was not that high, then how was he able to enroll in our school? Allow me to explain."

Speaking these words, the female lecturer looked at Suo Jia with admiration, then continued: "Student Suo Jia could enter this school not because of his talent, but because of his ability to control water. His control of water can be considered to have entered the realm of perfection! In reality, he entered this academy based off of his ability to control water!"

Coldly sweeping her eyes around the room, the female lecturer continued: "Don't think that you can be arrogant just because your natural talent is 1 in 10,000. In actuality, effort and hard work are more important than innate talent. As all of you have seen, Suo Jia's ability in controlling water has reached unimaginable heights. Under his will, water seems almost alive. Even for your teacher, such absolute dominion over water is unheard of."

Hearing the words of praise from his teacher, Suo Jia couldn't help smiling from ear to ear. The truth was... water was his best friend and consequently he had become rather proficient at manipulating water. The act didn't require much conscious thought either; just by thinking for the briefest of moments, he could maneuver water however he pleased!

Seeing Suo Jia's expression of being unable to contain his joy, the female lecturer could not help but furrow her brow. As a teacher, she knew very

clearly that a student's worst enemy was arrogance and self-satisfaction. Once you became arrogant and self-satisfied, then your life was over. Countless children with the strongest abilities had been sent to their death because of arrogance and self-satisfaction!

The female teacher opened her mouth and said coldly, "However, even though Student Suo Jia's control is as exceptional as it is... compared to the number of skills a water mage must possess, he is still lacking."

Coming to this point in her lecture, the female teacher said authoritatively, "Now, the usage of the water arts is mostly limited to support, in truth... it is near impossible to injure or kill one's enemies with water. Am I correct, Student Suo Jia?"

Hearing his teacher's words, Suo Jia suddenly calmed down. In the past, he had never considered this problem, but hearing his teacher saying it in such a manner, his face immediately went pale. Could Water Elemental Arts kill?

Without a doubt, water was powerful, but to use it to injure or kill an enemy is a joke. If you use water to attack an enemy, turning them into a "chicken dropped in soup", would probably be the highest level you can reach. The truth is, even this goal is hard to achieve unless your opponent is too much of "a vegetable". (TL: this is probably an expression but I still found it funny^^)

Seeing Suo Jia's small downcast face, the female teacher let out a deep breath. She knew that she had achieved her goal of waking up this child. The truth was, although what she said was correct, it was not the entire truth. Water was indeed unable to kill or injure enemies, but once water turned into ice, it was a different story. Regardless, right now she first had to get rid of Suo Jia's complacent and arrogant attitude before discussing other matters.

While looking at the blue-haired girl the female instructor said, "Student Xue Er, just now you attacked Suo Jia with a water sphere; that was a mistake. An introductory level spell like that is only useful for giving you a feel for water control; it is not for provoking others."

In the middle of her lecture, the female teacher stuck out her right hand. Her index finger stuck out like an orchid, with a water sphere the size a pingpong ball spinning on top. “Students, no matter how powerful your water sphere may be, it will still be unable to pierce through even ordinary leather, needless to say a steel shield! The truth is, within water arts, the best spells are for support!

“Moisture Technique!” Right after her words finished, little drops of water faintly formed on her fingers, and flew over to Xue Er’s forehead, turning into a mass of moisture. The watery mass scattered over Xue Er’s body in fine water droplets, reflecting sunlight coming in from the window, and revealing a colorful array of light.

Witnessing this beautiful scene, all the girls cried out happily. Girls are like this, enjoying beautiful sceneries. The most amazing part was that the reflected rays became a stunning rainbow that fell on Xue er. How could this not cause people to gasp in admiration?

Looking at the students below while smiling, the teacher said, “Actually, in regards to water spells, moisture spells are among the mightiest. Among the uses of the Moisture Technique, it can stop bleeding, speed up the healing of wounds, relieve fatigue....”

After lecturing in great detail for half a day, the female teacher finally stopped and smiled. “...therefore, us water mages have always been the most appreciated, as well as the most protected. As long as you learn your water magic well, everyone will be fawning over you!”

As soon as the female teacher’s voice stopped, a silver-haired girl raised her hand and asked: “Teacher, I heard from my parents that those with light affinity can also use the healing arts. If you were to compare the water arts’ Moisture Technique to the light art’s healing techniques, exactly which one would you say is better?”

After listening to the girl’s words, the female lecturer nodded. “That is a very good question. Everyone knows that the light element has healing magic, and the water element has moisture magic. However, exactly which one is better?”

Hearing the teacher's words, everyone's curiosity was piqued when the teacher repeated the question. After leaving the students wondering in suspense, the female lecturer opened her mouth and said, "In the field of healing arts, the light element's healing is better than the water element's moisture due to its instantaneous effect. However, the light element's healing arts are not omnipotent. Comparing this, the water element's Moisture Technique holds a better advantage!"

While talking, the enchanting female lecturer lightly snapped her fingers, and a stream of water mist immediately appeared and surrounded her face. At the same time, the female lecturer said in a narcissistic tone: "At any point in time, you can use it to nourish your tender and delicate skin! The water magic will make sure your skin will always be glossy and soft; doesn't everyone wish to have skin like that?"

"Ack!" Hearing the female lecturer's words, Suo Jia's mouth immediately dropped open with a flabbergasted expression. What kind of benefit was this? Could beautification ever be considered an advantage water magic held over light magic in terms of healing?

"Wah!"

While Suo Jia secretly cursed fiercely in anger, all the young girls simultaneously became excited. Each and every one of them held their faces with their hands, eyes shining like the stars. At this moment, Suo Jia suddenly remembered something his mother often said: Loving beauty....was something that all females suffered from, regardless of age.

Chapter 7: Learning the Moisture Technique

Looking at the reactions of the female students with satisfaction, the female lecturer stood proudly. However, she suddenly noticed that Suo Jia's ashen face looked as if he was ready to "eat a person". (TL: LOL what?) Wrinkling her brow, the female lecturer directed her pointer at Suo Jia and asked: "What kind of facial expression is that? Don't tell me that you don't think this is a superior ability?"

"This..." hesitating for a moment, Suo Jia said in a bitter voice: "Teacher, in my opinion, magic should be primarily used in more sensible and realistic ways. To be honest, I do not care about my skin. What I want to know, is besides from hydrating skin, is this Moisture Technique any different from the healing arts?"

"Hmph!" In a cold and displeased voice, the female lecturer replied: "The light element's healing arts are favored because they can quickly recover wounds and restore a person's previous condition, and are also ten times faster than the water element's Moisture Technique. However, while the light element only allows the wound to heal, the water element, although slower, can simultaneously heal the wound and replenish the person's strength!"

Lightly hitting the pointer against her palm, the female lecturer continued: "The advantage of the light element's healing arts is its speed, while the advantage of the water element's Moisture Technique is its more thorough healing."

Hearing the female lecturer's words, Suo Jia finally understood. Thinking it over...healing efficacy was the water element's winning point over the light element. This was because the light element only recovered to an original state, while the water element's moisture could build upon a person's basic foundation. For a person seeking to gain strength, [the water element's] efficacy was better than healing arts; it was just a bit more time-consuming. As for the hydrating skin or whatever, that was a

complete joke.

As Suo Jia was silently considering this, the female lecturer, unwilling to resign [her original point], stood at the podium and lightly tapped her pointer against her palm. “Hey, Student Suo Jia, being able to hydrate the skin has always been the Moisture Technique’s largest merit. You are male, so perhaps you don’t care about outer appearances, but to us females, beauty is as important as life itself!”

At this point, the female lecturer proudly raised her chest, and said: “In other words, as long as you have a chair, if you sit on the streets and give young ladies skin hydration, I promise that you will have a successful business. This is because...beauty is ultimately what females are most willing to spend money on!”

What!

Originally, the female lecturer was simply speaking without thinking for the sake of proving that water Moisture Technique’s hydration was actually important. However, she never imagined that to Suo Jia, who had been overwhelmed with concerns about money, these words were more important than any magic incantation.

Abruptly standing up, Suo Jia shook as he shouted: “Teacher! Are the words you just said true? If I really do as you say, will there really be customers?”

“That...” Because the female lecturer did not expect Suo Jia to suddenly be so interested, she could not help but hesitate for a bit. After a long time, the female lecturer awkwardly said: “In reality, most well-off people have their personal mages give them hydration. Normal city residents however, have no need for such costly cosmetic practices so...”

“So what!” Hearing the female lecturer stall, Suo Jia pursued her words closely.

“Eh!” Under Suo Jia’s urging, the female lecturer awkwardly replied: “So...as of the present, Teacher has not yet seen this type of booth on the street. After all, mages are noble occupations; no person would do such a status-dropping act for just a little money.”

Excitedly looking at the female lecturer, Suo Jia's inner happiness was practically overflowing. Indeed...if he had not entered Holy Light Academy, he would not have had the opportunity to learn any type of magic at all! Holy Light Academy only accepted about 100 water element specialists as students every year.

The most important fact was, most of those entering Holy Light Academy were wealthy and respectable people. Normal people could not afford to pay the tuition of a thousand gold every year. If they were able to afford it, why would they set up vendor stalls on the street?

Water mages that helped girls hydrate their skin did exist, however most of their customers were fixed regulars. They would not stoop so low as to set up a stall on the street to provide these services. Mages were noble occupations; With regards to the Holy Light Empire, only about a 100 or so of these talents would appear every year.

To the Holy Light Empire that had a population of a billion, this amount of people was absolutely not enough. One must know that these 100 people were talented students! Among that hundred, there would be at most only two people who would do something boring like moisturizing a woman's skin. If the careers that had higher prospects than this did not number up to a thousand, it would still be at least 800; who would want to do this? After graduating with a masters degrees, would you go to the streets and give people haircuts to make money?

Happily sitting down, Suo Jia tightly curled his hands into fists. He hadn't imagined that water mages actually had an occupation with such prospects. He, who was merely eight years old, had to learn this magic no matter what to help his mother relieve some of the financial pressure from their current lifestyles!

Seeing Suo Jia's face turn red from excitement about the usage of Moisture Technique, the female lecturer finally laughed in satisfaction. No more words were necessary; it was time to prepare to directly impart the most basic supplements to the water element--the Moisture Technique, to the students.

Arriving at this point, the female lecturer laughed: “Normal people will not understand the meaning behind skin moisturization. One must know that simply soaking the skin in water does not hydrate the skin, but rather dehydrates and wrinkles it. After soaking for too long, it can even fester and cause some cells to die!”

While speaking, the female lecturer gestured with her right hand, and a shiny water sphere immediately appeared at her fingertip. “However, the Moisture Technique is different. It directly hydrates a person’s cells within the body. This not only provides the cells with enough moisture, but also further enhance each cell’s vitality!”

70% of a person’s body composition consists of water. As long as the amount of water is regulated at an equilibrium, one can maintain beauty and health. After using the Moisture Technique to hydrate the body, the result will surely be extraordinary!

In the middle of her lecture, the female instructor once again used a Moisture Technique. Suddenly... a cloud of refreshing mist passed by, and the female instructor’s peach blossom-like face developed a colorful radiance. The water, full of life, softly and delicately purified her skin to an unimaginable degree. This clear water technique did nothing other than improve natural beauty.

A month passed in the blink of an eye. The female lecturer had taught every single student the Moisture Technique, from the most basic principles to applying it in practical use. To an ordinary person, the Moisture Technique was a simple magic. In reality, every magic could be established as a complete subject, because this subject consisted of the theories and uses of the water element!

It was evening again, and while Suo Jia was pondering over the principles of the Moisture Technique, he pushed opened the door to his home. The house was dark, without a hint of warmth. Suspiciously, he glanced towards the bedroom. Based on his experiences the past month, his mother should have already finished making a fragrant dinner waiting for him. Yet how come the room was so cold, and so still?

Suo Jia's eyes had gotten used to the darkness of the house, and he soon noticed his mother lying down on the freezing cold bed. The magic books in his hand dropped to the ground with a soft thud as he rushed towards the bed.

"Mother!" Tightly grasping his mother's burning hands and seeing his mother's dazed state, Suo Jia knew that his mother had collapsed from illness. This whole time, his mother had never completely recovered from her illness. After a year of arduous work, his mother unfortunately finally collapsed. Seeing his unconscious mother, Suo Jia's eyes soon reddened.

"Un..." Most likely after hearing Suo Jia's sound, the woman half-consciously opened her eyes. Blankly, her eyes that were unable to focus properly swept around, and she finally noticed Suo Jia by her bedside.

Weakly laughing, the woman propped herself up with difficulty, chuckling in a low voice: "You see, Mother had only wanted to rest for a bit but accidentally fell asleep. Suo Jia wait for a bit, Mother will go prepare food now."

Saying these words, the woman sat up unsteadily. She gritted her teeth, and stood up with difficulty and headed towards the simple stove. Seeing his mother's body swaying like a small strand of grass in the wind, Suo Jia's tears finally fell, heavy drop after heavy drop.

After enduring through a simple dinner and washing the dishes, the woman could not hold out for any longer and slept unconsciously on the bed. Seeing his mother's exhaustion, Suo Jia knew that he could not yet help his mother. What he had to do now was to spend every minute, every second of his time to strengthen himself. Only by doing so, would he be able to one day help his mother.

Suo Jia opened his book of magic and searched for the complex magic spell formations, practicing them repetitively. A pale blue light gently followed his right fingertips, continuously outlining an illusionary magic spell formation. However, the outlines disappeared one after another; he couldn't successfully cast this Moisture Technique!

Chapter 8: Wishful Thinking

At Holy Light Academy, students usually studied for 6 hours a day: three hours in the morning, and three hours in the afternoon. However Sou Jia actually studied for a total of 18 hours!

Suo Jia only slept for 6 hours a day. During the rest of his time, he would either be studying the theories behind the Moisture Technique or drawing the required magic formations over and over again. Based on the magic book's explanations, as long as one could use the water element fluently and accurately to recreate the Moisture Technique's respective magical diagrams, one could successfully utilize the Moisture Technique.

In the blink of an eye, two months had passed and all the girls in the class could already use the Moisture Technique. Despite the fact that Suo Jia was more diligent when studying and practiced thrice as often, he still was fruitless in his endeavor to apply the theory and could not perform the Moisture Technique.

There were two reasons for this; the first was that Suo Jia's natural talent was definitely inferior to that of any girl in the class. A female's natural talent in the water element was innate and could not be cultivated.

The second reason was that all the girls had staffs while Suo Jia did not. Although staffs were relatively inexpensive (the cheapest costing only 100 gold), Suo Jia, even on his death bed, refused to ask his mother to buy one for him. He saw how thin and pale his mother had become day after day, and couldn't bring himself to ask her for one.

Suo Jia clearly understood that his mother sacrificed her own strength to maintain their current mother-son relationship. When even his mother's life seemed to be at risk, why talk about something meaningless like a staff? Besides, he could still use magic without a staff.

A staff is simply a piece of wood embedded with a crystal, suitable for conducting magic. When releasing magical spells, the embedded crystal will maintain the energy of the spell formation. As long as one completes

the spell formation at some point, the skill will activate.

However, drawing formations with one's hands is quite different. First, the drawing speed has to be quick. The moment one's hands moves too slowly, the magic power needed to execute the spell will be scattered. Due to not having the crystal's storage abilities, the spell results in failure.

The second most important aspect of drawing magic formations by hand is accuracy. While drawing the magic spell formation's multitude of lines, if even one line slightly deviates from the pattern, the spell will not activate. The truth is, the error allowance of the spell diagram is less than a millimeter; deviate by even a single millimeter cannot be permitted.

Lastly, it is important to be steady. When a mage draws a formation needed to cast a spell, it must be done with a confident and unconstrained action; a very natural and flowing style of drawing. Soon after the spell is released, it must be kept steady from start to finish. If your actions become too fast or too slow, then you will definitely not be able to cast any spells successfully.

Seeing Suo Jia's anxious expression, the female lecturer clearly knew that if Suo Jia had a staff, he would immediately be able to use the Moisture Technique. With his control over water and his diligent attitude, he would definitely have been the first child able to use the Moisture Technique. It was truly regretful however that Sou Jia did not own a staff.

Tightly wrinkling her brows, the female lecturer anxiously looked at Suo Jia, who was sitting alone in the corner practicing over and over again. After pondering for a long time, she walked towards Suo Jia's direction.

Seeing his instructor approaching, Suo Jia stopped his training and lifted his head towards the female lecturer. Under Suo Jia's gaze, the female lecturer helplessly said: "Suo Jia, listen to Teacher's words. In theory, bare hands can activate magic, but after thousands of years, all mages cast magic with the borrowed power from staffs. Casting magic with bare hands has many requirements, the most important one being the large amount of magic power needed. Your current magic power cannot support the duration you need to cast the spell!"

Hearing the teacher's words, Suo Jia's face immediately turned ashen. Recently, he had developed quite a bit of confidence in the way he trained. Speed, accuracy, and stability had all been mastered by him. However, the arrays of the magic spells could not be maintained, and would fade away before he had the time to finish drawing them.

Suo Jia knew that if only his magic power was larger, than these magic spell arrays would be maintained for a bit longer. That way, he would successfully be able to activate magic. However the growth of magic power was not something that could be rushed all at once; it required a long time to accumulate.

He looked at the lecturer with a pale white face, his heart in utter despair. Within the past month, his mother's body had steadily deteriorated. Soon, his mother might leave the world for an eternal rest.

Originally he could help his mother, but he had no way of breaking through at the most crucial point! Even though both his teacher and his classmates were willing to lend him their staffs, he couldn't possibly bring another person's staff home with him. If he couldn't bring a staff home, then how would he use it to earn money?

To mages, their staffs are their lives; their staffs definitely could not leave their hands. How can mages let you bring their staffs home with you? Lending it to you for temporary use is already considered a great favor.

Suo Jia was in despair as he walked home, his heart a dull grey. What could he do; what could he possibly do? Did he really have to ask his mother for the money? This seemed to be the only possible way to solve his current predicaments.

Suo Jia's thoughts were extremely conflicted; he clearly knew that asking his mother for money would solve everything. As long as he earned money, then the money lost would also be quickly recovered. However, he simply could not bring himself to open his mouth.

That night, Suo Jia did not continue studying magic spells as he usually did. Instead, he sat on his bed in a daze, unconsciously controlling a

stream of water, as his mind hesitated back and forth....

Suo Jia strenuously thought about it for a long time, yet he still could not arrive at a decision. Seeing the water stream travel back and forth between his hands, Suo Jia gave up on his thoughts. He could decide later tomorrow morning. No matter what, he still needed to get his hands on a staff.

Lying with his back on his bed, Suo Jia closed his eyes. He had gotten accustomed to thinking over things just before he slept. Just as he entered a semi-awoken state, a divine light suddenly flashed through his head.

“Hu!” Suo Jia suddenly sat up, trying hard to remember that divine light that had just flashed. However, he could not recall any of it, as it was simply from a dream.

However Suo Jia knew that it definitely was not an illusion, because he had previously experienced something similar. When he had been practicing his water control at a young age, he often encountered difficulties. While in that semi-conscious state, a divine light would suddenly flash, and he would be able to think of a solution. Suo Jia believed that this case would not be any different.

The experienced Suo Jia did not continue to think too much about it. At this point in time, desperately recalling would make it even harder to remember. He put on his shoes and got off his bed to pour himself a glass of water, then calmly sat in front of the narrow window. Looking at the bright moonlight outside, he slowly organized his thought process.

Slowly, his foul mood faded away. The previously hazy event little by little appeared within his mind. Finally that miraculous divine light once again appeared in Suo Jia’s sea of consciousness, and in addition it was deeply imprinted within the depths of Suo Jia’s mind.

Inside of the dark room, Suo Jia sat peacefully on the wooden bed with his right index finger pointing out. Gently, a pale blue radiance emerged. Sitting peacefully on the wooden bed, his right hand slowly began to move. The pale blue light followed Suo Jia’s moving index finger, quickly drawing out a complex and profound formation.

Finally, Suo Jia's right hand elegantly drew in a circular motion a sophisticated pale blue circle. In a flash, all the components within the circle fused together, forming a perfect, ideal spell. For a moment, the entire spell diagram glowed like a neon lamp, gradually lighting up.

Accompanying the radiance, a sweet and continuous water thread silently appeared across from the bed. Similar to a moisturizing fine rain, it entered the body of the woman on the bed across from him.

"Yahoo!" In order to avoid waking up his mother who was sleeping soundly, Suo Jia could only tightly curl his hands into fists, and shout ecstatically in a low voice with his face buried under his covers. After working so diligently for two months, he was finally.....able to use the Moisture Technique!

After being excited for a long time, Suo Jia finally climbed out of his covers. Wanting to experience the feeling again, he gestured with his right arm. Very quickly.....another magic spell was completed, and a fine mist flashed dimly with a blue light. It permeated his mother's body, and his sleeping mother's breathing gradually became smooth and unhindered.

Trembling from head to toe, Suo Jia quietly sat up from his bed, put on his shoes, and left the room. Today was really a day worth remembering. By utilizing his own methods, he was able to activate the Moisture Technique. From today onwards, he would be able to help his mother; Mother would no longer need to wear herself out. Historically, no person had ever activated magic using such methods. He, however had managed to achieve it.

Chapter 9: The First Deal

In theory, this was actually quite simple; Suo Jia would simply combine the magic and a stream of water together, and then use that mixture to sketch the spell array. With this combined magic power, the possibility of it fading midway was eliminated, and the water's uses, as well as the Moisture Technique's effects, were even more extraordinary. After all....the Moisture Technique was the water element's more representative magic, and had a very deep relationship with it.

Other people normally utilized a magic crystal to help maintain their magic formations, but Suo Jia used his personal water stream to solve his staff problem. From today onwards, Suo Jia did not need a staff anymore. With just his bare hands, he could draw out any magic arrays of the water element.

Holy Light Academy's education system comprises of 6 days of classes every week, with the last day of every week being a day of rest. During the day of rest, apart from being required to attend a religious service at a church, the rest of the time is free for students to use for themselves.

The Holy Light Empire's faith is based on the God of Light. Every seventh day of the week, it is mandatory for everyone to attend church and pray. Because of this, the seventh day is the city's liveliest day of the week. Everyone is required to attend service at the church, and pray for the God of Light's blessings and protection.

At the crack of dawn, Suo Jia and his mother left the house. His mother wanted to finish her prayers quickly while the people were still few, so that she could return to continue working. Although her job was strenuous, it had been hard for her to find, so she treasured it dearly.

After the service ended, Suo Jia and his mother parted ways in front of the church. Seeing his mother's figure rushing off into the distance, Suo Jia could not help but feel excited. Today, while the city was lively during the day of rest, he wanted to test his lecturer's statements. At the liveliest area he could find, he would arrange his own vendor's booth.

Quickly running home, Suo Jia took out a white cloth with some large words he had written on it, which he had prepared earlier. With this sign hung up, he would be able to start his own business.

On the large white cloth, Suo Jia had written: "Thank you for the God of Light's blessings. Suo Jia, from Holy Light Academy, is volunteering to perform the Moisture Technique on any females' skin for only a token of one gold for lunch money."

Truthfully, seeing the words on the large white cloth, Suo Jia was a bit nervous. Going by his teacher's words, a water mage normally demanded at least 100 gold for every person that is moisturized. However, to Suo Jia, it seemed that simply waving his hand could release the magic. How was that worth much money? Even receiving 1 gold felt a bit over the top. It must be pointed out that 1 gold was not just small change; it was enough to buy 5kg of meat! His mother worked hard every day, and only earned 1 gold from it.

"Che..." Gritting his teeth, Suo Jia decided to believe in his teacher's words. If his teacher said that a mage was a noble profession, then receiving 1 gold would definitely count as a voluntary duty. There was the possibility that his teacher had been lying, but when he thought back, he decided that this was unlikely since he trusted his teacher a lot.

That afternoon, Suo Jia finally arrived at Holy Light's main street. He pulled up his white cloth, taking up about 10 square meters of space. In the center of the empty space, Suo Jia sat on a wooden chair that he had brought from home. He wore a brand new uniform from Holy Light Academy; even though it was not high quality clothing, these clothes represented his identity and status in a public manner. Those qualified to wear these clothes would definitely not have low statuses in the future.

Nervously sitting on the chair, Suo Jia could not guarantee that any people would come. Unconsciously, he adjusted his clothes. Even though his clothes had already been ironed until there wasn't a single crease on them, Suo Jia could not stop the action of fixing them. Without any action to occupy himself with, Suo Jia was afraid he would just run away.

The large white cloth quickly attracted a group of people's attention, especially the content of the words written on it. The thing that made people ceaselessly curious was: would anyone actually voluntarily use the Moisture Technique on people?

The Moisture Technique is not a technique that can be easily scoffed at. Within the Holy Light Empire, there are many successful uses of the Moisture Technique. At most, only about 10,000 people can do it, and a majority of those people are wealthy and respectable. Wanting them to perform the Moisture Technique on you is only possible in your dreams!

The Holy Light Empire has about five hundred million females; however only around 100 of them are willing to perform the Moisture Technique on others. These masters at the Moisture Technique have all graduated from Holy Light Academy. Although their current positions are not high, once they get a bit older, and have built up rank and status, then they will definitely not be willing to perform the Moisture Technique on others. This is too shameful of an act, so if they do, they will not have the face to meet anyone anymore.

Suo Jia knew that if he had a rank and status, then he would undoubtedly not need to do this anymore. Even if he was willing to, the royal family giving him his privileges and his status would not allow such an act. If it was because of money, there were many other more honorable jobs that could do the same.

"Hey!" While in his wild thoughts, Suo Jia completely failed to notice that a fiery red figure had quietly entered his service area. Only after the figure had voiced its inquiry did Suo Jia arouse from his thoughts.

Suddenly raising his head, Suo Jia looked across from him. He noticed the figure addressing him was a girl with a head of long fiery red hair, wearing clothes of the same color, and was currently curiously looking at him.

While Suo Jia was inspecting her, the girl in red clothes asked skeptically: "How come you're a male? Are you really from Holy Light? And can you actually use the Moisture Technique?"

Suo Jia awkwardly nodded his head; he knew what the girl was thinking. But despite his embarrassment, he needed to reply, or else how would he be able to start his business?

Trying hard to calm himself down, Suo Jia said serenely: "Does this really arouse suspicion? If I wasn't from Holy Light, then how would I be able to use the Moisture Technique? And if I was unable to use the Moisture Technique, then why would I be here?"

"Nn...." Hesitating for a bit, the girl was finally unable to endure her desire, and lightly sat down on the chair opposite from him. She said impatiently: "Never mind, no matter what, just help me moisturize my skin quickly. This week, my training has been intense; my skin has gotten all coarse!"

Hearing the girl's words, Suo Jia could not help but look at her face. After a glance, Suo Jia naturally furrowed his brows. The girl's face was white, and it could be also said to be extremely beautiful. However the skin on her face was dry, and the chapped skin had begun to form lines on her tender face. Her head of red hair, even though the color was bright red, was also insipid, similar to a bunch of dying grass.

Judging from the color of the girl's hair and clothes, she was most likely a warrior with an affinity for fire, or a fire elemental mage. Training all day would mean she was often exposed to flames. In other words, this girl with an affinity for fire was probably constantly ruining her skin, and needed moisturizing the most. No wonder she was the first one to come in; her desire to get someone to help her moisturize her skin was probably strong to begin with.

After inspecting her for a while, Suo Jia did not say anything and simply took in a deep breath. He raised his right finger, and a warm, pale blue light shone. It followed Suo Jia's skilled hand movements, and a strange palm-sized magic array formed in front of him.

"Si..." With a soft, gentle sound, a fine mist formed and gently sprayed in the redhead's direction. As the spray fell onto her, the girl's hair that had been as dry as dust was gradually restored to its original luster. The skin

on her face also gradually showed the benefits of Suo Jia's Moisture Technique.

The Moisture Technique was actually not that complicated. Using it only took about 4-5 seconds and it only took around 4-5 seconds to take effect, making the time period a total of only 10 seconds. The results, however, were exactly like what how his lecturer had described: a miracle from God!

If the girl in red was described as a dried-up prairie in autumn before treatment, then after receiving treatment, she was like lush green plains after being moistened by the spring rain. She was a wild grass shining with a pearl-like radiance, appearing fresh and clean after the moisturization.

Seeing that the girl in red's originally dry, chapped face turning a rosy tint, with her skin so delicate and tender it looked like it could fall to pieces with a single touch, Suo Jia could not help but stare blankly for a while. The difference between before and after the treatment was really too significant. The skin now gave off a satiny, tender feeling that could be seen without actually touching it. It could be clearly felt that this was really the main merit of the Moisture Technique!

The girl in red was an unquestionable beauty but....if before the treatment she was rated 80 points in beauty, she was definitely past 100 after the Moisture Technique, becoming a top emperor-level beauty. This type of shy, charming appearance was something that left even the 8-years-old Suo Jia secretly speechless.

Accepting the mirror Suo Jia passed to her, the girl trembled as she caressed her face, unable to believe that her own skin and hair could become so beautiful.

Seeing the girl's excited expression, Suo Jia was secretly happy as well. Being able to help others was always pleasant. Smiling faintly, Suo Jia said gently: "I should first say clearly: my magic power is very low, so this Moisture Technique can only last for a week. After a week, the moisture's power will fade away!"

Completely not paying attention to Suo Jia's words, the girl casually pulled out a handful of gold, around 6-7 pieces. Not even looking at the money she handed to Suo Jia, she said eagerly: "Lasting for even one day is worth it. You continue working, I'm going back quickly to show my sisters and let them know exactly who is the prettiest girl of the fire element!" As soon as she finished talking, the girl leaped up off of the cloth in a flash and escaped into the distance.

Chapter 10: Prospering Business

After the girl in red left, the area covered by the cloth became quiet again. More than half of the day passed with nobody entering; the public will generally hold doubts about any new and upcoming trends/fads. Everyone all thought it was just another scam. To have someone perform the Moisture Technique on you for only a gold coin, such fantasies could never truly exist...right? Surely even the fee for watching someone perform the technique should be more than that.

Even though no one else came, Suo Jia was still beyond happy. Seeing the seven gold coins in his hands, he already felt very satisfied. His mother only earned this much after a grueling seven days work, but he was able to receive it so casually. After some time had passed, Suo Jia actually began to feel as if such a thing had never happened.

“Pa da pa da...” Suo Jia fondly jingled the gold coins in his hands, still in disbelief.

Suddenly, chaotic, hurried footsteps could be heard outside the cloth, the sound clearly heading towards his direction.

Right when he was doubting the gold in his hands, the cloth convulsed and....under the red-haired girl's directions, a group of girls charged in, causing the flimsy cloth to sway back and forth. That painstakingly prepared plain white cloth had painfully fallen on to the floor, and was trampled upon by countless small feet until it was unrecognizable.

Seeing the red-haired girl's aggressiveness, as well as the fact that she had brought her sisters, Suo Jia felt that perhaps she had realized she had given the wrong amount of money and had come to take it back. Not willing to neglect this, he hurriedly pulled out 6 gold coins and reached out to the girl: “You were too rushed earlier, I can't accept this much money; I can only take 1 gold!”

The breathless girl in red shook her head. Just as she wanted to speak, another girl stole the opportunity, suddenly pulling the girl in red to the side, and asked impatiently: “Don't worry about that stuff. Let me ask you,

are you the guy who just used the Moisture Technique on her?”

“Eh!” Seeing the girl ask him with a fiendish expression, Suo Jia thought that she had come to him for payback. Nervously swallowing his saliva, he unconsciously looked around and realized...with this disturbance, he had already attracted the surrounding people’s attentions. 400-500 people surrounding them in an impenetrable circle with three inner layers and three outer layers. More people had also started to rush here [to see the commotion] from the outside.

With fear, Suo Jia’s voice trembled slightly as he spoke. Although he was reluctant to part with it, he still took out the 6 gold pieces. “I will only take 1 gold, here is 6 gold pieces. I was calling out to her before, but she didn’t hear me, please do not blame me.”

Impatiently furrowing her brow, the opposing girl grabbed the money in Suo Jia’s hands, handing it over to the red-haired girl, and impatiently said: “Okay, the money issue is solved. Now I ask of you, are you or are you not the person who performed the Moisture Technique on her?”

“Huh?” The girl glared at him with suspicion. Suo Jia didn’t understand what was happening, even though he already returned the money, what else did they want? Could it be that they had a question about the magic he had used? But looking at the red clothed girl, wasn’t she already satisfied with her treatment? Pondering about this situation, Suo Jia’s mind came to a conclusion as he nodded.

Seeing Suo Jia nod his head, the opposing girl happily sat down opposite of him, impatiently saying: “Okay, okay, hurry up...I can’t wait any longer!”

“Eh?” Puzzled, Suo Jia cowered and asked: “Hurry up and do what? Do you want to fight me?”

“Che...” The girl’s lips curled in disdain at the thought, “I’ve no grudge against you, why would I fight you? I just want you to use the Moisture Technique on me, aren’t you obligated to attend to the moisturizing of the women here? Hurry up, my skin is nearly about to chaff!”

Hearing the girl’s words, Suo Jia finally let out his breath. Her urging

words that made him worry was only because she wanted him to use the Moisture Technique on her. Was her fiery temper really necessary?

Since he needed the money to buy a house, Suo Jia had to do it. Embarrassingly looking around, Suo Jia said with a forced smile, "I want to begin, but the surroundings are too noisy and you've even knocked down my sign. I cannot concentrate enough to cast my spell."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, all the girls got ready. Without anyone organizing it, they all naturally started moving. The white cloth sign's wooden support had already been broken, but that did not matter; four of the girls lifted the cloth sign's corners and raised it up high in the air. The sign was once again up, however, now there were artistically styled soiled footprints on the snow-white cloth.

Once the cloth sign was fixed, the other girls automatically began to line up at the doorway in a disciplined manner. All of them had decent backgrounds and had at least this much self-restraint.

After a while, all of the people on the street were attracted by this scene. Four girls as delicate as flowers lifted their right hands, carrying a very "artistic" cloth. In front of the cloth, 30-40 young girls were packed in a line, waiting impatiently. How could such a scene not pique people's curiosities?

Inside the stall's perimeters, Suo Jia calmed himself down and once again started performing the Moisture Technique. With a speed that only took up 10 seconds, as soon his god-like skill turned the girls with withered facial features turned into vivid beauties, all the girls would excitedly squeal in delight. This made the pedestrians on the street even more curious; what exactly were these girls doing?

More and more pedestrians silently stopped walking, and surrounded that tiny cloth. Under everyone's gaze, average-looking girls would one by one walk into the stall, and then vivid beauties would one by one gracefully walk back out. Those rosy faces that looked like fresh flowers emitting a moisturized glow was enough to move anyone.

Finally, under the careful gaze of skeptical onlookers were the

footprints smeared words on the large sign identified. Everyone finally understood: what made these girls rush so hastily was the legendary Moisture Technique!

The Moisture Technique is a sacred magic that could cure illnesses and save lives. Although everyone knew this, in regards to cosmetics and beauty having such magical effects, none of them had tasted the effects of skin hydration. Even simply being able to observe this procedure is considered a luxury. Magic isn't a side show; no one can be bored enough to just show this to you.

However, right now such a scene was displayed in front of everyone's eyes. Seeing the ordinary faces of girls entering and coming out one by one as sparkling top-level beauties, as long as you were a female you couldn't help but feel moved. Gradually, more and more young girls and ladies lined up in the increasingly long line.

Within his stall, Suo Jia was already starting to get dizzy. His mind and spirit had to be extremely concentrated, extremely focused. With a single moment of carelessness, a single millimeter of error while drawing, the whole spell would fail.

After casting ten Moisture Techniques in a row, Suo Jia reluctantly found out that his spiritual power could not continue at this rate. He had to cast the spell three or four times before it would work even once, and this rate only steadily decreased.

Although he felt unwell, looking at the pile of gold that was increasing piece by piece, Suo Jia still felt extremely satisfied. However, once his energy was exhausted, even though he really wanted to continue casting Moisture Techniques, he was completely flustered. After the twentieth spell, he was unable to concentrate enough to cast even a single spell.

Glancing at the extremely long line outside his stall, Suo Jia could not help but smile bitterly. Although it wasn't much (TL: Cough Shokugeki cough), Suo Jia was already very satisfied. You have to understand that even the most powerful female student in his class can only continuously cast this spell ten times. Being able to cast twenty times in a row is

something worthy of being extremely proud of. However with these words said, looking at the long line that he had created, Suo Jia had created quite a disaster. How could he resolve this situation?

After contemplating for a long time, Suo Jia reluctantly told everyone that he needed some time to rest. Only after recovering his spirit power could he perform the Moisture Technique for them again.

Originally, Suo Jia was sure that this would cause everyone to feel discontent. Contrary to his expectations however, not only did nobody express any negative intentions, but rather all of them revealed an expression of reverence and worship. This...

The truth is, regardless of whether or not you know magic, everyone knows that a mage's trademark skill is— the so called “meditation”: the ability to enter a heavenly state, to restore spirit power, as well as promote spirit power growth.

To outsiders, meditation is a mage's trademark that can mysteriously connect the mind to the spirit. However, the truth is that the so-called meditation is actually only a deep level of sleep. In the highest realm of meditation, five minutes of this sleep is equivalent to five hours of ordinary sleep.

Chapter 11: The Great Objective

Meditation was not a difficult skill to learn, but it was not exactly “easy” either. Anyone could do it, however there was a clear difference between the levels of meditation. People at the lowest level could meditate for an hour, which was more or less equivalent to an hour of normal sleep. Each level of meditation had a different method for entering the meditation state. The higher the level, the higher the quality of rest and the faster your recovery becomes.

Suo Jia had never learned meditation before. Although he was learning magic, his spirit currently was still too weak, so weak to the point where he could not even satisfy the minimum requirements for meditation. In general, once you understood how to meditate, you became an official mage apprentice and started your education to become a professional mage.

Suo Jia had only said that he was going to rest, but the the word ‘meditation’ had spread throughout the crowd. Even though only one word had changed, it certainly made Suo Jia’s image a lot more imposing. At this moment, he did not appear to be a mage apprentice, but rather a professional mage!

After resting for a whole hour Suo Jia finally recovered his spirit energy and once again began to use the Moisture Technique. Just like that, the whole day passed; Suo Jia would use [the Moisture Technique] for a bit, rest for a bit, and continue in a cycle until the sun set. It was only then that the people unwillingly dispersed, going back to their own homes.

Exhausted, Suo Jia tied his chairs together, balanced them on his shoulders and carried his bundle of white cloth while heading home. Even though he was exhausted, nothing could compare to how satisfied he felt when he listened to the gold coins jingling against his chest.

From the beginning of his business all the way until the sun had set, Suo Jia had used the Moisture Technique on a total of 176 people. While earning the large amounts of gold, Suo Jia had also pleasantly discovered

that his spiritual power had been growing bit by bit. After his last break, Suo Jia had actually managed to use the Moisture Technique 25 times in one breath. Such a large improvement was not normal!

His gains did not just end there. After a whole day had passed, Suo Jia had successfully used the Moisture Technique 176 times. This type of successful experience was a mage's most precious gain. Historically, many mages died because they had not been able to successfully use the Moisture Technique during critical moments. Thus, this accomplishment could not be considered ordinary.

If a mage wants to master a magic, the most important thing to do was to cast the magic over and over again. After accumulating the experiences of successes and failures, it becomes an instinct. Once it reaches the realm where it can move "with one's heartbeat and follow one's will", the spell would never fail.

Also, the more times you succeeded in casting the magic, the deeper your understanding of it became. After reaching a certain level, creating your own spells was possible. Historically, the amount of original magic spells recorded was more than a thousand. Unfortunately, original magic spells all shared a common trait of being unreproducible! Other than [the magic's] original creator, no one could recreate that magic for their own uses. This meant that each mage's understanding and familiarity with magic was unique to themselves.

Carrying the table, Suo Jia arrived back at his home. However, since both his hands were full, he had no way of opening the door. Helplessly, he could only use his foot to lightly kick open the door. Hearing the sound, his mother quickly opened the door, her face in shock after seeing Suo Jia carry so many things.

Staring blankly for a bit, the woman quickly returned to her senses and hurriedly took the white cloth from Suo Jia. "You really are a naughty child; where did you go with the chairs? You made me think that a thief had broken into the house."

Although she said things this way, the woman's expression showed that

she did not blame him at all; rather, she was laughing at his actions. Towards her son, the woman always held deep feelings of remorse. Because she had been sick for three years, her son had gave up going on playdates with friends. In reality, she had wished dearly for her son to be like other children, playing freely without restraint and returning home exhausted afterwards from playing. This was how a normal child should act.

Casually placing the white cloth on the bed, the woman wetted a towel and lovingly washed Suo Jia's small face. Tenderly, she asked: "Where did you go play today? Did you play with your classmates?"

Seeing the loving expression on his mother's face, Suo Jia happily smiled. All the suffering he went through today was worth it. As long as his mother was happy every day, he was willing to endure any suffering without regrets.

Lightly reaching into his clothes, Suo Jia brought out the heavy, jingling leather pouch. "Mother, do you see what this is?"

Curiously looking at the leather pouch, the woman laughed thinking that there were definitely some type of marbles inside it. After all, kids enjoyed these types of things. As long as her own son was finally gradually returning to a normal lifestyle as a child, any feelings of suffering and tiredness she felt did not matter.

Although she was not interested in a child's playthings, the woman opened the pouch for the sake of playing along with her son to not ruin his happy mood. She had already planned previously to gasp in admiration at the marbles, but she had never thought in a million years that as soon as she opened the pouch, a bright golden glow would radiate out from it and actually render her speechless!

After a long time, the woman abruptly closed the pouch, asking in a strained voice, "Dear God! Where did you get this money? Don't tell me you stole it, otherwise mother will be very disappointed!"

"What! Stolen?" Suo Jia shouted, stunned at his mother's words.

Seeing her son's shocked expression, the mother understood her son and

quickly went silent. As a mother who knows her child better than anyone else, how could she not understand her own son? No matter what, he would never go steal. However, if he hadn't stolen the money then where had this money come from?

In doubt, the woman said cautiously: "Okay, Mother knows that Suo Jia would never steal. Now tell me, where exactly did this money come from? You cannot lie to me."

Hearing his mother's words, Suo Jia could not help but proudly lift his chest, replying excitedly: "I earned this money using my own skills."

"What! Using...using skills to earn it? How is that possible?" Hearing her son's words, the woman shouted in disbelief.

Suo Jia nodded his head with certainty, and continued: "Yes, I moved these chairs to the main street, pulled a piece of cloth over it, and used the Moisture Technique on the skin of older sisters and aunts. I got 1 gold per person, so I earned this much money."

Hearing her son's words, the woman's whole body began to shake, as tears began to quickly blur her vision. It turned out....that everything was like that; all the money was really earned through his own skills. But heavens, he was only an 8 years-old child. He was supposed to be playing carefreely and without worry. Now however, he had taken up the heavy responsibilities of the household.

Holding Suo Jia against her, the woman cried: "My child, Mother has let you down."

Seeing his mother painfully crying, Suo Jia stubbornly shook his head: "No Mother, you have already given me the best things in the world. I am already a grown man. From today onwards, I will look after Mother. You won't ever have to work again!"

"This..." Hearing Suo Jia's words, the woman could not help but hesitate. Even though she didn't want to admit it, her son really did have the skills to look after her now. However, it was impossible for her to accept the fact that a 24-25 years-old woman had to rely on an 8 years-old child to look after herself.

Seeing his mother's hesitating expression, Suo Jia hurriedly said: "Just promise me this Mother. Every day I see you so exhausted and you suffer so much, I feel very miserable. Now, I can earn money. In the future, I will continue to study diligently, and eventually I will buy a large house for Mother to live in, as well as many many other good things for mother."

"Haha..."

Hearing her son's words, the woman happily laughed. Even though... .. God had not given her a responsible and diligent husband, he had not ignored her, because God had gifted her such a wonderful son.

While she was thinking this, Suo Jia snuggled up to her, and said longingly: "Mother has to rest well and take good care of herself. You must first heal your body. After that, if you still want to do things like work, Suo Jia will not object."

Speaking up to this point, Suo Jia raised his head and looked at his mother pleadingly: "But promise me Mother; seeing you spend all day and night working so hard, I feel too miserable. Mother has already done enough, everything else should be left to me!"

Hearing her son's fervent words, the woman felt her son's genuine care for her. What else could she say? When a woman marries, she had to listen to her husband. When her husband dies, she has to listen to her son. It has been this way since ancient times. Even though her son was still young, a poor household's child becomes the head of the household early. Just as Suo Jia had said, he was already a young man. If that was the case, as a mother, she had nothing else to say.

The woman holding back her tears nodded. Accompanying this gentle movement, her hot tears finally poured down. Having such a wonderful son made her life truly worthwhile.

Chapter 12: Working Energetically for Prosperity

That evening, long after Suo Jia's mother had fallen asleep, Suo Jia looked at his mother's relaxed face and felt a surge of pride in his soul from his achievements. His mother had raised him for so many years and now....now he could finally begin to repay his mother.

In the darkness, he clenched his fist tightly. Since he had already decided to go through with his plan, he would have to work diligently to make it a reality. Money for food and clothing was not a problem. Even eating meat daily was no longer a problem. All of this was possible just by setting up his booth every Sunday. Even if their expenses were to increase by a sizable amount, Suo Jia would still be able to provide it.

In Suo Jia's hometown, a single-story house costed 10 gold. However, that was only in a small town with a mere population of 10,000 people; houses were very cheap. Now that he was living in Holy City, how could the houses here even compare to those from such a small and remote city?

Although he did not know the exact prices, Suo Jia knew for a fact that a house where he was costed about 100 gold for each level. If he wanted to buy a house similar to their previous one, it would cost at least 10,000 gold. (E: I'm told he actually wants 12 stories.)

Quietly counting on his fingers, Suo Jia calculated diligently. If he were to earn 200 gold per week, that would mean a total of 10,400 gold in a year. However, he also wouldn't be able to spend any of the money he earned during that year. Now, factoring in the cost of the furniture and decorum, and adding in his current daily living expenses, he could ideally achieve his dream in two years.

"This won't do!" Seeing the narrow and dark room, the battered bed, as well as the badly damaged everyday products they used, Suo Jia soon rejected this plan. He could endure for two years, but his mother's condition was still bad. In such a dark, damp, and freezing cold room with

leaks all over, his mother's illness would not improve.

Based on today's calculations, he had to practice the Moisture Technique diligently, continue to moisturize customers every Sunday, and increase the rate at which he earned money. This was the only effective method. Suo Jia had also thought about raising his standard fee, but in his opinion, one gold was already not a small amount. Since he only raised his hands a bit, requesting more money would hurt his conscience.

Perhaps it could be said that he did not dare ask for more money. Since this was already his household's main financial support, it definitely could not suffer from any potential accidents or backlash. Earning a bit less at the moment would definitely be preferable to not earning any at all.

Suo Jia's plan was perfect. As long as he trained himself diligently, then if he could moisturize at least 500 people every Sunday, his profits would be extremely high. In half a year, he could buy a big house. However in the meanwhile, he would have to work hard. In other words, he would have to improve his own magical capabilities.

Now that he had made his decision, Suo Jia felt satisfied. He covered himself with his blankets and gradually entering into a dream state. After properly resting for a night, he would start to put all his energy into practicing. In order to achieve "perfection through practice", he had to use the Moisture Technique 500 times a day. Even though this seemed over the top, it was still humanly possible.

However, using the Moisture Technique required a target. Without a target, the Moisture Technique would not work. Before, Suo Jia's targets were his mother or his customers, however now that he was casually practicing, he needed a living creature to practice on that would constantly be at his side.

Fortunately, this wasn't a matter that was too hard to resolve. In this world, many people love to raise a couple of magical pets. What are magical pets? In actuality, they are domesticated magical beasts. They are taken from during their incubation period and grow up with human

owners. In time, they will become loyal magical pets.

Of course, not all magical beasts can be domesticated to become magic pets. Some magical beasts, no matter how you treat them, will never give you their loyalty. However, most magical beasts are able to become magical pets.

In the past, Suo Jia had never thought about raising a magical pet. Although there were many different types of magical pets, there was never one that was convenient enough for him to breed in his poverty. The average pet was usually sold for 100 gold pieces, so Suo Jia had always thought buying a pet for that much was a waste of money.

However, the circumstances were different now. Mother was no longer taking money away from Suo Jia. Not only that, but the family household was no longer in dire straits, and his mother had handed over the family's economic situation over to him.

Before, their household still had around 1300 gold. A portion of this money was from selling their house, and the other portion was part of the money his father had left for them. Suo Jia's mother had prepared to use this money to cover their current living expenses. As for the money that Suo Jia earned, his mother let him organize it himself. Even though Suo Jia was still young, according to his mother's words, he was already a grown man, and it was about time that he learned how to take care of the family's finances. These types of things had to be taught from a young age.

After careful analysis, Suo Jia decided that in order to earn more money, he would rush to the pet shop after school and choose a magical pet as his practice partner.

The magical pet store was enormous, on each and every shelf inside laid a vast variety of magical pet eggs. Under each individual egg was a single white tile which showed the price on it.

Ignoring the magical pet eggs, Suo Jia directly walked up to the counter, and asked the beautiful girl there: "Big Sister, I want to buy a magical pet. Can you help me choose one?"

“Eh?” Seeing Suo Jia who wasn’t even tall enough to peer over the counter, the girl bent downwards. Her eyes creased upwards as she smiled brightly at Suo Jia and said in a friendly tone, “Little brother, what magical pet do you want to buy today? Why don’t you tell your older sister what you want so I can help you find the cutest one.”

“Well...” Suo Jia slightly muttered to himself in thought before laughing, “I want the smallest but cheapest and easiest to raise and well-behaved magical pet. Big sister, I’m counting on you to help me!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s string of “-est”’s, the girl could not help but show a shocked expression. Generally speaking, young children who went to the magical pet shop would also request a ton of “-est”’s, but their “-est”’s were normally largest, prettiest, smartest, coolest, noblest, and strongest. She had worked at the shop for so many years, yet this was the first time she had ever heard a young child make such a request.

The girl laughed, “Little brother, do you mean to tell me that you don’t care for the magical pet’s type, power, or even appearance...do you understand how important these aspects are for choosing a pet?”

“Yup,” Suo Jia nodded his head in confirmation. “That’s right, as long as it’s a magical pet, I am happy. In the end, it doesn’t matter how awesome it is, how pretty it is, or even what type of magical pet it is! None of these are important to me.”

Laughing slightly, the girl pointed towards a large entrance that had a display counter: “If that’s the case, then you should go choose an egg and test your luck. With only 100 gold, you can randomly pick a magical beast egg. You have the chances to select beasts ranging from the lowest level Slime to the strongest Fiery Blazing Dragon!”

“Ya!” Hearing what the girl had said, Suo Jia let out an excited yell as he walked towards the direction given to him. Originally...he was planning to buy the cheapest magical pet they had to offer, but now, hearing that there was this type of opportunity, there was no way he could pass up on this deal.

However, there were still some things that Suo Jia did not understand.

Confused, he looked at the girl and asked: “Since even the cheapest magical beast egg is 100 gold, why would you include expensive eggs as well?”

Laughing slightly, the girl looked at Suo Jia and patiently explained: “It works this way: magical beast eggs are all incubated for the same amount of time. All the eggs there have already been incubated for a while; if they are not sold quickly enough, once they hatch, our losses will be too large.”

Not only that, with this type of method, it would promote the sales of magical pet eggs and increase profits. People who weren’t originally planning on buying magical pets would naturally be curious enough to try out their luck and buy one.

Of course, with that said, the girl was still hiding some facts. There were genuinely high leveled magical beast eggs on the counter, but they were very limited in quantity. In fact, with this method, it would be unlikely that they would not be able to reimburse their losses. On the contrary, they would actually earn a lot of profit and avoid a huge amount of loss. Since it promoted sales by a large margin, many magical beast stores offered this type of lottery.

Even though high level magical beast eggs had pretty high values, 99% of the eggs displayed in the shop were low level magical beast eggs. Even though they all sold for 100 gold, the shop acquired them for less than 10 gold, meaning the profits were huge. As outsiders could imagine, the shop’s profits could only be more, never less; what’s more is that the rate at which they earn money is even more extreme.

Hearing the girl’s explanation, Suo Jia still did not completely understand. But since such a thing existed and he completely didn’t care about the species of his magical pet, what did he have to lose?

After paying 100 gold pieces, Suo Jia walked up to the side of the gigantic display counter. Looking on top of the smooth counter top where tens of thousands of magical beast eggs were densely packed together into a single pile, Suo Jia’s heart began to race; exactly what type of magical beast egg would he choose?

Chapter 13: Strong or Weak?

Seeing the apprehensive Suo Jia, the woman smiled. “Okay, all the eggs are there. Each egg has a number; all you need to do is draw a number from that large box over there and pick up the egg with the corresponding number.”

Nervously swallowing his own saliva, Suo Jia asked in a strained voice, “Big Sister, is there really a good magical pet in here? Do such good things actually exist?”

Furrowing her brow, the girl pointed at the near a hundred receptacles hanging above the counter. “Do you see those over there? Inside those receptacles are high level magical pet eggs that have yet to be drawn. If you manage to draw their numbers from 1-100, then you can take the matching egg.”

While talking, the girl pointed to the large box. “As for that box, it has been verified by the Church. No one can change the order of the cards inside; we are also unable to scam you.”

The girl’s words alone didn’t have much credibility, but after bringing up the Church, Suo Jia immediately relaxed. He knew that unless the box was broken, even if the emperor came in person he couldn’t commit a fraud. Anything that the Church had verified couldn’t be fake.

Suo Jia walked expectantly to the side of the box, brought both palms together to pray for a while, and then extended his hand towards the box. Very quickly, a card emitting a milky-white glow shot out from the bottom of the box.

Even though the card was already in his hands, Suo Jia was so nervous he dared not look. Although he initially claimed to not care what species his pet was, who wouldn’t want a powerful magical pet? Even if he didn’t use it for himself, he could still sell it for a huge amount of money!

“Wa!” Just as Suo Jia had finished gathering his courage, the girl beside him let out a shocked sound. Hearing this, Suo Jia quickly opened his eyes, and glanced at the card in his hands.

“11!” Seeing the number on the milky-white card he was holding, Suo Jia was dizzy with happiness. Even though this was only the 11th best egg, the value was already past 100 gold. Its value even exceeded 1000 gold..

Seeing Suo Jia’s delight, the girl said enviously: “Your luck is amazing; to have drawn egg number 11 is really not an easy feat. From all the eggs drawn from that pile so far, you drew the best egg.”

After pausing for a bit, the girl continued in a regretful voice: “Even though this isn’t one of the top ten magical pet eggs, this is already ranked first out of ten of the middle grade eggs.”

While speaking, the girl took the card from Suo Jia’s hand, and gently pulled a handle. After a moment....the egg marked #11 that was suspended above the counter quickly floated down, dropping onto the girl’s hand.

“Ya!” Seeing the magical pet egg in her hand, the girl showed a strange expression. After contemplating for a while, she finally passed the egg to Suo Jia, and at the same time, said: “I really don’t know if I should praise you for your good luck, or say that you have bad luck.”

Suo Jia glanced at the egg for a second, and then doubtfully accepted the egg as he put it into his pocket. He did not really understand how to differentiate magical beast eggs, so inspecting it further would be pointless. It was best to just listen to the Big Sister’s explanation.

Seeing Suo Jia wait for her explanation, the girl slightly smiled: “This magical pet egg, despite being put into the middle level egg ranks, is definitely not a middle level magical pet. In reality, it should count as a superior level magical pet!”

“Ah!” Hearing the girl’s words, Suo Jia could not help shouting in excitement. “Since it is a superior level magical pet, why is its egg a middle level egg? That makes no sense.”

“Keke...” Laughing, the girl shook her head, and patiently explained: “This magical pet egg is a Frost Wurm egg. In fact, it would count as the highest level magical pet egg. In reality, a mature Frost Wurm is also called a Diamond Dragon, which is the world’s strongest magical creature. They are unrivalled creatures. Even the Black Dragon King can

only bow before it.”

“Agah!” Hearing the girl’s words, Suo Jia’s mouth opened wide, practically drooling. Did such an amazing thing like this exist? He wasn’t dreaming right?

Seeing Suo Jia’s seemingly dull-witted state, the girl did not have the heart to continue, but she helplessly went on: “However, the Frost Wurm, besides being called the Diamond Dragon, is also more widely known as the Thousand Year Dragon! In other words, they require 1000 years to enter the mature stage! Only then will they become the unrivalled Frost Wyrms.”

“Eh! A thousand years....” Hearing the girl’s words, Suo Jia momentarily seemed to freeze from the news about the Frost Wurm. His stiff smile froze on his face, completely at loss at how to absorb this information.

Seeing Suo Jia’s funny expression, the girl lightly covered her mouth, not daring to laugh out loud. However, explaining was necessary, as it was part of her job.

Even though Frost Wyrms were very powerful, their magical pet eggs were not that difficult to obtain. Frost Wyrms are creatures that do not believe in personal upbringing of their own children. They lay thousands of eggs at a time, and since there is no form of contraception, nor do they know any control, their egg count is much higher in number than the other high level magical beast eggs despite being so formidable.

What’s more, Frost Wyrms are the most irresponsible parents, about the same level as turtles. Once they finish laying their eggs, they leave them and continue happily enjoying their lives. Even though their eggs are normally in covert places, their posterity still has difficulty living for long, let alone reaching their 1000 year long life expectancy. This is why only six mature Frost Wyrms exist in the entire world.

However, a Frost Wurm egg cannot be underestimated. A young Frost Wurm’s power is already at the level of a middle level magical beast. The only regretful thing is that within a human’s lifespan, it is impossible to ever utilize a young Frost Wurm’s true power. Because of the downside

that no human can live up to a thousand years, Frost Wyrms are only middle level magical pet eggs.

Even though there were lots of shortcomings, Suo Jia was still beyond excited. He had originally planned on casually buying a cheap magical pet, but he had never imagined that he had actually managed to get the world's most formidable magical pet. Even though he would never witness its maturity in his lifetime, this was already an amazing feat compared to his original intention.

Fishing out the pale blue magical pet egg from his pocket, Suo Jia fondled it lovingly, lightly rubbing its glossy shell. Finally...Suo Jia decided that he would not sell this egg. Even though it was worth 1000 gold, a person only has one life, and he can only have one magical pet. If this had been arranged by God, how could he exchange it for money?

What's more, with 1000 additional gold, he was still far from being able to buy a house. After careful consideration, he decided that no matter what, selling the Frost Wyrms egg would be a stupid decision.

While he was silently deciding this, the girl's voice said: "A magical pet egg's hatching method requires you to transmute magic into it. After you have instilled enough magic power into it, the egg will hatch!"

Hearing the girl's words, Suo Jia, who had already made his decision, did not hesitate to directly transmute magic power into the pale blue Frost Wyrms egg in his hand. The girl's voice continued: "After hatching the creature, it will recognize its master by the magical power it received. Thus...if you want to sell it, then you cannot transmute your magic power. Once it has received your magic power, even if other people received the egg, the egg will not be able to hatch."

The girl's words did not make Suo Jia waver; it was only 1000 gold. Such an amazing pet was worth that much money. For his own future, he had already decided that he would keep the Frost Wyrms. For that, he was willing to sacrifice 1000 gold.

Suo Jia had an affinity for water, and the Frost Wyrms was a beyond God-level magical beast of the water element. Frost Wyrms and water mages

were perfect matches for each other. How could such a perfect thing be sold for a trifling 1000 gold? In the future, Suo Jia would earn ten times, maybe even a hundred times more money back.

Accompanying Suo Jia's constant transfusion of magic power, the pale blue magical pet egg radiated streams of cold air. Even though the distance to hatching was still far from being reached, it was obvious to anyone watching that this magical pet egg already had a master!

"Ah!" Seeing the magical pet egg releasing those streams of cold air, the girl shouted in surprise. In her eyes, Suo Jia was not well-off, otherwise he would not have needed to buy the cheapest magical pet egg. Thus, she could not understand; if he was so poor that he couldn't even choose a pet of his choice, why would he try to hatch the Frost Wurm without hesitation? That was only a peak middle level magical beast egg! Its value was....

Chapter 14: Young Diamond Dragon

The values of different magical eggs were not the same, changing based on ranks. Low level magical pet eggs were split into exactly three classes: the prices being 100, 1000, 10,000.

By the same standard, middle level magical pet eggs were also split into three classes with their prices ranging from 100,000, 1,000,000, 10,000,000! Frost Wyrms qualified to be within the highest class of the middle level, so they were more or less equivalent to the lowest class of the high level magical pet eggs. With such a high value, they can be sold for an astonishing 100 million gold coins! Thus, the girl could not understand why Suo Jia would transfuse his magic power with no hesitation.

As for high level magical pet eggs, their values are at least 100 million, with the highest being billions. Warriors with high level magical pets are said to be unrivalled. They can easily decimate a small city just by relying on their magical pet!

However, a high level magical pet's power at maturity does not necessarily determine its rank; it is just as important for the magical pet to enter maturity within a human's limited lifespan. For example, magical pets such as the Frost Wyrms, despite being extremely powerful, require a thousand years to mature. Thus, it can only be a middle level magical pet, for who would be able to live for a thousand years? Once the master dies, the magical pet becomes wild.

As of now, the strongest magical pets are of the lion, tiger, panther, and elephant types....since their lifespans are shorter, these magical pets reach maturity faster. Of course...not all of these magical pet types are high level; only kings of beasts like the King of Lions, the King of Tigers, and the King of Panthers are. A king-level magical pet can easily get rid of a few hundred of its non-king level kin.

Because of this, magical eggs were categorized with the lifespan of the creature inside of the egg taken into consideration. If it wasn't for the fact

that an individual had to personally imbue magic into the egg before a tamed pet could hatch, how could the Frost Wurm— the strongest magical pet—be considered only a top middle level magical pet?

While the girl was trying to figure out what Suo Jia was thinking, he had already finished infusing his magical power into the egg. Letting out a breath of air, Suo Jia mumbled, “A thousand gold coins for a Frost Wurm is worth it. Since this is what the heavens have decreed, I will not go against their wishes.”

“A thousand gold coins?” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the girl stared at Suo Jia in disbelief for a while. Soon...the girl laughed bitterly. She knew that Suo Jia still had not understood the situation clearly. 1000 gold coins was only the value of a lower middle level magical pet. Even though Frost Wurm eggs were easy to obtain, this was only in comparison to high level magical pet eggs. After all, obtaining king level magical pets couldn’t be that easy.

All magical pet eggs were stolen by treasure hunters from the dens of magical beasts, and only expert-level treasure hunters could steal a king-level magical pet egg from a king-level magical beast’s lair. These expert-level treasure hunters also need the courage in the face of death to even attempt to enter a king-level beast’s territory. Otherwise, why would a high level magical pet egg be so expensive?

As everyone knew, every region had only one king. In comparison to the entire world, there were thousands of magical beast kings living amongst humans. If these eggs weren’t stolen, how else could there be so many of them?

Opening and closing her mouth, the girl gave up on explaining the truth of the circumstance to Suo Jia. The girl believed that if Suo Jia knew he had transfused magical power to a magical beast egg worth hundreds of millions of gold, he might go crazy. In general, even aristocratic nobles would not have such luxuries. Unless he was the successor of the family, any other person would not be willing to take care of such a good magical pet.

“Ai...” The girl sighed in envy as she looked at Suo Jia. She did not think that Suo Jia would have such good luck on his side. To have picked the Frost Wyrms from the thousands of magical beast eggs; if this was a common enough occurrence, then the whole store would have closed down from bankruptcy long ago.

In fact, this magical beast store was a part of the magical beast syndicate group which catered to thousands of stores around the world. Every store had at least a hundred thousand magical beast eggs, and this store was merely just another distribution store. To have an egg worth 100,000,000 gold, Suo Jia's fortune was far too great to have landed a Frost Wyrms amongst the millions of other eggs. Although this wasn't one of the top 10 ranked eggs, this was really a blessing in disguise; who would have thought this would have happened?

Seeing Suo Jia leave the shop in high spirits, the girl hesitated for a bit, then secretly tore the card to pieces. She didn't want the news of the appearance of the Frost Wyrms to spread out. This was because by the assigned regulations, in order to increase the attraction of this event to customers, such results could not be released. Also, the girl did not wish for the boy to encounter any difficulties; since he was a completely innocent boy ignorant of his surroundings, and a person's talent could arouse envy in others.*

Evening came once again. While his mother was already in deep sleep, Suo Jia was happily cupping the pale blue magical pet egg in his hands, constantly transfusing magic power into it. The magical pet egg that was releasing streams of cold air gradually began brightening as more magic power was transfused, emitted a pearl-like glow.

Gradually, the cold air became thicker and denser, and had unknowingly already enveloped Suo Jia completely. Strangely enough, it would not disperse, forming something similar to a cocoon, wrapped around Suo Jia and the magical pet egg.

“Katcha....katcha....katcha.....” Finally, after some time, the pale blue egg shell's surface finally began to crack with clear breaking sounds. More and more cracks formed consecutively on the shell's surface. Seeing

this scene, Suo Jia knew that the Frost Wurm was finally hatching.

“Para!” Finally, after a sharp sound rang out, the egg shell fell apart. At the same time a small worm-like creature as soft as cotton appeared in Suo Jia’s palm.

Suo Jia examined the small creature closely. It was a light blue color, with half its body exposed. Its back had two soft wings; however, since the whole body was still covered with fluids, its wings were stuck to its body, and were unrecognizable.

It had 4 small and skinny claws; the ones in the front were short and skinny, while the ones in the back were thicker, as well as much longer. It also had a long, newt-like tail. Awkwardly tangled in the fluids, from just appearance alone, it definitely had the form of a dragon.

However....seeing the delicate and weak little creature struggling in the fluids, Suo Jia was sure that he could turn it into a pulp with just his fingertip. This was a Frost Wurm? The most powerful being? He hadn’t been scammed, had he?

Under Suo Jia’s gaze, the little pet had finally struggled to stand up. It reached out with its adorably small claws, grabbing the pale blue eggshell next to it, and began eating it heartily. Even though its body seemed so weak, it was devouring the eggshells ravenously.

After it finished eating the eggshell, the little pet looked a lot healthier. It managed to stand in a stable position after some difficulty. Shaking its head back and forth, it tried its best to unfold the wings on its back but....with the sticky fluids all over its body, even such a simple movement was impossible.

Seeing the little pet’s adorable actions, Suo Jia became beyond fond of it. No matter if it was strong or not, such an adorably small creature was definitely enough to satisfy Suo Jia to the point where he would even laugh about it in his dreams.

“Baji...” The sound of Suo Jia’s laugh unavoidably made his hand shake a bit. With only this sound, the little pet fell onto all fours, and could not climb back up for a long time. Seeing its confused eyes, Suo Jia knew that

the creature had been knocked into a daze.

After a while, Suo Jia laughed heartily. It was really too adorable. Even though this creature would probably not become very powerful, Suo Jia decided its cuteness alone was reason enough for him to care for it well. From today onward, he had a new friend besides the water!

While Suo Jia was laughing, the little pet had pretty much recovered from the dizziness caused by its fall. It shook its head, and once again fought to climb back up, trying hard to use its strength to unfold its wings.

The little pet that had just hatched had a lot of dirt covering the surface of its body in the form of threads, hindering its movements. Since it had been a while since the little pet had hatched, the dirty stuff on its body had already begun to dry. After a while, it became completely unable to move.

Seeing the little pet gasping for breath, Suo Jia did not have the heart to see it continue to strain itself. His right hand smoothly danced through the air, and after a perfect completion of the Moisture Technique, a fine mist smoothly drizzled onto the little pet's head, washing away all of the impurities on its body. At the same time, [the mist] repeatedly permeated the little pet's body.

Feeling the effects of the Moisture Technique, the little pet stopped its struggling. It lazily laid down on Suo Jia's hands, contentedly enjoying the feeling of the strands of mist from the Moisture Technique, too lazy to move at all.

Chapter 15: Information on Dragons

With a partner to practice with, Suo Jia naturally stopped wasting time. Since his little pet enjoyed the Moisture Technique so much, what else could be said? One after another, the Moisture Technique was applied in torrents onto the little guy's body. The little pet that previously did not move in Suo Jia's hand would look at Suo Jia with certain expressions, which Suo Jia could interpret by the traces of emotions in its playful eyes.

Since he had now earned the Frost Wurm as a magical pet, it was only natural that he would want to know more about it. So the following day after his noon classes had ended, Suo Jia arrived at the school library to try and find more relevant information about the Frost Wurm.

Frost Wyrms are the continent's most tyrannical creatures and are also known as Diamond Dragons and Thousand Year Dragons. A mature Frost Wurm can easily defeat a Black Dragon, making it the strongest living creature.

However, the Frost Wurm is extremely weak at birth. It is so weak that even the weakest of the magical slime varieties can easily defeat and kill a newborn Frost Wurm. Not only that, but even though the Frost Wurm has an infinite life expectancy, it will stay within its hatchling phase for 10 years!

Ten years after being born, the Frost Wurm's body will develop into that of a young adult's. At this stage, the Frost Wurm develops a certain amount of power. As long as it has its most basic frost capabilities, it can be compared to the average middle level magical beast.

Basically, throughout the lifespan of a normal human, people can only rely on the power of the Frost Wurm during its larvae form because the Frost Wurm will stay in the larvae form for exactly the same time as a human's life expectancy: 100 years! Although once the Frost Wurm gets past this stage, it will have power that can easily beat any of the highest powered magical beasts, just how many people are capable of living past 100 years?

After 100 years, the Frost Wyrms enter its adolescent stage. Once a Frost Wyrms enters this stage, then its power can easily rival that of the Black Dragon King's. It will continuously grow in strength while it matures and earns experience when it fights. After 1000 years, its body will harden into a diamond-like structure and have power like no other. This is the real power of a Frost Wyrms; in this world, there is practically nothing that can stand up to its might!

Gently closing the book, he let out a deep breath. For now, Suo Jia did not even know if choosing the Frost Wyrms was the correct choice or not. This little pet did indeed have a huge lifespan, but the time required for it to mature was similarly long.

10 years for its hatchling stage, 100 years for its larvae stage, and then 1000 years until it reached its matured form. A human's lifespan was only 100 years, and so in regards to Suo Jia, the Frost Wyrms would only ever be a middle level magical pet. It would only be when it had reached 100 years that he would see any results, provided he even lived for that long.

Lowering his head, he looked at the little pet that was soundly sleeping next to his chest. Suo Jia was really jealous of it; aside from accepting nourishment everyday, the Frost Wyrms would spend the majority of its time sleeping comfortably.

Leaving the library, Suo Jia returned to the classroom. There was still time before the next class would start, and so inside the room, many girls were gathering among themselves chattering and laughing. Although they noticed Suo Jia enter, they had only glanced at him, and did not pay close attention to him.

These girls were only young girls around eight or nine years old and still haven't had their 'first awakening of love', however they are still aware of the differences between men and women. Although they do not know what the exact specifics were, faintly they more or less understand a bit.

During this time for girls, their favorite game to play was house. There were no real emotions involved, just a plain and pure imitation of the life

of a husband and wife. It was all for the purpose of having simple fun.

It went without saying that Suo Jia had grown up to be quite cute; after all, how could a child be ugly? However, it was definitely not enough for him to catch the attention of any female at this point. The only reason he had gained any attention at all was solely because he was 'the only flower among a hundred that was slightly green'!

Although the Holy Light Academy does not force its students to live within its dormitories... .. among the 100 female students, they all came from the billions of cities within the Holy Light Empire. Not a single family lives within Holy Light City. So even though the Holy Light Academy didn't force them to live in its dorms, they also didn't have many other options to choose from, and so the entire student body lived within the academy.

On the outside, Holy Light Academy appeared to be just a school, but the truth was that it covered an extremely large area of land. The academy is divided into a total of 167 campuses with each type of major utilizing its own campus. Holy Light Academy could be compared to a city with a population of ten thousand.

For all the girls on campus here, if they were not in class studying then they were playing around in their dorms. It is not that they have no interest in boys, but that there were no boys around them at all.

Holy Light Academy has very strict regulations. It was fine if you didn't live in the dorms, but if you did choose to live in the dorms, then this indicated that your guardians have already given the student's care taking responsibilities over to the school. Thus, they have to be responsible; otherwise, if something happens, who was supposed to take responsibility?

Anyone who was qualified to enter Holy Light Academy must have possessed great talent, and having such a talented child meant that the parents must also have amazing talent, with relatively high status. Because of this unless they were on break, these girls are all like birds trapped in cages, like princesses locked in ivory towers, without the

slightest bit of freedom.

Some people say, if you don't see any females for 10 years, even being with a 'mother pig' would be superior to being alone'. This expression was similar to the current situation. These young girls very rarely encountered boys, only seeing Suo Jia once a day in class. Even if he was a bit uglier, he was still a rare treasure in their eyes. Since Suo Jia actually had a lovable appearance similar to a blossom, how could the group of young girls not give him a second glance?

The rarer the treasure, the more expensive it is. In the academy, Suo Jia was the only male, and so he was its precious treasure. In general, all of the females had a desire to talk to him, but they were shy, so they retreated and observed from afar. What would they have done if he had ignored everyone?

Completely unable to understand these girls' thoughts, Suo Jia directly returned to his seat. He lightly closed his eyes, secretly resting a bit. Just while he had been in the library resting, he had already used the Moisture Technique on the Diamond Dragon 28 times.

After practicing for two days, Suo Jia's improvement was obvious. Two days ago, he could at most use the Moisture Technique 25 times in one go. However, now at two days later, he could continuously use the Moisture Technique 28 times.

"Hey!" Right as Suo Jia had closed his eyes and was recovering his spirit power, a clear and delicate voice rang out. Exhausted, he opened his eyes and looked towards the direction of the sound, and saw the blue-haired girl from the other day smiling at him.

Seeing Suo Jia's gaze turn to her, Xue Er nervously swallowed her saliva, then laughed and said, "Student Suo Jia, there is still quite a bit of time until class starts. We are going to practice at the training area for a bit, do you want to join us?"

Slightly furrowing his brow, Suo Jia really wanted to reject Xue Er's invitation. The eight years-old Suo Jia had no feelings for the opposite sex yet, so to him, a girl was just a person that had long hair, wore a skirt, and

wore perfume. Other than these characteristics, he had no other thoughts about girls.

Suo Jia really wanted to decline the invitation since he was tired. He was in no mood to play around with them. Right when he was about to say no, his mother's smiling face abruptly appeared within his mind. His mother's soft gentle words came back to him, "Suo Jia, once you enter the academy, you must be good friends with everyone. You can't go down the path of a recluse. If you do, then Mother will be very sad. Mother hopes that you will have plenty of good friends. If you can do that, then Mother will be very, very happy!"

Opening his mouth, Suo Jia took back the words he was planning on saying, while another one of mother's lectures replayed in his mind, "Suo Jia, when talking to classmates, remember to be polite and smile. You must learn humility and forgive others. When someone asks you for a favor, you must make sure you accomplish it to the best of your capabilities, and not decline to help!"

Thinking about this, Suo Jia smiled in a way reminiscent to a flower blossoming. Warmly nodding his head, he replied: "Okay, since everyone wants to go, then as a member of this class, how could I not?"

While speaking, Suo Jia stood up in a gentle and refined way, warmly smiling: "Thank you for your invitation, I'm very happy to have received it. I was afraid that you would exclude me because I was male."

"Wha-! Why would....why would we exclude you?" Seeing the normally completely quiet Suo Jia show such a warm and gentle expression, the normally unaffected girls in the class immediately surrounded him, chattering about their own attitudes. Even if they did not gain Suo Jia's attention, they had to at least make sure that there were no such misunderstandings between them.

Chapter 16: The Blessed Little Dragon

TL: The author refers to the dragon as 'diamond', short for 'Diamond Dragon' throughout this chapter.

*

With the escort of several girls, Suo Jia led the group towards the direction of the training area. Along the way, other girls who had heard of the news came along as well. After a few other groups joined, by the time they arrived at the entrance of the training area all the girls in his class had already gathered without a single one missing.

If any other male saw that hundreds of tender and lovely young girls were escorting a single boy, he would be jealous to death. However, the current Suo Jia, besides from the forced smile on his face, was not at all happy about it. He didn't want to do anything at the moment besides rest. Even if he was made of metal, his body could not endure using the Moisture Technique 28 times consecutively.

Just as the girls entering the training area were about to tell the administrators to release some magical beasts for them to practice on, Suo Jia's eyes suddenly brightened. He had thought of a very good solution.

Not all magical beasts could accept endless amounts of the Moisture Technique. When things lean too far on one extreme, they can only move in the opposite direction*. After too much of the Moisture Technique, the organism might actually become less healthy and even eventually die.

Among magical beasts, only water elemental magical beasts can accept more Moisture Techniques. However, there are also limits; if the magical beast is instead of the fire element, using the Moisture Technique on it too much can lead to death on the spot.

Preventing the girls from requesting a magical beast, Suo Jia scooped out the diamond sleeping deeply in his pocket, and gently placed in on the table. Moreover, he made sure to place a warm animal skin on top of it. This loving action shocked the girls around him. A male that had such a

tender side was difficult to imagine.

After he covered the dragon well with the animal skin, Suo Jia turned around and warmly laughed: “There’s no need to ask the school to release a magical beast, that requires a rental fee. Everyone can just use my magical pet for their purposes.”

Before Suo Jia finished speaking, a group of girls had already surrounded the little diamond, closely inspecting it. The little pet had pale blue skin, a chubby body, and was tender and squishy. What’s more, while sleeping deeply, it had a sparkling and translucent bubble on its nose that expanded and shrank with its breathing, making it beyond adorable.

Girls usually have two characteristics: the first is that they have no resistance to beautiful things. However compared to this, the second characteristic is that to girls, the thing that has an even stronger effect than beauty was—cuteness!

It may be true that a mature Frost Wurm has absolutely no cute parts at all. However no matter what, as of now, this little pet that cannot even be called a Frost Wurm yet is extremely adorable.

A group of girls surrounded the Diamond Dragon in admiration. All of them wanted to hold the little pet close to them. Unfortunately it was not their magical pet, how could they be allowed to hold it like that?

Seeing that the girls had pretty much completely forgotten their original goal and was now focusing only on the diamond, Suo Jia laughed tiredly, without trying to stop them. Even though the diamond enjoyed the effects of the Moisture Technique, there weren’t any practical effects. Letting the dragon feel more comfortable was good, but even if it didn’t, it wasn’t that big of a deal.

While thinking, Suo Jia sat down in a nearby chair. Exhausted, he closed his eyes, and secretly began to rest. He could not waste any time; if he wanted to quickly improve his magic power, then he had to practice endlessly, and thus needed to spend every second he could spare to rest.

After a while, all the girls finally noticed the silent Suo Jia sitting on the

side. Seeing him have so much patience, although the girls did not say anything, they had a sense of appreciation in their hearts. From young to old, regardless of whether they were youths or elders, nobody has ever had as much patience towards them as this young boy. Little did they know that Suo Jia was not extremely patient, but was rather currently resting; he was really just way too tired.

Finally, under the urges of all the other girls, Xue Er once again walked up to Suo Jia. Once he was awake, the so-called magic study that had been delayed for so long was finally starting!

Although everyone knew how to cast this spell, they all had their own ideas and experiences. Only by comparing and learning from each other as well as using each other's strengths to make up for their own weaknesses could they cause their own magic abilities to flourish. Within all the professions, discussing and collaborating between mages was the most frequent.

All the girls surrounded the Diamond Dragon in a large circle, and then started to use the Moisture Technique in the Diamond Dragon's direction. This way, while practicing your own magic, you can also watch other people use their magic as well. A mage's learning process is based on constant comparing, learning, reforming, and always adjusting.

Learning magic was only a start. Why was some people able to use magic faster than others despite casting the same type of magic? Why are some people's magics more powerful than others? All of these aspects rely on individual feelings.

Hundreds of Moisture Techniques were used at the same time. Countless fine mists combined into one large piece, the haze then raining down over the Diamond Dragon's body. The moisture entered its body, and a magnificent rainbow enveloped the Diamond Dragon.

"Ji!" Feeling the coolness on its body, the Diamond Dragon suddenly woke from its deep slumber, happily raising its head to look at the rainbow above it. It then excitedly began to totter around the large table, flapping the soft pair of wings on its back as hard as it could, and moved

its pair of short front claws as if it was trying to grab onto something.

Seeing the chubby little pet's adorable movements, all the girls could not help smiling with their eyes. One after another, they said: "Ya! This little pet is too cute. Look at its movements; it's too funny. Aiya...it fell! Will it get hurt?"

These words however, were only said after resting a bit after using the Moisture Technique. The children qualified to enter this school all knew that they had to study diligently. After all....they could not enter Holy Light Academy purely through talent; they had to have the mentality to study well too.

Discussing while resting was fine, but once their spirit powers recovered, they would immediately start using the Moisture Technique again. Even though there were girls constantly stopping, there were always other girls simultaneously starting to use the Moisture Technique again as well.

The thin mist formed a cloud-like mass of air, gradually floating in a lively way towards the Diamond Dragon and enveloping it. All the people could hear the happy sounds of the little pet within the clouds.

Once everyone's spirit powers were exhausted and they were unable to perform another Moisture Technique, the little pet would lie down in satisfaction on the ground, unable to get back up. It may have been an illusion, but after receiving thousands of Moisture Techniques, the little pet's body seemed to have gotten thicker by a whole circle!

After continuously releasing more than ten Moisture Techniques, all the girls had gotten tired. However, even though their spirits were tired, everyone actually felt very satisfied. To have all their friends doing what they enjoyed together was a very happy occasion.

Everyone sat down in nearby seats, all of them discussing their insights and the experiences they had gained; the eight year-olds had not yet learned filthy characteristics like selfishness. Even if a few girls were selfish, within such an environment and atmosphere, they gradually released their darker inner thoughts, and started to discuss with everyone

else.

Magus was not profession that rely on physical strength. Typically speaking, a mage's body was very weak; a mage's strength relied on his/her spirit power, magic power, and ability to use magic, not the body.

To the left of the training area's entrance was a resting room. At present, all the girls had unconsciously or subconsciously used Suo Jia as the center to sit down. Perhaps it had to do with Suo Jia's and Xue Er's actions during their battle, but the girls had already subconsciously deemed the two as the most powerful people in the class. It could also be said that first impressions were simply too significant.

Even though they did not yet understand love, nor had they reached the age of the first awakening of love, all the girls felt that talking with boys held more meaning than what than talking with other girls. After all....talking with girls could be done at any time, whether in class or in the dorms.

After talking for about half an hour all the way up until class started, everyone's spirit power had pretty much recovered. All the girls were reluctant to part and escorted Suo Jia back to classroom for the start of afternoon classes. In addition, everyone decided that from then on, they would hold this type of activity every afternoon, until the day they would all graduate.

Chapter 17: The True Meanings of the Laws of Water

Puzzled at the dispirited and listless students, the female lecturer was very curious; why were the moods of these girls so weak? Only after questioning them did she find out; these girls had actually known that they should practice by themselves. Even though this was Holy Light Academy, Students practicing of their own volition was still something she had never seen nor heard of before..

Looking at her students, she was filled with a sense of gratitude. The female lecturer nodded: "The fact that everyone has been working so hard makes me happy. Here, I can now reveal to everyone that the most basic requirement for learning meditation is being able to consecutively activate 100 Moisture Techniques. Everyone should work hard!"

"One! One hundred times!" Hearing the lecturer's words, everyone, including Suo Jia, opened their mouths wide. This was too extreme! Just earlier, the more powerful people in the class could only activate the Moisture Technique 13-14 times. Even though Suo Jia could consecutively activate 28 of them, he was a difference case. Nobody else had practiced as painfully as he had.

Seeing the dumbstruck expressions on the students' faces, the lecturer smiled and said: "Yes, it's exactly 100 times. Only the people who have enough spirit power to support 100 uses of the Moisture Technique are able to enter the meditation state and become a true mage. Before this, everyone is simply a water controller, not a legitimate mage."

After a slight pause the female lecturer continued: "Based on historical records, the earliest a person was able to learn meditation was at the age of 10. A difference of thousands of years has already passed, and there has not been a single instance of this record been surpassed yet."

Hearing the lecturer's words, all the children's faces turned blue. After a long time, Xue Er asked while trembling: "Teacher, didn't you say before that water element attack magics could only be activated after learning

meditation? Doesn't that mean that at least before the age of 10, we have no way of learning attack magics?"

Firmly nodding her head, the lecturer said with certainty, "The most important thing to do while under the age of ten is to frequently practice the several types of auxiliary water magic. However that does not mean that we have no ways of attacking!"

"Let's take a look at water magic alone. There are other spells in our repertoire beyond ice magic, and besides the obvious therapeutic branch - moisturization- there are other important supportive spells at our disposal. For instance the Swamp Technique! And of course the ever important defensive ability, Aqua Aegis.

"Doesn't the Swamp Technique fall under earth elemental magic?" A short-haired girl asked doubtfully.

Curling her lips, the female lecturer said in disdain, "That is only an outsider's misconception. In reality, the Swamp Technique falls under the water control arts. Although earth based magic can activate the Swamp Technique, they need to rely on a large body of water nearby to cast this magic. If the environment is water-less, then they cannot activate the Swamp Technique."

However, water element mages were different, they could activate the Swamp Technique at any time. In reality, earth mages use their control over the earth to also gain control over the water inside of the swamp. Water mages are the exact opposite; they use their ability to control the water inside the swamp to control the entire swamp. Strictly speaking, earth mages only control swamps, while water mages are able to create swamps.

With a sigh, the female lecturer continued, "This debate has existed for a long time already. This type of conflict does not only exist between earth and water elemental magic. The truth is that within the six elemental magics, there are many techniques that share similar appearances. In order to avoid controversy, the Magic Hall has labeled these types as "shared magic" This Swamp Technique is a shared magic

between the earth and water element.

Reaching this point in her lecture, the female instructor finally shifted to her main point, and said with a smile, “Besides the therapeutic Moisture Technique, the auxiliary Swamp Technique, as well as the defensive technique Aqua Aegis, as long as you are under ten years of age the only attack spell you have is the Water Sphere Technique!”

“Ah!” Hearing the lecturer’s words, all the students sighed in despair. Nobody knew more clearly than them that the Water Sphere Technique was weak and had no power. To want to use the Water Sphere to push someone to death is really too laughable.

“Heng!” Seeing everyone’s dead and disappointed reactions, the female lecturer coldly snorted, and asked in a low voice: “What? What? Do you all look down on the Water Sphere Technique? Do all of you not understand that even the tallest buildings begin from the base*? This Water Sphere Technique may have little power, but if all of you neglect to practice, to hone even the most basic of skills, you will suffer greatly for your negligence!”

Hearing the teacher’s words, all of the girls stopped complaining. The instructor’s cold glance swept across the room and said, “the Water Sphere Technique by itself does not have much attack power, but it is excellent for practicing water control, in addition..... the Water Sphere Technique is a prerequisite for casting ice magic. If there is no water, where would ice come from?”

While speaking, the lecturer reached behind with her right hand and pulled out her staff that had been resting diagonally across her back. She narrowed her eyes slightly, and after muttering some type of incantation, a hedgehog-like ball of ice about the size of a football formed. It’s surface was full of long and sharp spikes, and it emitted dense streams of cold air. It shot out like lightning from the magic crystal at the tip of the staff, and with a sudden sound, the magic target next to the instructor was smashed into pieces!

Seeing the dumbstruck expressions the students had, the female

lecturer smiled in satisfaction and said: “How about it? This Ice Sphere Technique is acceptable right? I can tell everyone right now, this Ice Sphere Technique is the transformation of the Water Sphere Technique. By actively lowering the temperature of a Water Sphere, this Ice Sphere Technique is formed. Right now...does everyone still think that the Water Sphere Technique is something that can be neglected?”

Facing the lecturer’s teachings through words and examples, all the girls enviously opened their mouths. That Ice Sphere’s power was really large, similar to that of some type of artillery. They had not expected that even though the beautiful female lecturer did not seem to be very old, she had already reached such an advanced level in magic instruction!

Enjoying the students’ expressions of admiration, the female lecturer said proudly: “This Ice Sphere Technique is something that official mages learn on the job and is proof of their abilities. Only those that can use the Ice Sphere Technique are counted as mages, and this also proves that you have already learned meditation!”

After a slight pause, the female lecturer mused for a bit, and continued: “Improving your Water Sphere Technique is not simply for the sake of transforming it into the Ice Sphere Technique. In reality, the Water Sphere Technique is the base of all water element magics. High-leveled Tempests and even the even higher-leveled Blizzards are all extensions of the Water Sphere Technique.”

Raising her staff once again, the female lecturer continued: “Once you complete the Water Sphere Technique training, then your control over water also grows stronger. Everyone observe, the next level after the Ice Sphere Technique is--the Ice Arrow Technique, which depends on your control over water to pull the Ice Sphere into the Ice Arrow form. However even though only the form has changed, the Ice Arrow’s power is many times higher!”

While speaking, a bright blue light quickly began collecting on the staff in her hand. After a short while, the female lecturer waved her staff, and a blue Ice Arrow shot out and traveled 50 meters in a flash, completely penetrating through the magic target that had been placed in the

classroom for demonstration purposes.

Lightly putting away her staff, the female lecturer said proudly: “How about it? This is the Ice Sphere’s next level—the Mysterious Arrow of Ice, also known as the Ice Arrow Technique. If you cannot pass the level of control you need for the Water Sphere Technique, then there is no way you can complete this magic!”

After talking for a long time as well as activating two magics, the female lecturer was a bit tired. Casually using the Moisture Technique on herself, the female lecturer said patiently: “In general, the basics are the most important; this does not require me to explain further. Anyways... from today onwards until you are all able to learn meditation, you will all have to practice these few magic spells diligently. This is the training regime that all of you will have for the next few years!”

Using the Moisture Technique to recover the body’s condition, using the Aqua Aegis technique for defense, using the Swamp Technique to cut off the enemy’s movements, and using the Water Sphere Technique to attack the enemy; these were all of the abilities that a water element magic apprentice had to master.

Among the four elements, out of all the magic apprentices training to be mages, those with the water element were the weakest. Whether in terms of defense or attack, they were all equally powerless. If they wanted to kill their enemy, even using a knife to stab them would be faster.

However with regards to these four elemental arts, once you reached a certain level of cultivation, water arts became the toughest. The Moisture technique enables water mages to become a small undying force, Aqua Aegis Technique upon evolving into ice — covers the entire body in thorns of ice — freezing everything within their vicinity, allowing one’s defense to completely go under metamorphosis.

As for attack, nothing more needs to be said. Revolving Frozen Gas, Frosted Glacier Sword, Chilling Ice Hailstorm, Blizzard, Absolute Zero, no matter which one you chose, all of them were famous and well-known.

Even the most unremarkable Swamp Technique, once having reached

the high-level realm, can cause a heavy warrior to perish in the quagmire. To high-level water mages, a swamp that is many meters deep and spans a width of hundreds of square meters can easily be created. Unless you can fly, you will just have to await your death.

Of course, once you reached a high-level of cultivation, the auxiliary aspects of the water arts become number one within the four elemental arts as well. Ice Seal, Freeze, Barbed Icicle Prison, there are so many that you can't even count them all clearly! Within all six arts, water arts are the most annoying to deal with because their attacks are strange and immeasurable!

Chapter 18: Terrifying reasoning

After lecturing for an entire afternoon until the school day was almost over, the female lecturer finally taught the Aqua Aegis Technique to everyone. Although at first the Aqua Aegis Technique seems to be a water spell, in actuality it should fall under the category of water control, as it is just another way of using the Water Sphere Technique.

In short, if you wrap yourself within a Water Sphere Technique, that will be a basic form of the Aqua Aegis. The theory was quite simple; whether or not you can successfully cast the spell depends on the extent to which you can control water.

The first person able to cast the Aqua Aegis Technique was no doubt Suo Jia. When it came to the control of water streams, if Suo Jia claimed to be number two, no one would dare claim to be number one.

The only difference was, Suo Jia did not actually follow the teacher's procedures in developing the Aqua Aegis. According to the teacher, creating the shield was like blowing a soap bubble. Suo Jia felt that this was not the best way, as soap bubbles were very fragile.

After some modifications, Suo Jia first pulled the 9 meter long water stream and manipulated it so that it rapidly coiled around his body. This formed a shield of water around him, and from within the shield, he was able to clearly see the water stream's every movement!

In reality, Suo Jia was using that water stream to surround himself. Once the water stream spread itself out, it would connect to form a thick Aqua Aegis. Activating it took little time, and it looked very beautiful, making it different from everyone else's. Within his water shield was a spiraling stream of water that acted as the inner support. This gave the Aqua Aegis something like a skeleton, which made it more tough and durable.

By the time the lesson on the Aqua Aegis Technique had finished, it was already past the end of the school day. At this point, the crowd of apprentices had finally learned the three most basic water magics: attack,

defend, and restore. The only thing left was the auxiliary-type Swamp Technique but....the Swamp Technique was actually a rotating flow technique as well as a vortex technique. This made it a higher level primary magic, and at the moment, none of them were able to learn it.

Silently, Suo Jia returned home. After finishing his simple dinner, he started training by himself all the way until it was almost time for him to go to bed. Finally, Suo Jia completed his personal goal—being able to activate the Moisture Technique 30 times consecutively!

“Pata...pata...pata....” After receiving such a large number of Moisture Techniques, the small light blue pet was diligently trying to flutter its wings, with the intent to start flying. Regretfully, the little pet’s wings were still too small, soft, and immature; its body was also too fat and chubby, and so it had no way of propelling itself into the air.

Suo Jia lightly stroked the little pet. Even though it had only hatched a few days ago, its body had already become much more robust. Despite the fact that it was still unable to fly, it was already able to walk steadily without tripping.

Feeling Suo Jia’s affectionate care, the little pet stopped its efforts and contentedly shut its eyes, its small head constantly rubbing against Suo Jia’s palms. Occasionally, it flicked its small pink tongue to lick Suo Jia’s palms, tickling him so that Suo Jia could not help but laugh despite his exhaustion.

After teasing the little pet for a bit, Suo Jia stopped playing around. He had to quickly rest; he had no time to spare on having fun, but....just before he entered a state of slumber, he reflected on some things as he usually did.

During class today, even though Suo Jia had never said a single word from start to end, that didn’t mean he didn’t have any questions. Based on his intuition, and his understanding of water, Suo Jia stubbornly believed that the water style magics should not be so monotonous and weak.

The so-called water magic actually uses the unusual method of achieving control over water. In this world, water is everywhere; water

has an inseparable relationship even within a person's body in fact, as 70% of a person's body is composed of water!

An eerie and chilling divine light flashed through Suo Jia's mind, similar to that of a meteor. However this time, Suo Jia was keen enough to capture that thread of inspiration!

Suo Jia opened his eyes in fear, and because of his own fearful insight, his body was covered in cold sweat. If....this insight was actually achieved, it would be too frightening!

The fact is, even though both people's and magical beast's body compositions are different, the common point both share is that majority of both bodies are comprised of water!

Suo Jia's insight was: if he could control water in nature then....was he able to control the water within a human's or a magical beast's body?

As everyone knows, the water content within a human's or a magical beast's body, aside from the liquid within cells and tissues, also majorly make up the blood. If these fluids can be controlled, what will the result be?

While pondering this, Suo Jia envisioned a terrible scene; under the manipulation of a water mage, spears of blood erupted out of an enemies pores.. God...once all blood was lost, whether it was a person or an all-powerful magical beast, how could it survive?

Suo Jia knew that such water magics had never existed before. Otherwise, he would have definitely heard of it before. At the very least, his teacher would have told them. What Suo Jia wanted to know now was if this magic or type of manipulation could possibly be achieved, or if nobody had ever once thought of it.

Gradually lowering his gaze, he looked at the sweaty little pet. In order to verify this theory, he had to try it out!

Seeing the chubby little pet, Suo Jia knew clearly that although its body was not made purely of water, at least 80% of it was. While thinking about this, Suo Jia shakily extended his hands, enveloping the little pet's

body and held it up.

Shutting his eyes. Suo Jia tried hard to feel the water streams inside of the little pet's body. After an instant, Suo Jia was able to feel the water inside the little pet's body circulating around in waves. Even though most of the water streams were impure mixtures, no matter what, impure water was still water!

Nervously swallowing his saliva, Suo Jia sharply captured one of the millions of flowing water streams, and manipulated it so that it changed direction, moving according to his own commands.

"Ji!" Following the water stream's change, the previously soundly asleep little pet cried out in shock and suddenly opened its eyes. At the same time, its body struggled for a bit with large movements, forcing Suo Jia to lose his control over that stream of water!

Even though this attempt at the manipulation had failed, Suo Jia did not feel a thread of disappointment; in fact he was excited to death. He knew that his own thought process had been correct. As long as there was water, he was able to control it; it didn't matter whether the water was water that existed in nature or if it was water that constituted an organism's body.

However, Suo Jia's ideas had not completely been achieved. Even though....he was able to control those water streams, it required an extremely close distance to be successful and...if the idea was to make all of the blood within his enemy's body spurt out, it was not very likely to happen. The tough artery walls were not that easy to rupture!

In order to test his own hypothesis, Suo Jia once again extended his hands to envelope the little pet. This time, Suo Jia was not as merciful as the first time, and directly forced all the water within the little pet's body to come under his control, forcing all of it upwards.

"Jiji" Seeing its own body somehow flying, the little pet cried out excitedly, diligently flapping its wings along. Under Suo Jia's control, the little pet's tiny body revolved around Suo Jia in a rugged manner, twisting around him at fast speeds.

“What...” Seeing the little pet rotating around him as fast as lightning, Suo Jia bitterly laughed to himself. It seemed like the blood could not break through the arteries; right now the little pet was flying due to all of the blood in his body being moved. The blood vessel’s walls were just as tough as before, to be able to break through it was still too far away!

“Nn...” Nodding his head with certainty, Suo Jia knew that wanting all the blood in his opponent to shoot out was impossible under normal circumstances but...if the opponent’s body had a wound, then it would be a different story.

What’s more, this type of attack did not classify as a magic attack or a physical attack. It was simply controlling the water within the body; how was it possible to defend against this? The answer was obvious; it was able to ignore any defenses!

Chapter 19: Daring Imagination

Suo Jia was curled up in a ball under his blankets, timid and trembling. This idea had a problem, he had to be within 1 meter of his target, otherwise he couldn't control the water. His strength over water was still too low and one's ability to manipulate water would only get weaker as distance increased.

Just based on his initial tests, so long as the target was within 10 meters of Suo Jia, he could control his victim's movements by manipulating their blood. Within a distance of 1 meter, if the target had an open wound, then Suo Jia would be able to control the target's blood and make it spurt out from the wound!

Suo Jia hugged his arms tightly in fear, not daring to believe that all of this was real. Could such terrifying magic really exist in this world?

One must realize that even though Suo Jia only had relative control over blood while it was within 10 meters of him, and only gained absolute control while it was within 1 meter of him, however, how old is he right now? By the time he grew older, region of relative control would surely be 100 meters and the area of absolute control would truly increase to 10 meters. How frightening would this be?

If he was really able to achieve this, then as long as he was within 100 meters, Suo Jia could use his control over his enemy's blood to manipulate his enemy's movements; within 10 meters, he could force all the blood within his enemy's body to burst out from any type of wound! This....is probably the greatest fear of water magic that existed!

The only thing Suo Jia could not understand was, why hadn't others thought of such possibilities? Why has this magic never appeared? Such a phenomenon is abnormal!

Actually it wasn't the fact that Suo jia was the only one smart enough to think of it, plenty of others probably already have, it was more the fact that no one had ever reached the realm of perfection for control over water at the age of 8 was definitely an act that could not be achieved by

either his predecessors nor his successors. If this realm of control over water had never been achieved, then how could they possibly have been able to feel the traces of water within the impurities of bodily fluids in living organisms?

Suo Jia's thoughts were right; there had been people in the past that had thought of this as well. However to a water mage, directly freezing their opponent was easier. Once the body's blood is completely frozen, the person will inevitably die.

An ice mage's specialty is freezing; the result of using ice magic is the target being frozen. This is similar to the burns caused by the fire element. If this specialty was given up, then it would be equivalent to giving up the ice element's greatest existing strength.

What's more, all mages pursue controlling from a distance. Even though absolute control over blood could be achieved at a distance of 10 meters, in reality, as soon as you are within 20 meters, a warrior can activate his battle aura and dispatch the opponent on the spot. Thus, a distance of 10 meters is useless. To a normal person, having absolute control at 10 meters and realistic control at 100 meters is already an extreme.

There have been people who have had similar ideas in the past, however not a single one has ever carried it out. A water mage still has to study the art of freezing, learning to borrow power from nature. How can they compete with the natural world who they are borrowing their power from?

The Suo Jia who did not understand these circumstances had thought that he had discovered some type of unique secret. He felt both fear and excitement, curled up in his blankets thinking of various things. However he didn't know that once water mages passed the apprentice stage and became official mages, they never again learn from water magic books. Ice magics become the target of their lifelong struggles. Control over water is nowhere near as important as controlling the power of ice.

Feeling both excited and scared, Suo Jia was unable to fall asleep

throughout the whole night. Perhaps to any other water mage, even though this move was extremely powerful, it was like ‘sacrificing a watermelon for a sesame seed’. However to Suo Jia, who had always aimed to become a warrior, this type of powerful close combat skill that could ignore any type of defense was fatally enticing to him.

During the next few days, Suo Jia remained in an excited state. Whenever his spirit power was fully restored, he would continuously use his the Moisture Technique on his little pet. When his spirit power ran out, he would unconsciously draw out a water stream and start manipulating it. Even when he was in class, his hands would flip around, controlling the water.

Time passed very quickly. In the blink of an eye, it was Sunday again. Since Suo Jia’s mother no longer needed to continue going to work, the two of them did not leave too early. They waited until the sun had risen to leave their home and go to pray.

After they had finished praying, while Suo Jia was preparing to return home to retrieve the chairs and the white cloth with large words written on it, his mother had actually stopped him. Suo Jia did not understand the reason behind her actions, but she directly brought Suo Jia towards the direction of a grocery store instead.

Entering the grocery store, the woman warmly said: “Boss, have you finished making the tent I ordered? It’s already been 3 days since the arranged retrieval date!”

“Ok ok ok.... Give me a moment and I will go get it!” The grocery store boss replied to the woman.

Watching the conversation between his mother and the grocery store boss, Sou Jia’s forehead began to sweat. He urgently wanted to ask his mother about it but his mother stopped him with a glare.

Soon, the grocery store boss walked out carrying a small bundle. While walking, he smiled and said: “I specifically requested a well-known Earth Master to make it himself. You will definitely be satisfied with this Earth Tent!”

“Earth Tent!” Hearing the grocery store’s boss’ words, Suo Jia opened his mouth in shock. Even though Earth Masters didn’t have high statuses in society, their Earth Tents were extremely famous. In fact, they were a must for adventures.

However, Suo Jia also knew that the term “very famous” was a very exquisite term. What did “very famous mean”? At what point could something be deemed “very famous”? In reality, if this Earth Tent’s Earth Master was really “very famous”, then the grocery store’s boss could have directly stated the Earth Master’s name. Otherwise, why would he be called “famous”?

Note: famous -> well-known? (its what taffy used in the boss’ previous sentence). Youming can be translated by both but this is just a little constancy issue - Totokk

While Suo Jia was thinking about this, his mother pulled out some heavy coins from a leather pocket, and passed it to the grocery store boss: “Okay, I believe in your work. Here is 1000 gold coins, go ahead and count it.”

“1000 gold!” Even though Suo Jia had known that the Earth Tent would not be cheap, once he heard the value in person that the small bundle was actually worth 1000 gold, he could not help but be shocked.

Accepting the coin purse in the woman’s hands, the grocery store’s boss smiled and said: “I’m very grateful for your trust in us but....not only do you trust us, we also trust you, so this money does not need to be counted.”

Smiling at the grocery store’s boss, the woman nodded and retrieved the small bundle, and said to Suo Jia: “Suo Jia, Mother knows that you want to do some things. There are many things that Mother cannot help you with, so I bought this Earth Tent for you. I hope that your business will become larger and more famous.

“Mother!” Hearing his mother’s words, Suo Jia’s eyes quickly reddened. His mother’s support was reckless; if this business failed, then their daily lifestyle would soon be unable to be maintained.

The woman warmly said: "Let's go Suo Jia, Mother leisurely stays at home without much to do now; today I want to go experience with you, and help you as well!"

"Nn...." Hearing his mother's words, Suo Jia nodded his head eagerly. Even though his mother was ill, his business did not have much tiring work. He would just let his mother sit at the side and let some people talk with her; it would definitely be better than letting his mother hide away in the dark and chilly room.

Carrying the small bundle, Suo Jia and his mother once again arrived on the main street. This was the most bustling part of Holy Light, as well as the most appropriate area for running a business

Just as they arrived at the location, Suo Jia saw a large group of girls. The most eye-catching one was naturally the girl wearing red clothes, with fiery long hair standing the center of the group of girls. As his very first customer, she had left a very deep impression on him.

Seeing Suo Jia arrive, all the girls eyes lit up with a ferocious light. Flocking over and surrounding Sou Jia, they gave off the impression of eating someone, each one trying to outdo the other. This truly allowed Suo Jia to experience the horrors of women!

Chapter 20: Extreme Enticement

Facing the crowd of people surging forward, Suo Jia hurriedly extended his hands, and shouted: “Everyone please don’t be so disorganized, at least allow me to first put down my tent before anything else!”

All the women dispersed unwillingly upon hearing Suo Jia’s words. Suo Jia gave a grateful smile before he lightly placed the bundle on the ground and gently pulled at the bag’s ropes.

“Peng!” A muffled sound rang out and the small bundle suddenly went through an explosive transformation. After a slew of changes, an enormous 30 square foot wide milky-white tent appeared in front of everyone.

Sighing in praise, Suo Jia nodded his head. He really admired the Earth Master’s handiwork. This truly was like magic, to have such a small bundle actually turn into a large and beautiful tent.

Impatiently, Suo Jia parted the cloth and entered the tent. The floor of the tent was covered with an unknown animal skin that was both soft and warm. There were no chairs, tables, or decorations, making the inside exceptionally empty and wide. Suo Jia looked at his surroundings and nodded in satisfaction. Soon after, he notified his mother outside the entrance to start letting people in.

As soon as Suo Jia’s voice dropped, that red-haired girl rushed in first. The girl did not pay much attention to the tent’s layout, most likely because she had seen such a thing before. As soon as she came in through the entrance, she immediately began urging Suo Jia to hurry up and help her moisturize her skin.

Suo Jia was naturally satisfied with the girl’s demands. This was profitable in two ways; the girl would be able to receive her moisturizing sooner and Suo Jia would be able to earn money a bit faster. What did he have to lose?

After so much practice, especially the packed practice he did the past week, Suo Jia was so familiar with the Moisture Technique spell that it

naturally flowed without him thinking about it. The Moisture Technique was completed within seconds.

Very quickly, the strands of glowing mist gently appeared above the red-haired girl, similar to the autumn rain, and it sprayed down onto her hair and face.

Experiencing that refreshing feeling seeping through her from head to toe, the girl in red paused. Suddenly, she started moving again, and removed her clothing so that the sweet rain moisturized her white shoulder. The soft flower bud* had completely forgotten that at that moment, the one in front of her was a boy!

Of course, the girl had not been so bold to as to expose her chest area, only to the point where she had tore open her collar. However Suo Jia could already see all of her shoulders, and a very small portion of her soft, snow-white chest.

Only once the mist from the Moisture Technique had completely faded did the girl let out a refreshed sigh and slowly open her eyes. Only at this point did she suddenly realize that the cute little boy across from her was staring unblinkingly at her chest.

Charmingly sticking out her tongue, the girl began to wonder when she had become so bold. To have been so unconstrained that her chest had been exposed in front of a male, what else could happen next?

It was a good thing that Suo Jia was still young. He still could not count as a man, only as a little boy. Perhaps it was because of this fact that she did not really mind. If it was instead a matured male in front of her, she would never in her lifetime be so bold!

With her charming flushed face and fixed clothes, the girl slowly calmed down, thinking about the task her sisters entrusted to her. She raised her head towards Suo Jia: "Right, I'm the representative of our group. I'm here to invite you hoping you can become our personal moisturizer. I don't know if...."

"Personal moisturizer?" Upon hearing the girl's words, Suo Jia couldn't help but furrow his brows. He indeed wanted to seize this opportunity to

make money, but Suo Jia also had his own pride. He didn't want to become the personal moisturizer of anyone unless the person was his own mother! The current Suo Jia only had his mother in his mind.

Seeing Suo Jia furrowing his brows, the red clad girl eagerly told him: "Don't misunderstand, what I'm saying doesn't seem very respectful, but nonetheless, I wish that you could frequently put some of your time aside to use your moisturizing technique on us. You know, as fire elemental warriors, our skin is constantly being roasted. If we don't deal with that, even before hitting 30, we will already be full of wrinkles, and too ashamed to meet other people."

"This...." Hearing the red clad girl's words, Suo Jia furrowed his brows. Wanting him to be an personal moisturizer was impossible. However, Suo Jia was a very kindhearted person, and it was difficult for him to watch them in distress without caring.

Seeing Suo Jia's expression soften, the girl hurriedly continued: "We really want you to help us moisturize every day to maintain our moist skin the whole time. However we also can't just ask you as a favor to help us so..."

Hearing the red clad girl's words, Suo Jia lightly let out a breath. He already understood the red clad girl's meaning; they had invited him because they needed the moisturizing, and he was willing to help them anyways. Reasons are reasons, but saying them out loud sometimes made them seem less pleasing.

Most fire-type warriors are male. This is because apart from their greater innate abilities, the more important factor is that girls tend to stress their outer appearances more. Female fire-type warriors are constantly exposed to fire. Before the age of 30, the skin of their faces wrinkle up like old women. Like this, they don't have the face to meet anyone. The most powerful fire-type warriors are bound to have the roughest skin; these two traits are unfortunately correlated.

Shooting a doubtful look at the girl clad in red that was in front of him, Suo Jia said in a puzzled tone, "Looking at your clothes, you girls are also

from the Holy Light Academy. I don't understand, wasn't the fire-type section of the academy only accepting male warriors? When did they start recruiting female warriors? The innate talent of the fire attribute of females cannot compare at all to that of male warriors."

"Aha!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, the female charmingly formed a gun with her finger: "This is the general idea for ordinary fire-type warriors, but in reality, we are not ordinary at all. We are individuals who inherited merits from both our parents, dual fire and wind elements warriors!"

"Heavens! " Suo Jia looked full of admiration at the girl before her; he knew that the so-called dual elements was an extremely rare thing. It is said that the chances of being one is one person out of millions of people.

Use Suo Jia as an example. His father has an affinity for fire, and his mother has an affinity for water, however Suo Jia only has the water element. In reality, there is a chance for Suo Jia to be able to use both elements, but this chance is one out of millions!

However, Suo Jia was glad he did not have dual elements. If he did have both water and fire elements, then Suo Jia would most likely not have lived until today.

Perhaps by God's decree, in this world, only wind and fire elements can coexist inside of a person's body. Any other mixtures of elements are definitely unable to exist!

Holy Light Empire's population of a billion only had a lucky few that possessed both wind and fire elements. Even though the red clad girl's affinity with fire couldn't be compared to that of a male's, in terms of the wind element, she was stronger than any male.

The four major elements were water, earth, wind & fire. The elements in which males predominated were the earth and fire elements, with higher defense and power. Females were mostly of water and wind elements, with higher adaptability and speed. This is was an order decreed by the world!

Just think, being able to use the speed of wind to simultaneously use an explosive attack power, how can such people not be legends? The most

difficult fact to process was that only a female's body structure was compatible for the coexistence of both wind and fire elements. Males were unable to accomplish this.

Enviously looking at the red-haired girl, Suo Jia knew that even though this girl seemed cute and beautiful, as soon as she started fighting she would attack like a lunatic. Her speed would be fast like a whirlwind, and her attack power would be violent like a bomb. Their personalities were just like their elements, rushed and explosive. Just one small word that does not go well with them will cause them to strike and attack, enough to make any man witnessing the scene run away.

Swallowing his saliva with difficulty, Suo Jia sighed in admiration as he looked at the red clad girl. No wonder she had been the first to rush into the tent despite the fact that there were many people outside. With her speed and strength, who would be able to fight her?

"What do you think? Please help us. Even though we don't have that much money, we can still give you 10 gold every day. Also, if anyone dares to bully you, we will definitely come to your aid. What do you think?" Seeing Suo Jia's expression, the girl had evidently guessed Suo Jia's thoughts, as she asked him enticingly.

"Eh!" Stunned, Suo Jia glanced at the girl. He hesitated for a long time before finally asked tentatively, "Is it possible for you to tell me, exactly how many of you girls there are in total?"

"Nn..." Quickly counting for a bit, the red clad girl charmingly extended three of her fingers: "There aren't that many, only 35 of us sisters total."

"My God..." Hearing the red clad girl's words, Suo Jia weakly fell onto the ground. This counted as "not that many"? How many people would there have to be to count as "many"? He still had to go to school while his free time was extremely limited. That was definitely more work than he could possibly handle!

Chapter 21: Having Strength But Not Time

Looking at Suo Jia's weak expression, the girl wearing red clothes began to blush, and awkwardly said, "I understand; if I gave you ten gold everyday that would really be too little. However, we really cannot spend any more!"

With an uncomfortable expression, Suo Jia said with a wry smile, "When it comes to money, even if it was 10 gold coins per moisture instead of 10 gold coins per day, it would still be too little! The usual price is actually 100 gold coins for each Moisture Technique!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the girl's pretty face shook once, completely red in shame. Indeed... it was not that she did not know the actual prices, but even though they were all dual element talented girls, putting that aside their parents were actually all quite ordinary, not rich at all.

Seeing the girl's embarrassed expression, Suo Jia replied calmly, "One of the reasons I set up this tent is indeed to make some money, but even more so it is to thank the divine God for his blessings. If it was purely for money, there is no way I would do something like this, at least not for a single piece of gold!"

Suo Jia's words made her feel even more bashful. Ten pieces of gold each day really was an incomprehensible price, even to the point where even if Suo Jia changed his price right now to ten gold coins for everyone, there would still be many people lining up.

Although it was extremely embarrassing, for her future's sake, she had to earnestly ask Suo Jia. "We really do understand that this amount of money is too little. However, this amount has been saved from our own lunch money funds; we have no means of getting any more."

Pausing for a moment, the girl said in distress, "Wind and fire dual element warriors are very powerful, however they can only be females. The wind attribute allows the fire element to become more vigorous while at the same time... our skin is continuously ravaged. If you don't help us, then we will be done for. In the future, although we can become the

strongest warriors, at the same time we are bound to forever hide in our robes, not daring to show our true faces in front of others.”

Shaking his head with a sigh, Suo Jia knew that there were only two types of people that wrapped themselves in cloaks for the rest of their lives in this world: Necromancers and fire-wind dual element warriors!

Necromancers' cloaks are gray, and fire-wind dual element warriors' cloaks are red, with gold decorative designs on them. Even though it appears beautiful and mysterious, in reality if it wasn't for the fact that they refused to face others, no girl would ever be able to bear hiding her own beauty.

Perhaps to a male, appearances definitely do not matter. Even if his skin is a bit rougher, he would not really pay much mind to it. Perhaps it would even make him seem a bit manlier.

However to a female, appearances are her second life. To a female, not having a beautiful appearance is a complete disaster. Especially for females, being covered from head to toe with scarlet red cracks deep in their skin is even more frightening than a ghost.

Currently, the strength of the red clad girl and her group of sisters have already entered a pretty high realm. Thus, the results of the ravaging winds and fires on their skin can already clearly be seen.

Under the devastation caused by the fire-wind dual elements, the dual element warriors that have finally become partners with their elements have skin that deteriorates ten times faster than that of a normal person's, especially for those at the ages of 20-30. While gradually moving towards their peak strengths, their skin deteriorates to extreme limits. 30 year-old dual element warriors have creases throughout their whole bodies, and their faces are covered in deep gouges. Going by their appearances, they do not look any different from 100 year-old grannies.

Right now, after the world war has ended, the newest generation of dual element warriors such as the red clad girl and her fellow sisters are only around 18 years old. Even though they already have fixed strength, they have not yet reached their peak growth periods. Despite this, their skin

has already started to form spider web thin cracks. If they continue at this rate, creases and cracks will begin to appear in quick succession soon.

Looking at the red clad girl from a distance, you would think that she is extremely beautiful. However once you get slightly closer to her, you would not dare to look at her face.

Under the attacks of fire and wind, the warm color of the girl's oval shaped face was covered with small red lines, both dazzling and sparkling. Suo Jia knew that these lines would eventually become wrinkles, later on cracking open to reveal the tender flesh underneath. Once that time arrives, they will have to hide within their cloaks forever!

Historically, fire-wind dual element warriors have low assessments; their tempers were impatient and explosive, and the slightest offense aggravates them into killing people. In reality, this is directly related to the fact that they have to damage their appearances. For a girl as delicate as a flower and as precious as jade, seeing her sweet and charming appearance becoming creased and cracked bit by bit causes her to build up feelings of resentment. How can an ordinary person imagine this!

While thinking, Suo Jia sighed deeply. Seeing this, the red clad girl's heart raced. She knew that Suo Jia's decision would affect the second lives of all 35 of them. To them, their second lives were even more precious than their first!

Swallowing her saliva with difficulty, the girl said earnestly: "I know that the money we are giving you is too little, however we don't have any money. You should also know that the school gives us 1 gold as lunch money to us fire-wind warriors. Between the 35 of us, if we each save 30 silver every day, then we can only gather together about 10 gold. We also want to squeeze out a bit more, but if we don't eat our meals, there is no way we'd have enough energy to complete our frequent training!"

"Ai..." Sighing, Suo Jia helplessly looked at the red clad girl and replied: "I sympathize with your situation, however my own situation is not any better than yours. My mother and I live in a dark and damp room not even

20 square meters large, and my mother is also ill!”

Speaking up to that point, Suo Jia lifted his head and helplessly said: “I also really want to help you girls, but I need to attend classes. My time after school lets out is very limited and... a heart that takes pity on others will not help bring food to the table.”

Disappointed, the red clad girl’s eyes began to redden. She knew that her request was too naive. In this world, nobody has an easy life. Anyone could feel pity on others, but feelings of pity could not help bring food to the table. At times where Suo Jia could not even properly care for himself, he did not have the power to pity them.

Disappointingly handing over a gold coin, the red clad girl dejectedly walked out of the room. As soon as she left the tent, she was met directly with 35 pairs of awaiting eyes. Looking at her gathered sisters, the red clad girl sorrowfully shook her head.

Even though they didn’t have high hopes in the first place, after confirming that Suo Jia had not agreed, all the girls were unable to accept it. If their hopes had just never existed, then perhaps they would have been able to accept their fates. However when their hopes were right in front of them and yet they could only watch their wishes disappear in front of them, that type of disappointed feeling was really deadly!

During the next few minutes, Suo Jia was met with individual pleads over and over again, with all 35 of the girls rotating through to attempt again and again. However Suo Jia was powerless; it wasn’t that he didn’t want to help them but... he had to first solve his own problems before he could help solve theirs.

It is said that ‘poor people rely on their good virtue and their hard work, to surpass the world’s restrictions’, but the current Suo Jia couldn’t afford to take pity on other people. He had to guarantee that the life of both mother and son could be sustained, so Suo Jia absolutely couldn’t act out of only kindness. The amount of unfortunate people were, after all, countless in this world. Suo Jia wasn’t unwilling to help, but he could only help as far as his capabilities could extend, and the request of the red

clad girl already exceeded his current capabilities.

Suo Jia used his school hours every day to gain new knowledge about magic. After school ended, apart from practicing the Moisture Technique, Suo Jia would spend more time on experimenting and theorizing, trying to figure out the mysterious meanings of the water element.

Of course, taking away a bit of time every day to help the 35 girls moisturize their skin did not waste that much time. However, Suo Jia understood clearly that the most important thing was that once he helped these girls, how many times per year would he have to do it in the future? He would be unable to leave this burden, and the salary was too little. Suo Jia was unable to help care for them for the rest of their lives just from feelings of pity. Imagine, who would be willing to serve 35 people every day for decades practically for free? Pitying was fine, but one must act according to one's means!

Chapter 22: Visiting Troubles

Finally, all the girls had left in disappointment, allowing Suo Jia's ears peace and quiet. Seeing the last girl's desolate figure, Suo Jia wanted to call her back and accept their request. However his reasoning told him that he could not do so, at least not currently.

Female fire-wind warriors, also known as fire-wind goddesses, were the mightiest of warriors. This was due to the fact that they were able to utilize the speed of wind and the power of fire, making them the strongest existences in the world of warriors! However, a popular topic that was often brought up was the fact that the goddesses' strengths were exactly inversely proportional to their beauty. The uglier the fire-wind warrior, the stronger she was!

Historically, very few fire-wind warriors have ever married. Most of the few that did try to marry ended up having their marriages end in failure. To testify this fact, even though men did not necessarily care about a woman's ugly points, a face that was ugly enough to cause nightmares would make most men remain at a respectful distance.

While thinking about this, the tent's cloth was once again pulled apart. At the same time, a large, fat woman waddled her heavy body slowly inside. The originally spacious tent became much narrower with her entrance.

Sweeping her gaze up and down Suo Jia, the woman casually sat across from him. Her movements were graceful and charming, if she was slimmer, it would have been enough to make the eyes of countless men fall out.

Sadly, the only word that could describe this woman was "huge". She was really too obese. If her movements were paired together with a beauty's body, it would seem pretty. Paired with her body however only made people want to vomit; "fat and ugly" completely described her.

The good thing was that Suo Jia was not yet a man and he had no prejudice against any people or other such grievances. In Suo Jia's eyes,

the woman opposite of him was simply someone larger by many circles than a normal woman.

Seeing Suo Jia's undisturbed face, the woman showed an astonished expression, then said: "Perfect, my personal moisturizer has not been around recently. You, help me moisturize my skin instead!"

Nodding, Suo Jia did not bother to chatter, and gently extended his right index finger while his right arm rapidly moved. Very quickly...a complex Moisture Technique spell was completed, and a stream of fine mist thinly fell towards the direction of the fat woman.

Seeing that Suo Jia actually did not rely on a staff and yet could fluently activate magic, the fat woman's eyes flashed with a brilliant light. Even though it was just a small and insignificant Moisture Technique, Suo Jia was also still a small, unimportant eight year-old child!

The woman slightly closed her eyes, enjoying the refreshing feeling from the Moisture Technique. Up until now, this was her favorite sensation...

"What's with this place? Who set up a tent here?" Just as the Moisture Technique had formed a fine mist, a string of noisy sounds came from outside. His mother's panicked sound of understanding mixed in with the noise.

Suo Jia suddenly stood, and just as he was preparing to charge outside to check out the situation, the tent entrance was ripped open and two heavily armed city defense soldiers walked in with angry expressions. "Who gave you permission to set up a tent here? Has it been approved? Do you guys not know that randomly setting up a vendor stand can instigate a fine of 10,000 gold? If you can't afford the fine, you have to sit in jail, 1000 gold per year."

Hearing the city soldiers, Suo Jia's face immediately went white. Was there really a rule like that? He had never done business before, so he didn't know the rules yet. Dear God, a 10,000 gold fine! His profits hadn't reached that amount yet; if he was to be imprisoned, what would his mother do?

“Heng!” Just as Suo Jia was frightened to the point of freezing up, a cold snort rang out. The fat lady nodded her head at the two guards saying, “This vender booth was permitted by me to be set up. You have no business here, so hurry up and get out!”

Upon hearing the lady speak, the two soldiers were momentarily confused. But once they caught sight of her and her giant body, the two soldiers began to sweat all over their bodies. They didn’t even dare release a fart and obediently walked out.

Looking at the fat lady, Suo Jia did not know how he would voice his gratitude towards her. But he did know one thing for sure; if it were not for this lady, then he and his mother may have been thrown into prison. In any case, they was no way they would have been able to pay the 10,000 gold fine.

If they had been thrown into prison, then Suo Jia’s life would have been ruined. His mother’s plight would have taken a turn for the worse, as her body was still sick. In her current condition, if she was to sit in prison, then she would really die!

“Thank you, I really owe you my thanks!” Suo Jia enthusiastically thanked the fat lady and bowed over and over again.

“Hehe...” The lady shook her head, “It was not a large matter, all I had to do was lift a finger; you don’t have to take this so seriously. But if in the future, people still question you, then say you have the permission of Duke Wen Sha!”

“Duke Wen Sha!” After hearing the name from the fat lady, Suo Jia raised his eyebrows in doubt. Duke Wen Sha was very famous; even Suo Jia had heard of him. However, the Duke was a male, and not the fat lady in front of him.

After this thought, Suo Jia honestly said, “Could you please leave behind your name? No matter what, I, Suo Jia, will definitely repay you for today’s matter!”

“Oh!” She looked at Suo Jia with interest, but then shook her head. “I cannot think of anything that you could help me with. With my status

and capabilities, I do not need anyone to help me. Therefore, there isn't much of a need to leave my name. I helped you because I have taken a liking to you, since you didn't judge me on my fat appearance!"

The lady looked at her own body with disdain and shook her head with a small gasp, "This fat body of mine, it could kill someone with looks alone, but what can be done about it? Even if I drink only boiled water every day, my fat will only continue to grow continuously."

She stood up after talking. Even though her body weight was massive, her strength was clear and obvious to see. She still gave off the feeling of being nimble, which contradicted with the appearance of her body.

Waving her hand at Suo Jia, the lady waddled her fat self towards the entrance without looking back from the entrance. Seeing her large figure, Suo Jia felt like the woman was feeling some type of helpless despair. No matter what, a woman still has to care for her own appearance!

Suo Jia knew that although this lady might have had strength, high status and a lot of money, she was in all actuality rather pitiful. Otherwise, why couldn't she help herself and lose weight?

For as long as he could remember, Suo Jia's mother had taught him to not owe anyone anything, whether it was money or feelings. It has always been like this. Now that someone had aided him in such a large way, he could not simply pretend like it had never happened.

Although that lady was obese, to Suo Jia and his mother she was a life saver. Even though to the woman, helping Suo Jia was as simple as waving her hand, to Suo Jia, not only had he been exempt of a fine and being sent to jail, the most important part was that his source of income was protected. From today onwards, he was able to daringly set up his tent here, and not ever again be worried about people punishing him for it.

Suo Jia knew that he was unable to help her in terms of money, power, and status. Even if he could, it would be far in the future before it was possible.

However, Suo Jia still stubbornly believed that he could help the

woman. Suo Jia already knew what her greatest regret was; this meant his next task was to work hard to help solve her regret. She had provided new lives to both Suo Jia and his mother, so Suo Jia would provide her a completely new second life as well, one that did not require her to feel inferior because of her appearance!

Throughout the day, Suo Jia moisturized a total of about 240 customers. As soon as his spirit power ran out, he would rest and at the same time contemplate exactly what he could do to help that person lose weight. Only after nightfall did Suo Jia wrap up his tent and hurry on home.

Chapter 23: Weight Loss Treatment

Please read the author's note as we feel that it was important for understanding why the author did things the way he did.

[[Author's Note: Damn, you all are really too much. Everyone in the comment section are saying that I wasn't giving a single thought towards new and unique spells. People have said, "Use Divine Stream Pull," or, "Use Wave Crash", or "Use High Pressurized Water Flow". There were just so many suggestions, it really makes me happy. I'll definitely work hard; I'm not worthy of such creativity you all have given.

Other than that, I have to say, I am writing about a magician, not a warrior. In the future, he will not learn warrior battle skills either. However, as a mage, the future Suo Jia will solve the drawbacks of close combat, becoming a well-rounded mage that can attack from any distance.

Also, quite a few people made some suggestions, but I do not feel that these are problems. Suo Jia inherited his mother's water affinity. As for the power to manipulate the element, all individuals with water affinity have it, there's simply a difference in levels of control. Suo Jia's mother was a normal girl, not a mage. Even though she could control water, what does that mean? In reality, manipulating water is practiced through concentration and hard work; doesn't everyone know the importance of practicing since a young age? If you don't start young, you will never reach your dream of the highest realm. Although Suo Jia is not the only one that started practicing at a young age, his level of concentration and hard efforts are higher than any other's by 1000x. Thus, even though he's only 8, he has already achieved an incomparable level of water manipulation.

Let's use acrobatics as an example; if you start practicing at 3-5 years old, all the way until 8 years old, there are few people who can compete with you. In general, skill/technique related acrobatics have a lot of small kids performing it. Even though their ages are still young, the realm of achievement they have reached is already extremely high!

Suo Jia's power of control over water is based off of this idea. Facts have proven that 3-8 years old kids learn will eventually learn things without even thinking much about it, for example, your mother language. This point needs no further explanation, and people should also stop discussing this. This is not a BUG, it is something that is based off of scientific theories; it's just something that not everyone completely understands.

Also to those who say 8 year olds are not that mature, I can only say you guys just have not seen them before. There are many 8 year olds that have sold things at vendor booths before. Also, if we're talking about geniuses that enter college at 9 years old, wouldn't that be even harder to comprehend? In reality, the maturity of a child is not strange. My second sister is 9.5 years old and she makes meals for the whole family; wouldn't this be even harder to comprehend?

Of course, continuing onwards, there will be even more circumstances similar to this. However, I hope that people do not rush to criticize. Everyone will understand after waiting to see what will happen in the future. Everything has its reasons; it is definitely not impossible, and it is definitely persuasive enough to believe.

Also, the question of whether fire-wind warriors are poor or not, and why they don't just run away. What I want to say to this is that the world is dark, and I have not yet explained the shadows within. Just continue reading; I'm sure everyone will soon understand that it's not that they don't want to run away, it's that they can't. Their own lives and their family's lives, are all in their hands. Where would they run? In terms of rich/poor, I actually don't have anything to address; it was just how I had decided it to be. Their parents are normal people, so why can't they be poor? Fire-wind warriors are genetic mutations. I've already said that fire-wind warriors are a combination of both parents' strong points in one body: God's chosen favorites. Even if a wealthy family had a fire-wind warrior, they would just have to think of a way to not enter the school and that would be all, therefore this set up would not make any sense.

Also, the problem of being unable to understand books; Suo Jia is only 8

years old, so there is a possibility that he cannot understand them. However, is everyone completely sure that this also needs an explanation? Does everyone want me to write detailed nonsense about how because Suo Jia could not understand the words, he grabbed the book, found an old grandpa wearing glasses, then asked him to read it aloud? Is this necessary? If so, then I would be happy to death haha, this book would be too awesome to write.

Also, as to why other people have never looked for water mages to help recover female fire warriors, the question is who would be looking? The school? What kind of school would let a class freely volunteer to help another class, and help them for 10 years? Do such things happen?

Also, the fire-wind warriors are still tender. In the future, not being treated for a few hours would definitely make it impossible to mend their damages. Right now, everyone is still weak, so it's fine. but in the future, who would look after another for their whole life? Thus, the school has no right to force water mages to do anything. Even if the school did pressure them to, in reality this would not be allowed. Even if the water mages were willing to treat, in the future, when the strength of a fire-wind warrior grows stronger and the wounds get more serious, the treatment time required would increase. Imagine, would a fire-wind warrior have the time to accept such long treatments? Even if they wanted to, their instructors would not give them this time. The following chapters will explain this further. If everyone continues to read, they will begin to understand that it definitely has persuasiveness behind it.]]

*

The next morning, Suo Jia asked his mom to go to the market and pick up a few fresh Quack Chickens. His mom didn't think twice about the request, she was only thinking that Suo Jia was hungry and wanted to eat a few tender chickens for dinner. Money for them was no longer an issue, so if his wish was some poultry then she would do her best to accommodate his wish.

Quack chickens are magical pets with very tender and delicious high quality meat. They are bred in cold climates, so they have a thick layers

of fat under their skin to resist the cold. It was because of this fatty layer that Suo Jia wanted to eat a Quack Chicken.

Although chickens and humans were very different, their lipid layers were similar. Using this knowledge, Suo Jia devised a simple plan to experiment a bit. He wanted to see if he could get rid of the fat in a Quack Chicken without causing any harm to the chicken itself. If this was possible, then he would be able to develop something similar for use on humans.

Suo Jia didn't dare experiment on people for that would be far too inhumane. Quack Chickens, on the other hand, were a different story. Now, while Suo Jia was a kindhearted person, he was not so kind to have pity on a Quack Chicken.

That night, Suo Jia sat down on his bed with a simple stool in front of him. On it a tied up Quack Chicken rested. To prevent any potential cries of pain the chicken may utter, its mouth was firmly bound with rope. Also, from far away, people wouldn't see a Quack Chicken, but a fluffy dumpling instead!

Suo Jia silently lifted both hands. He then pressed both palms on the Quack Chicken. It began to tremble. How unfortunate it was, even though it wanted move, to have been bound with so much rope. Aside from shaking in its place, there was nothing else the poor chicken could do.

Putting all his concentration in feeling the Quack Chicken's inner water streams, Suo Jia soon realized that the water streams leading to the lipid layers weren't the body's main streams, but rather the very tiny ends of them. Even if these ends were cut off, there would be no effect on the water stream pathway itself!

If his target was a person, Suo Jia would not dare to be so excited, but since his current target was only a Quack chicken, he directly controlled the water streams from within the lipid layers to leave, with no hesitation at all.

Very quickly, the streams of blood within the lipid layers being controlled by Suo Jia were swept out. However, this was still incomplete;

Suo Jia could clearly feel that within the lipid layers, a large amount of water was still being contained!

Inhaling a deep breath, Suo Jia knew that whether or not all the water content within the lipid layers could be completely sucked out was the largest problem. Just pulling the blood away was useless; only by completely sucking out all the water content within the lipid layers would he achieve his goal!

Based on Suo Jia's feeling, the inside of the lipid layers was comprised of at least 20% water content, all of it freely floating around within the lipid layers. Actually removing this water content was really difficult.

However, since he was already testing it, no matter how difficult it was he had to continue on. Closing his eyes, Suo Jia concentrated on manipulating the water content in the lipid layers of the Quack chicken. With his efforts, finally stream by stream of fluids slowly permeated out of the lipid layers. Even though the process was very slow, and the amount extracted was very little, it definitely had an effect!

Along with the decreasing amount of water content, Suo Jia's senses discovered that the previously energetic lipid layers began to grow more sluggish. After a short while, once the contained water levels had decreased to a certain degree, the whole lipid layer suddenly began to wither. Moreover....the edges of the lipid layers had already begun to show signs of fading away.

Seeing this, Suo Jia could tell that the supply of fresh blood and nutrients had already been cut off by the act of Suo Jia's controlling magic. Adding on the decreasing amount of water content, the fat cells didn't have large enough power supplies. Basically, once that fat was cut off, besides necrosis, there was no other possible result.

To test if the lipid layers were completely dying and whether or not his actions had caused any harm to the target, Suo Jia did not stop and continued to cut off the supply of blood. Essentially, he had completely squeezed out every drop of water from the lipid layers.

After some time passed, finally... the piece of fat that was under Suo

Jia's control was finally completely withered by necrosis. At this very moment, beneath the Quack Chicken's skin, those fatty lipid layers attached to the flesh had completely disappeared.

Excitedly relaxing his hand, Suo Jia knew that it had progressed just like he had expected. As long as he could control the organism's water content then he could eradicate the lipid layers, making them thoroughly die out. The only thing he wasn't sure of was whether or not doing so would do so have any major effects?

Contemplating this for a while but unable to reach a conclusion, Suo Jia could only helplessly continue experimenting. He once again covered the Quack Chicken's body with his hands, and started to advance to the second lipid layer!

Currently, Suo Jia's abilities still had limits. He was only able to manipulate a palm-sized chunk of the lipid layer every time; any larger and he would be unable to control it. However in terms of weight loss, this amount was already enough.

After an entire night's worth of efforts, Suo Jia had made the originally plump Quack Chicken completely slim down. The layer of fat originally covering the surface of the Quack Chicken's body had now completely disappeared without a trace.

The second morning, to celebrate the verification of his ideas, Suo Jia decided to reward himself with good food, and told his mother to stew the successfully slimmed down Quack Chicken. Of course....although said to be a type of reward, the more important reason was that Suo Jia wanted to see with his own eyes the state of the slimmed down Quack Chicken's inner body.

Hearing Suo Jia's words, his mother of course did not question it, and killed and plucked the chicken. Soon after....only a healthy Quack Chicken filled with lean flesh appeared in front of Suo Jia's eyes!

"Ya!" Seeing the strange Quack Chicken in her hands, Suo Jia's mother shouted in surprise: "What is this? Is this a Quack Chicken? I remember that Quack Chickens should be round and plump. When had it changed

to become so sturdy; it's pretty much comparable to a buff man!"

"A buff man!" Hearing his mother's words, Suo Jia could not help but start sweating. Seeing the muscular, perfectly carved Quack Chicken, Suo Jia could even clearly see the muscles underneath the Quack Chicken's skin!

Failure, it was definitely a failure. Suo Jia knew, even though the weight loss had succeeded, the results were a failure. Imagine, a large beauty turning into a buff woman after a successful weight loss; how could this count as a success?

The rest of the day passed in silence. That night, Suo Jia tied the second Quack Chicken in front of his bed. Suo Jia knew that he could not completely cut off the lipid layers. It was essential for the lipid layers to continue existing; especially to a woman, without fat to cover her bodyline, she would not have smooth and sleek curves! A woman can be ugly due to fat, but a woman's beauty is also dependent on fat.

Now that he knew that the lipid layers had irreplaceable importance, the next thing to do was obvious. Once the lipid layers had withered to a certain degree at the critical point just before necrosis took over, the Moisture Technique had to be activated. This would maintain the shrunken lipid layers!

This concept was actually not difficult in theory, the main thing Suo Jia lacked was experience. If the moisturizing occurred too early, the effect would not be the most desired effect. Once that piece of fat entered necrosis, then it was game over. This was a procedure that definitely did not allow mistakes.

After another experiment, in order to insure the purpose was achieved, Suo Jia organized a plan to use as a model system. Instead of successfully completing the weight loss in one try, he would shrink a small bit of the lipid layer every time. Throughout the whole slimming process he would completely control it within the safe range, a range where Suo Jia was completely certain of the result.

After some general calculations, based off of his system, Suo Jia needed

to carry out six courses of the treatment on one Quack Chicken. After consecutively slimming down the Quack Chicken in six minor treatments, its contained fat would fall to the theoretical level. Once it had lost a large amount of its fat, he could still maintain the Quack Chicken's streaks of beauty.

Seeing the well-proportioned Quack Chicken with sensual curves in his mother's hands, Suo Jia finally smiled. For the past two months, Suo Jia had been eating Quack Chickens every day. During these past few months, a total of around 60 Quack Chickens were subjected to a battery of weight loss treatments before being eaten. Suo Jia had already formulated a very systematic process by now.

The first step was to cut off the lipid layer's blood supply, afterwards the water content within the lipid layers would be extracted out. Once the lipid layers had withered to a certain extent, he would activate the Moisture Technique to recover the lipid layer's vitality. Even though this would only allow a small amount of weight loss every time, consecutively repeating this process would cause a significant amount of fat loss!

Chapter 24: Dropping By For a Meeting

[[Author Note: Its a new day today with new ideas popping up like flowers blooming, haha, everybody has to remember to tell this crazy guy about their ideas.

Not only that, please do not hoard these books. if everyone hoarded it, then it will be a big old waste of time to everyone else, and we wouldn't want that would we, eh?

One of the commenters had a question. he asked why couldn't they just pass the thousand chicken down in the family like you pass dat bong. wouldn't the family become super doped up on dragon steroids and s*** after having a fam heirloom of a doragun?

Quick answer: no. families can't raise any big ol frost wyrms, since after the owners death, no one else can tame them big derpfaces since it becomes wild and will no longer be loyal to anyone other than their original owner. nope, it'll be all like, "nope, im outie. can't put me back behind bars, i'll just melt them like jet fuels melt steel bars." y'all just get a rampaging chicken throughout the city, it'd be like godzilla dos para china

Besides, even if there could be a second owner, how would the dragon continue to stay secure in the family. naw bro, they gon be bankrupt if they had to take care of that oversized chicken. can y'all imagine having lil tommy go feed the beast with a shuckle of corn? woops, tommy became din din. why would the other families not fear for their own lives. no, they'd go apeshit and kill it. even after a 1000 years, thousand dragons would be hard a'fuck to control mate. you'd need to tussle and throw down. they ain't steve irwin, they can't tussle.]]

*

In reality, Suo Jia had already ascertained the method to reduce one's fat over a month ago using the Quack Chicken. However, his future patient was not going to be a Quack Chicken, but a person; he had much more work to do.

While Suo Jia could ignore a Quack Chicken's feelings, he could not neglect a human being's. Because of this, Suo Jia had to perform additional tests find the least painful method. But this was not all, Suo Jia's method could only remove small portions of body fat and not all of it completely; otherwise, the patient could end up crippled or potentially die.

After two months of trials on both the Quack Chicken and eventually himself, Suo Jia finally developed the perfect Weight Loss Technique; it was ready to go public. The patient could still go about his/her normal life after the treatment. The average person only required three treatments to successfully lose weight. Those who were slightly heavier would at most need nine treatments. The treatments were painless, with absolutely no harmful side effects. At the very least, Suo Jia had yet to discover any.

Suo Jia had built up enough clinical experience through his various successful experiments, all he needed to do now was to find the fat woman and return the favor that he owed her with his own abilities.

However, the woman obviously did not think Suo Jia could help her in any way. At that time, her help had simply been a spur of the moment; she had not even left behind her name.

The only clue that the woman left Suo Jia was that her usage of Duke Wen Sha's name. The only thing he could do was visit Duke Wen Sha's household and see if he could find any information about this fat lady. Suo Jia believed that it wouldn't be too difficult to find a unique woman like her; anyone at the household would easily be able to recall such a figure.

Duke Wen Sha's household was very easy to find. If one did not know the way there, any random passerby could explain the exact directions to Duke Wen Sha's mansion. It should be pointed out that Duke When Sha was currently the lord of Holy Light City!

Suo Jia arrived in front of the lord's household without any problems. As soon as Suo Jia explained he was looking for a very large woman, the

guard let Suo Jia directly inside without question, especially since Suo Jia claimed he was her friend.

As he entered the Duke's Complex, Suo Jia's jaws dropped as he saw an area similar to the Prospect Garden. The complex was simply too large, luxurious and extravagant. Just based on the land value alone, it was obvious that only Duke Wen Sha could afford to live here. Even the mansion's bathroom was many times larger than Suo Jia's current house.

(TL: Prospect Garden: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Daguanyuan>)

Suo Jia walked to and fro within the garden, blaming himself for not asking for directions on where to find the lady. But Suo Jia could not be blamed; who would have realized that the residence would be large to the point where one could get lost inside of it!

"You should just go, I'm not worth your time. I'm no longer the person who I once was. Just forget about me!" While walking along the wall of a building, Suo Jia could hear a slightly familiar voice speaking in a tone of grief.

Hearing this voice, Suo Jia could not help but get excited. Just as he was about to find the source of the voice, a heartbroken male replied saying: "No! Wen Ya, you cannot do this to me. You know that I love you!"

"Your Highness Fourth Prince, please forget everything between us that had happened in the past. My current form disgusts even myself. With your position and status, you can obtain any girl you want!" The distressed girl said in despair.

Hearing these words, Suo Jia stopped walking. It was clear that although he did not purposely eavesdrop, it was too late, as he had already done so. At that moment, Suo Jia did not know what the best way to announce his presence was; perhaps secretly leaving was better.

While Suo Jia was hesitating, the so-called Fourth Prince cried out in grief: "Wen Ya! Could it be that you don't know? My heart is reserved for you alone. From when we were young all the way until now, we have always been close friends. Even if your current appearance have changed, I don't care. I just want to be with you for the rest of my life. No matter

what you look like, I won't mind it at all!"

"Aaaa...." With a desolate laugh, the grieved female voice said: "I'm grateful for your friendship, but....even if you don't mind, I do. There is no way I can let my ugly self appear in front of you, you know? Even I can't bear to see my own sluggish and fat body. So for both your sake and mine, please let it go...."

Hearing these words, Suo Jia finally recalled that the voice belonged to the large woman who had helped him that day. However....who was she was talking to? The large woman called him the Fourth Prince; was he perhaps the Holy Light Empire's Fourth Prince?

In terms of the legendary myths of love, Suo Jia had heard about them from his mother's stories. The stories of princes and the princesses, no matter from what world, were always classy and depressing scenes.

You can ridicule such stories all you want, but you cannot deny that such situations have occurred before and will continue to exist. Even though real love is hard to find, it still exists in the world.

During Suo Jia's lament, the Fourth Prince's voice continued: "No, I will not give up. If I cannot be together with you, even sitting on top of the world would no longer have any meaning. Everything I experienced so far has only been wonderful because you shared it with me. If I lose you, there is no purpose in living."

Speaking up to this point, the Fourth Prince stamped his feet and said firmly: "I don't care anymore. Tomorrow when I return to the imperial capital, I'm going to tell my father that I want you to wed me and become my wife. Even if I have to lose my right to the throne, I will not regret it!" Following these words, the sounds of rushed footsteps gradually grew fainter. Despite Wen Ya's cries, the steps did not stop.

Shaking his head in admiration, Suo Jia knew that this Fourth Prince had already made up his mind. Men tend to act like this; once they make their decisions, nothing can stop their progression.

Wen Ya sat down in despair in front of the window. She deeply loved the Fourth Prince, but her appearance made it so that they could not walk

together. No matter what country they were in, as long as she became the Queen, she would definitely be ridiculed by the entire population.

Wen Ya had rejected the Fourth Prince for his sake. Once they were married, he would have to give up his rights to the throne. Wen Ya did not desire the Fourth Prince to sacrifice so much for her.

Of course, her body being so ugly and fat was the main purpose for her rejection. Her current state made even herself feel disgusted. How could she bear to let the good and honest Fourth Prince face her sluggish and ugly self every day?

Wen Ya and the Fourth Prince had grown up together. The feelings between the two were so deep that words were not enough to describe them. Wen Ya would marry nobody but the Fourth Prince, and the Fourth Prince would marry nobody but Wen Ya. However the two of them had never imagined that Wen Ya's originally mesmerizing beauty would inflate like a balloon after she fell seriously ill for a period of time. Her past beauty would never resurface; it must be known that the past Wen Ya was Holy Light City's number one beauty!

Lightly picking up the dagger on the table, Wen Ya shakingly held up the chilled blade of the dagger towards her throat. Since things had reached this stage, she no longer wanted to continue living. For her sake, the Fourth Prince would lose his rights to the throne. For her sake, the Fourth Prince would suffer everyone's ridicule. For her sake, the whole royal family would lose face. Even she herself was unable to endure her current imbecilic appearance. If she had to go through this for the rest of her life, she might as well end her life early. Only by dying would she be able to dispel the Fourth Prince's foolish ideas.

The tears of grief fell down her round face. Wen Ya shook as she held the dagger, and resolutely thrust it towards her throat. This whole scene was seen by Suo Jia just as he had turned around the corner of the wall!

"Stop!" Shouting loudly, Suo Jia unconsciously activated his water controlling magic. His hard work within these past two months were finally reciprocated. The largest merit he gained from practicing the

Weight Loss Technique was not being able to help others lose weight. His constant practice the last two months made Suo Jia's ability to control water reach a realm where he was able to control it down to the finest detail. Even calling him the world's current number one water manipulating individual would not be an exaggeration.

The most fortunate thing was that Suo Jia's distance from Wen Ya was a bit less than 10 meters, still within his relative control radius. Because of this, he was able to control Wen Ya's movements. That ice-cold dagger stopped dangerously against Wen Ya's throat. The sharp dagger's blade already pierced her skin, and fresh red blood was leaking out of her throat.

"Hu...." Faintly exhaling, Suo Jia patted his own chest: "You were fine before, why do you want to die? It's a good thing that I appeared in time. Otherwise, I would have lost you, my friend!"

Chapter 25: I Am Coming to Help You

“Haha...” With a sad smile, Wen Ya sorrowfully said, “Even though you managed to save me, so what? For one in the depths of sorrow and ready to commit suicide, you can save but once, twice maybe. You cannot save them for their entire life.”

Suo Jia furrowed his eyebrows in confusion, and replied without understanding, “Why do you need to die? Isn’t it better to be alive? If you pass away, you will never be able to see your mother again. Won’t she be lonely in this world?”

Wen Ya couldn’t help but tremble at Suo Jia’s words, streams of tears pouring down her face. She shook her head and said, “I am an insult as a daughter, a failure. I cannot continue to live like this.”

Suo Jia, seeing Wen Ya distressed and heartbroken, hesitantly added, “I don’t understand the situation all too well. What exactly has made you want to stop living? Can you talk to me about it?”

Slightly glancing over at Suo Jia, pulled out a handkerchief and wiped at the tears on her face. She replied emotionlessly, “You really can’t tell by looking can you? This person in front of you is as fat and stupid as a pig, and yet she is the Holy Light City Fourth Prince’s most beloved. Because of that, she is shame not only to the royal family, but to all the city’s residents as well!”

The woman looked with disgust at the rings and rings of fat encircling her body. With a downtrodden look, she said, “I hate the way I am right now. I just can’t live life being so fat and so stupid!”

The woman’s eyes revealed a perplexed expression, stroking her face while dreaming about the past. “There was a time, long ago, when I was beautiful. Really, you could say I was extremely proud of my beauty. Heh! I was the most beautiful woman, whomever you asked would agree.

The woman’s expression suddenly changed: “However, ever since I fell victim to that illness, my beauty gradually left me. If I was born ugly, perhaps I would be able to tolerate it. However, I was so beautiful in the

past. How can I accept the my current obese self?”

Listening to the woman’s words, Suo Jia excitedly laughed. The reason why Wen Ya no longer wanted to continue living was revealed. There were two main issues. The first was that if she continued to live, she would be harming the future prospects of the Fourth Prince. Secondly, she could not stand her own ugly appearance and did not have the courage to continue living. Although there were two different reasons, they all stemmed from the same problem – obesity!

Arriving at this conclusion, Suo Jia first gently removed the dagger from Wen Ya’s hands and placed it back on the table. Afterwards, he immediately casted a Moisture Technique to treat the small injury on Wen Ya’s neck. Under the effect of the Moisture Technique, the scar from the wound visibly faded. With just a bit of effort, it completely disappeared.

Nodding with satisfaction, Suo Jia brought over a chair and sat across from Wen Ya. With a smile on his face, he said, “The reason why you no longer want to live is only that you are obese right? Then if there was someone who was able to help you lose weight and restore your former beauty, would you still be depressed?”

Dispirited and downcast, Wen Ya bitterly smiled at Suo Jia and said, “I have already accepted the reality of the situation and I have tried by best as well. Unfortunately, it turned out however that it is impossible for me to slim down.”

“Haha...” Smiling contently, Suo Jia proudly said, “You did a huge favor for me the last time we met on the streets. You saved our lives and at that time I decided that I must return your kindness!”

The woman replied nonchalantly, “Just by talking to me and sitting by my side in my last few moments has already made my death a bit more peaceful. Don’t say anything else and stay by my side quietly as I walk through the last part of life!”

After listening to Wen Ya’s words, Suo Jia smiled sweetly and continued, “At that time, I was thinking that I could not help you much in regards to

money, status, or power. You did not require any of those. The only wish you had was to get rid of that layer of fat!”

“Huh?” Unconvincingly looking at Suo Jia, the woman began to wonder if he was mentally challenged.

Suo Jia finally lifted his head and turned to face Wen Ya. “Our family was allowed a second chance at life with your help. Because of that, I want to use my abilities to grant you a second life as well, allow me to help you lose weight!”

“What!” Faced with Suo Jia’s request, the pale Wen Ya finally stood up and said while trembling, “Did you just say you would help me lose weight? What can an eight year-old like you do? Do you know how many experts and scholars I have searched for? You actually have the vain hope of helping me lose weight! Let me tell you something, if you cannot really do something, then at least do not raise other’s hopes. If you do, the pain of losing that hope is something beyond your imagination. Please don’t casually say the words ‘help you lose weight’!”

Confidently looking at Wen Ya, Suo Jia said unflustered, “Either way, you have decided that you’ve lived enough. This one time, just put your faith in me! If I really cannot help you lose weight, then you can commit suicide. However, just think about it, if I really did succeed your life in the future would be so beautiful!”

After hearing Suo Jia’s words, Wen Ya’s eyes had a bewildered look. It was true, if she was able to successfully lose weight and return to her former beauty, then she could be together with the Fourth Prince! Never again would people ridicule or be disgusted by her.

Seeing that he had already persuaded Wen Ya, Suo Jia lifted one of his fingers and said, “Give me a chance, even once is enough. I will use actions to prove that my methods work and that they can help you!”

After thinking about it for a long time, Wen Ya could not resist such temptations. After a firm nod, she said resolutely, “Alright, I’ll believe in you this one time then, what should I do? Is it long-distance running or weightlifting?”

“Haha.” Shaking his head with a slight smile, Suo Jia faintly laughed, “You don’t have to do a thing. Just sitting there is enough, leave everything else to me.”

“What? Just sitting is enough?” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Wen Ya immediately revealed a confused look. Previously, she had utilized a multitude of different methods to try and lose weight, however none of them had ever simply required her to sit there!

However, even though she was confused, she knew from past experiences that it did not matter if she did not understand everything. As long as she followed instructions, then it was fine. There were many things that did not need to be understood in life.

Looking over Wen Ya a couple of times, in order to appear more convincing, Suo Jia requested for Wen Ya to place her two hands in front of him. Although she did not know what Suo Jia was going to do, she obediently stretched out her two hands in front of him.

Looking at Wen Ya’s two hands, as well as her wrists covered in fat, Suo Jia said plainly, “Think about this for a second, which of your wrists do you feel is thicker?”

“Huh?” Wen Ya looked at her two hands with a puzzled expression. After a long time, she laughed bitterly while shaking her head. “Sorry, I can’t tell the difference, they are about the same thickness.”

Nodding his head, Suo Jia signaled for Wen Ya to place her right hand in front of him. Soon after, Suo Jia reached out his own hands to surround Wen Ya’s right hand. He then closed his eyes and began to activate his control.

After two months of practice, the Weight Loss Technique was simply a walk in the park for Suo Jia. He carried out his work in several parts, with each part being very small. Because of this, it was extremely safe and did not cause any pain.

Of course it was not something that caused no feeling at all. A mild ticking feeling could be felt deep within the skin. She looked confusingly at her wrist, only feeling tingly and itchy. With only a bit of effort, layers

and layers of thin sweat leaked out of the pores, After ten minutes, Suo Jia finally opened his eyes. Although he was already very familiar with the Weight Loss Technique, this was the first time he had used it on a person other than himself. If he said he wasn't nervous then he would be lying.

Wiping away the copious amounts of sweat from his brow with a handkerchief, Suo Jia said with confidence, "Okay Miss Wen Ya, now look at your two wrists and hands. Are they still the same thickness?" Hearing Suo Jia's words, the woman doubtfully brought her two hands in front of her face.

"Ya!" A ghost-like screech sounded, ringing throughout the walls of the entire residence. The sound traveled extremely far, causing a chain of echoes. All the guards within the vicinity heard the sound and immediately rushed towards the direction of the source.

When the guards broke through the doors to enter, they did not see the enemy that they were expecting. The multitude of guards only saw the Duke Wen Sha's precious daughter – Miss Wen Ya, looking in terror at her hands, as if a flower had suddenly sprouted out from them.

Chapter 26: Successful Weight Loss

Finally, the sounds of the guards roused the dazed Wen Ya, and she impatiently waved her hand. Once all the guards had been driven out, Wen Ya turned to Suo Jia, her whole body trembling, and said to him incredulously: "Heavens! How did you do this? In such a little amount of time, without me doing anything at all, I got slimmer by so much! This isn't a dream right?"

Lightly tucking the handkerchief into his pocket, Suo Jia smiled slightly and said: "Since the last time you helped me, I've been constantly mulling over ways to strip away your lipid layers. After repeated analysis, research, and experiments, I finally found the method to quickly lose fat!"

Looking at Wen Ya with confidence, Suo Jia said proudly: "I have already tested this method on 60 Quack Chickens, as well as on my own body. Not only is it painless, it also has no negative effects. The most miraculous part is that I can use my control over the lipid layers' thicknesses to change a person's appearance, as long as the bone structure remains unchanged. I believe that I can return you to your previous elegant manner!"

"Heavens!" Seeing everything that she had previously only dreamed of suddenly becoming reality, Wen Ya's entire body was trembling with excitement. She grabbed Suo Jia's hand and urged: "Then what are you still waiting for? Hurry! Hurry up and help me lose weight!"

Slightly smiling, Suo Jia nodded and warmly said: "The reason I came here to search for you was to help you lose weight. Since you've already agreed to let me help you, you should first go and prepare yourself."

"Prepare myself?" Hearing Suo Jia's words, Wen Ya furrowed her eyebrows in confusion.

Seeing Wen Ya's puzzled expression, Suo Jia patiently explained: "The clothes you are wearing are too thick and they will affect my ability to perceive the water content within your lipid layers."

"Ah ga!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, Wen Ya could not help but cry out:

“God, you’re not saying that you want me to completely strip before you help me lose weight are you? If that is the case, I definitely want to die right now, and I don’t want you to help me lose weight either.”

Awkwardly scratching his head, Suo Jia said embarrassingly: “It’s not necessary to completely strip, but you still have to change to a flimsier set of clothes. Moreover...if you wear too much, then I have no way of determining how much more fat is left from your outer appearance. Eliminating too little is fine, but if I eliminate too much, wouldn’t that be bad?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s explanations, Wen Ya did not say much more, and directly went into an inner room. Soon after, she had changed to a set of flimsy, skin-tight clothes and walked out: “How is this? Are the clothes I’m wearing okay?”

Suo Jia glanced at Wen Ya’s blue, skin-tight clothes and nodded with certainty, replying, “There’s no problem; as long as I am able to see the outline of your body shape, it’s fine. The perception I was talking about was my perception of water. It doesn’t matter if it’s the water within your body or the water within your clothes, my perceptions of them are the same. I am unable to completely separate the two from each other.”

As it was now, if there was only a flimsy skin-like layer of clothes, then it would not pose any problem. It could be regarded as Wen Ya’s skin. Whether it was perception or being able to determine the status of the target at any given moment, none were currently able to hinder the process of losing weight.

Instructing Wen Ya to lie down on the bed, Suo Jia moved a chair over and sat in front of the bed. He closed his eyes, extended his hands, and once he was about 10 cm away from her body, he began to gesture in the empty space.

In reality, as long as he was within a meter (the radius within his absolute control), Suo Jia could have absolute control over this water. However....if he wanted to pay close attention to detail, then the closer he was, the lower the chances of making any errors. This made the process

much more precise.

Seeing Suo Jia's small and tender hands swaying in front of her own body, even though Wen Ya was currently ugly and fat, no matter what, she had once been beautiful. She was still a girl, and the feeling of shyness was something that could not be avoided.

Closing her eyes with embarrassment, Wen Ya could no longer continue watching. However, even though her eyes were closed, there was still an itchy feeling that could not be resisted. Accompanying Suo Jia's magic-filled hands was a numbing and itchy feeling that gave Wen Ya a weird feeling, almost making Wen Ya **.

(TL: ** is in the raws)

Of course, Wen Ya would not really ** for no good reason. Even though that feeling was extremely strong, Wen Ya continued to tightly shut her mouth, without letting a single sound escape. The whole room had become silent without any trace of sound.

The room was completely quiet. After some time passed, finally...Suo Jia tiredly opened his eyes. Even though controlling water was not an active magic and did not require spirit power or spell arrays, the process of squeezing water out of the lipid layers still required a lot of mental concentration. After such a long time had passed, Suo Jia was beyond exhausted.

Fortunately however, despite the fact that he could barely open his tired eyes, Suo Jia had finally completed his first weight loss task, just as he had planned. From top to bottom, and front to back, Suo Jia had completely squeezed out the fat from all over Wen Ya's body.

When Wen Ya received Suo Jia's indication to open her eyes, she only felt that her body was completely moist and sticky. Looking at her body, she realized that her body was completely covered with layers of yellow fluids. The bedding underneath her had also become soaked.

All girls love to be clean, regardless of whether it is a fat girl or a slim girl. Suddenly seeing herself so dirty, Wen Ya could not help but cry out in shock, and quickly run out of the room, making a beeline towards the

baths. If her current state was seen by anyone else, then filthy would be added to her reputation, on top of being ugly and fat. If this happened, she would rather die.

Just when Suo Jia was about to collapse on the chair unconsciously, a beauty with a voluptuous figure was within the luxurious baths of the residence belonging to the Lord of the city. She blankly stared in the mirror at the gorgeous curves on her well-developed body!

Was she still fat? No! Wen Ya could definitely say that the current her could no longer be described as fat. The more accurate words would be well-developed and blossoming!

First, her curves. The previous Wen Ya had the figure of an obese roly-poly doll, with several layers of fat on her stomach and thighs. As a whole, she looked both fat and sluggish, making anyone who saw her reel in disgust.

However the current her was different. Her beautiful smooth and round face coupled with a large and flourishing chest, together with her slim waist, all outlined the main curves of a charming woman beautifully! Adding the smooth and round bottom below her waist, she would no doubt attract many men's desires.

Seeing her reflection in the mirror, Wen Ya was completely dumbfounded. The current her was already so beautiful to the point where she was enchanted by herself. This was only her first weight loss and she had already changed to a completely different person. If she followed Suo Jia's words and completed nine rounds of the Weight Loss Technique, how much more would she change?

Wen Ya put on her clothes excitedly. The originally perfectly fitting clothes now very loosely drooped off of her body after putting them on. Looking at her own large clothes, Wen Ya practically began to question how she had previously been able to wear them. Based on current standards, this set of clothes could fit at least two of the current her inside!

Perhaps there were people who thought this was extremely

exaggerated, but in reality, it was for safety purposes that caused Suo Jia to split the weight loss into nine treatments. The first treatment was really the easiest, as well as the one that caused the most change.

To Suo Jia, the first task was like sculptor carving. First, he had to approximate a silhouette and eliminate all of the unnecessary fat. The first round of the Weight Loss Technique did not have any dangerous aspects.

The real danger appeared during the final treatments where extreme care and precision was needed. If his control varied by the slightest bit, then the whole piece of fat could die off. For now, in Suo Jia's eyes, as long as he prevented lipid layer from decaying, then there would definitely not be any risk of danger.

Turning her body over and over, Wen Ya found that she couldn't stop looking at herself. She discovered that she had actually fallen in love with her reflection in the mirror; although her current appearance was still far from perfect, reaching this degree was sufficient to make even God jealous.

Her beautiful face, full chest, slim waist, charming bottom, and perfectly straight and slim legs....all her previous sources of pride had returned. Even more, she now had a more mature and rich ambience. Her whole body emitted an alluring scent...

A few hours earlier, Wen Ya had lost all faith in this world, lost all hope, and only wanted to commit suicide. But only a few hours later, Wen Ya felt that the whole world was smiling at her, and that all of the flowers in the world were now blossoming around her.

"This won't do! I absolutely have to thank that boy properly. He gave the whole world to me!" Wen Ya finally returned to her senses, and thought of her benefactor.

However, once Wen Ya put on some clothes and returned to the room, Suo Jia was already gone. The only thing left on the table was a piece of paper: "Respected Miss Wen Ya, I am very glad to have been able to help you. I have finally had the chance to return the favor I owed you!"

Looking at the sheet of paper in her hand, Wen Ya gently smiled: “This person just helped me so much. It seems that the heavens really does reward good deeds, and punishes bad deeds!”

Chapter 27: The Achieved Objective

Over the course of the month, Suo Jia completed the nine sequences of the body slimming treatment. Gently wiping the sweat off of his forehead, he said in satisfaction, “Okay Miss Wen Ya, look at yourself in the mirror now; you might shock the people you meet.”

Slowly opening her eyes, Wen Ya carefully sat up on the bed. She walked towards the mirror on the opposite side of the room and looked at the person within the mirror. Wen Ya abruptly covered her mouth, big drops of tears cascading from her eyes.

Seeing the crying Wen Ya, Suo Jia said with a bitter smile, “The only flaw of my Weight Loss Technique is that it’s too perfect. The women that I use my Weight Loss Technique on become natural and perfect; even the pickiest people would not be able to find a single flaw!”

Nodding her head with effort, Wen Ya choked with emotion as tears flew down her face, and could not make a single sound. Seeing the divine-class beauty reflected within the mirror with soft body curves throughout her entire body, she really could not find a single blemish.

Silently turning around, Wen Ya grabbed Suo Jia to hug him into her embrace. After a bit over a month’s interactions, Wen Ya had already thought of the kindhearted Suo Jia as her own little brother. This embrace did not include any elements of **.

Lightly letting go of Suo Jia, Wen Ya’s tears were overflowing, yet she smiled and said: “Please let me properly thank you! Please say it, as long as I can do it, I will definitely agree. Money, status, power, which of these do you want?”

Seeing the how moved Wen Ya was, Suo Jia firmly shook his head. “No! Miss Wen Ya, the only reason I did this was only because I wanted to return the favor. Right now, we are even, and neither of us owe each other anything anymore. Therefore, I will not take anything from you!”

Even though Wen Ya had already anticipated Suo Jia’s reply, she still showed an expression of admiration. A child as sincere and kindhearted

as Suo Jia was really too rare nowadays. Even adults were rarely so loyal and righteous.

Seeing how serious Suo Jia was, Wen Ya knew that he was currently in a difficult situation. Despite his circumstances, however, he still refused to accept her help. This gave Wen Ya a feeling of admiration and a slight heartache, making her even more determined to help Suo Jia.

Rolling her eyes slightly, Wen Ya laughed: "Suo Jia, in other words, since I gave you and your mother new lives and now you also gave me a new life, the favors between us are completely even right?"

Slightly nodding, Suo Jia replied, "Right. If I had been arrested and incarcerated, Mother would definitely not have lived much longer. I owed you a life, and I have now returned it to you!"

Nodding her head in agreement, Wen Ya continued. "I can't help but feel that you are on the losing end, but if you continue to think that way, then I will not continue to argue."

While speaking, Wen Ya turned to the mirror. While enjoying her beautiful appearance and body, she casually said, "Suo Jia, how long do you think my beauty can be maintained? Do you think it's possible that I'll grow fat again?"

"This..." Faced with Wen Ya's question, Suo Jia was suddenly unable to answer. Wen Ya's fat was very strange; it had an extremely fast growth speed. Even though she had been restored to her former glory, it still had to be restored once a year. If not, Wen Ya would become fat again, as there would be nothing preventing it from happening again.

While thinking, Suo Jia replied with certainty: "If possible, it's best to check it monthly. If that's inconvenient, then you will need to be restored at least once a year. Otherwise..." Suo Jia stopped mid-sentence, however the meaning behind his words were already clearly expressed.

Originally, Wen Ya had only wanted to find a way to repay Suo Jia. She had not expected that casually asking a question would actually bring up such a situation. With a pale face, she looked at Suo Jia, and said while trembling, "Heavens! How could this be!"

Faced with Wen Ya's question, Suo Jia bitterly laughed. "There's no alternative, your lipid layers grow extremely quickly. If you do not experience a restoration after a long period of time, you will very quickly grow fat again. This is a problem that nobody can solve."

Looking at her beautiful appearance in the mirror with dread, Wen Ya could not bear returning to her imbecilic, fat appearance. If that really happened, then she would rather die.

A woman's confidence originates from her appearance. This statement cannot be said to be an absolute truth, but it can be applied to a majority of the cases. After having such a beautiful appearance, Wen Ya could no longer return to her previous days of having an imbecilic and obese appearance.

Trembling as she looked at Suo Jia, Wen Ya suddenly realized the problem was no longer how she could repay him. In reality, right now she should be toiling over how to get Suo Jia to serve her for the rest of her life so that he could help her maintain her appearance. If Suo Jia ignored her, she would be completely doomed!

While thinking this, Wen Ya eagerly said: "Suo Jia, on account of us being friends, help me. That is what is called helping a person to the end. You can't just shake me off and ignore me after giving me such a beautiful world."

Suo Jia said without paying much mind to Wen Ya's request, "No problem. Even if you did not request this of me, I would not have just left like that. From now on, I will help you touch up once a month and I will make sure you maintain this beautiful appearance for the rest of your life."

Wen Ya had not expected that Suo Jia would so easily agree. She knew that Suo Jia could demand an exorbitant price for continuing the constant maintenance of her beauty; she would have been willing to pay any price. However, Suo Jia did not want anything in return. This naturally made Wen Ya feel that she really owed Suo Jia way too much.

Originally, it was only because she was in a good mood that she had

casually said a word in Suo Jia's defense. Now she felt that she had really received too much; moreover, in the unboundless future she would constantly remain in deficit. This was a horrible feeling!

After mulling over this for a long period of time, Wen Ya looked at Suo Jia with a serious expression. "Since you so happily agreed to help me, then I cannot be narrow-minded. I will not give you money, power, status, or anything of like. I believe that with your own ability, you will have the opportunity to become a Grand Duke, or even a Prince!"

"Nn!" Hearing Wen Ya's words, Suo Jia's eyes lit up with sharp radiance. "That's right, there are many things that lose meaning when received from another person. Only by using your own ability to struggle for it will it be most precious. A person cannot spend his whole life looking at only results, the process is the most important!"

Looking at Suo Jia with admiration, Wen Ya nodded. "Therefore, Sister will not give you these things. How about this, I have a villa under my name in the city. I'll just give it to you!"

After hearing Wen Ya's words, Suo Jia was prepared to decline her offer. Just then, Wen Ya interrupted him. "Don't reject me. Even if you don't consider it for your own sake, shouldn't you consider it for your mother's sake? Her body is not well, and is unable to live in that narrow, dark, damp, and chilly house for long!"

Hearing Wen Ya's words, Suo Jia slowly closed his mouth. It was true. He could endure any amount of suffering with no problem, but it was unacceptable for him to let his mother suffer continuously with him.

Looking at Suo Jia with appreciation, Wen Ya smiled and continued. "Tomorrow, I will bring you to the villa. Moreover, I'll invite the best doctors to help look at your mother's illness!"

"Thank you, thank you so much...." Seeing Wen Ya acting for his sake, Suo Jia was moved.

Seeing the teary Suo Jia, Wen Ya's heart went warm. If she really had a younger brother like him, it would have been nice. However, even though Suo Jia was not her real brother, her feelings towards Suo Jia were even

more intimate than those towards a brother related to her by blood.

Gently embracing Suo Jia, Wen Ya could not help but think of how her father had once told her that in this world, everything was exchanged. Friends, a wife and children, even a relative's feelings, are all the same; if you treat someone well, then the other person will treat you well in return.

Wen Ya's moment of kindness had been exchanged for Suo Jia's generous reciprocation, which was once again exchanged for Wen Ya's friendship. Even though these exchanges were not necessarily equivalent to each other, why was it necessary to calculate it closely? What was gained and what was lost, why was it necessary to count how much there was? Sometimes, being at a disadvantage could be an advantage.

Seeing Suo Jia currently in her embrace, Wen Ya suddenly had a premonition. This cute younger brother of hers would definitely not be simple in any way in the future. If that was so, then she wanted to properly witness exactly how Suo Jia would grow into a mighty figure!

Chapter 28: The Beautiful Maid

With Wen Ya's help, Suo Jia and his mother finally moved out of the dark, damp, and unbearably cramped space they used to call home, and moved what was originally Wen Ya's villa.

Originally, Suo Jia had thought the so-called villa would only be the size of a small house, but once Suo Jia saw that so-called villa with his own eyes, his jaw dropped wide open in shock.

Wen Ya felt a surging joy upon seeing the Suo Jia's stunned face. This villa had been prepared by Duke Wen Sha as a birthday present for his daughter; how could it be anything but luxurious? Even though it may not have been as extravagant as a power high official's personal residence, it still was better in some regards.

In terms of size, the house was not as extensive and splendorous as a majestic mansion, however it had one special floor, the third floor. It was painted an elegant snow white, and was very special because of its excellent panoramic view. Amazing! Even though land in the Holy light City was extremely costly, the villa still had a beautiful garden and a garden so large that it could be seen from the third floor! This all was beyond simply extravagant.

Surrounding the milky-white house were many lush green lawns scattered between gardens of many colourful flowers in full bloom. Somewhere else along the estate was a crystal blue swimming pool. There was also a dark blue lake fed by a towering artificial waterfall. If you enter the courtyard, you will definitely not feel that you are living in a large city like Holy Light, but will instead feel that you are living in someplace like Tao Yuan.

(TL: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Taoyuan_City)

Standing dumbly in the courtyard, Suo Jia slowly began to back up: "Please no! Sister Wen Ya, this gift is simply something I can't accept. It is too precious; it's practically priceless. I cannot take it."

Laughing slightly, Wen Ya lightly ruffled Suo Jia's hair: "Suo Jia, a man

of virtue cannot fix too much importance on mere worldly possessions. These are simply inanimate objects, which compared to a life, are meaningless!”

After speaking, Wen Ya did not give Suo Jia any chance to reject, and politely bid farewell to Suo Jia and his mother. She then directly left the villa with a group of servants, leaving Suo Jia and his mother standing in the same spot.

Just as Suo Jia and his mother were feeling apprehensive about entering and about to turn around and leave, the milky-white entrance opened. Six people wearing servant attire, along with some young maids, walked out of the entrance one by one. They lined up in two lines at the entrance, bowed their heads down in respect, and chorused, “We welcome Master and Mistress home!”

“Agah!” Seeing the strange scene in front of them, Suo Jia shouted in shock. What was this? Who were they talking to? Looking left and right, other than him and his mother, there were no other people present!

Just as Suo Jia had begun to suspiciously form a conjecture, Wen Ya’s voice echoed from the distance. “Oh right Suo Jia, I forgot to tell you. For the sake of caring for your ill mother, I assigned six maids to tend to her. From now on, they are your people!”

Hearing Wen Ya’s words, Suo Jia finally understood. It turned out that these six maids were sent by Wen Ya. Seeing these girls who had pearl-like skin and beautiful slim figures, Suo Jia’s mouth bitterly frowned. With their delicate and beautiful appearances, how could they be responsible for tending to someone? Exactly who was serving who?

Amidst these thoughts, Suo Jia soon thought of a major problem. During these past three months, he had set up his vendor’s booth every Sunday. So far, he has raised a total of 6000 gold. Although this was no small amount, it was difficult to provide for so many people with that much money!

Nervously swallowing his saliva, Suo Jia hoarsely asked: “Nn...uh, exactly how much are your daily wages?”

“Wages?” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the few girls looked at each other in confusion. Afterwards, a tall girl stepped forward a bit, “Master, we are all orphans from the chaos of the war. We have been raised by the Duke since we were young, so we do not require any wages. The only thing we need are meals. This alone is enough to make us grateful.”

Hearing the girl’s reply, Suo Jia could not help but let out a sigh of relief. He knew that people like Duke Wen Sha, who had the power to control the world’s largest city, had to raise their own loyal followers. This was most likely the main reason why he raised orphans who had lost everything from the chaos of war.

Even though there was no need to pay wages, Suo Jia’s eyebrows could not completely relax. Right now, he was the only one in the household earning money and having to provide for seven adults was not an easy task. Even if he went to the city center to set up his vendor’s booth every Sunday, he still would not be able to earn enough money.

6000 gold did not seem to be a small amount at first, however this was Suo Jia’s entire income for the last three months. Strictly speaking, this amount was only enough to buy a single expensive dress.

Even though these six maids did not require wages, they still worked hard every day and needed some small allowance right? They still needed to eat well, and wear warm clothes. They still needed to buy some nice clothes occasionally, and they still needed to purchase some everyday products that all girls used, right?

Not only did the large house have such an imposing ambience, maintaining such a large house required a lot of money. Calculating back and forth, if Suo Jia simply relied on his earnings from the vendor’s booth, even if he didn’t starve to death, he would definitely be poverty-stricken.

If you are poor, then you have to find a way to break out of your situation. Since his street business already no longer satisfied his needs, then he needed to change something. Looking at the spacious courtyard, Suo Jia began to think. If he used this villa’s ideal location, he could open up a beautification center, and that would not be a bad choice!

Seeing Suo Jia deep in thought, the tall girl opposite of him said respectfully, “Master, Mistress. My area of expertise is overall management, so if there is anything you need or want to request, please feel free to command me. I will try my best to carry out your wishes!”

Arriving at this point, the tall girl looked at Suo Jia and calmly continued: “Us six sisters individually manage clothing, food, living, expenses, and catering. As for me, my responsibility is to manage and coordinate all of these.”

The tall girl paused slightly, then continued: “Please draw up our daily living standards, as well as Master’s and Mistress’ living standards. After this, allocate the appropriate sums to me so I can take charge of its usages!”

Suo Jia looked at the tall girl in admiration. These six girls were evidently raised together as a group. These six individuals could completely support all of a household’s needs. As long as you give them enough money, no matter what you want to do, a simple command will make it come true.

After discussing for a bit with his mother, Suo Jia took out the money purse from his backpack, and passed it to the tall girl: “This is 6000 gold; for now just hold on to it. As for living standards, don’t split them between master and servant. From now on we are one family that eats at the same table. There will be no differences between us.”

Suo Jia paused for a moment before continuing, “Tomorrow, come back with a carpenter. I want to construct a wooden house next to the artificial mountain. As for the wooden structure’s window, I want it to face the mountain’s waterfall as well as that small man-made lake. The entrance needs to face the artificial garden...”

The tall girl worked hard to remember all of Suo Jia’s quick instructions. After a long time Suo Jia finally stopped and the tall girl finally had a chance to talk. “Master, thank you so much for not discriminating living expenses with us; however please set down a limit. We want to know what our spending limit per month is.”

Wrinkling his forehead, Suo Jia roughly calculated. Food, clothing and other necessities all required expenses. Currently, with three months of practice, Suo Jia was already able to moisturize 500 customers! The rough estimate of Suo Jia's current income was approximately 2000 gold.

After thinking about it for a bit, Suo Jia decided on the spot: "For now, it's decided to be 1000 gold. We'll observe the actual situation for a bit first. If it really is still not enough, then we will alter it a bit later."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the tall girl warmly smiled. "It's enough Master. In reality, 100 gold already covers the most basic activities. 1000 gold is already a lot."

Awkwardly scratching his head, Suo Jia did not really think 1000 gold was enough. In reality, 1000 gold could not even buy high-quality clothing. How could it be a lot? At the most, it could only count as an insignificant amount.

Chapter 29: The Swamp Technique

With the things regarding their daily lives finally resolved, Suo Jia once again shifted his focus to his studies. He didn't study for the sake of others, but rather because the instructor had finally begun to teach the mage apprentices the last of the foundations of water magic: the Swamp Technique!

Standing on the podium, the female lecturer explained in a serious manner, "Regarding the Swamp Technique, it is not as simple as mixing the water and earth elements together. Strictly speaking, the Swamp Technique is not actually a water control technique; rather, it falls under the magic control category. The reason that this technique is available for mage apprentices is because the Swamp Technique is cast through the formation of water."

While speaking, the female lecturer pulled out her staff from behind her. The tip of her staff lit up with a faint blue light that bubbled outwards. She pointed it towards the magic target in front of the podium.

Under everyone's watchful gazes, the podium remained undisturbed; absolutely nothing had happened. Seeing this, all of the students began to doubt their eyes. Could it be that the activation had failed?

Despite seeing the students' puzzled expressions, the beautiful female lecturer did not explain any further. Instead, she directly pulled out a small stone from within the podium and casually threw it towards the target.

There was a 'peng' sound and the pebble did not bounce back up like one would expect it to, but instead got trapped within the table. Under everyone's gaze, the pebble gradually sank, and eventually disappeared.

Seeing the dumbstruck students, the female lecturer slightly laughed: "If you only look at the surface of the light, then you will never be able to predict this result at all. Unless you actually step on it, besides from water mages, there are no people that can predict exactly where the Swamp Technique was activated. In other words, the Swamp Technique is

the best type of hidden trap!”

After a slight pause, the female lecturer continued: “The Swamp Technique has two main advantages: one, its covertness, and two, its high viscosity. Even though from the surface, it simply looks like normal ground, in reality beneath that piece of ground is a hidden water vortex that rotates at high speeds while carrying along the dirt!”

Everyone knows that mud by itself has a low viscosity; however once the mud is rotated in a clockwise direction, the viscosity of the mud is always increasing. In other words, the viscosity of the Swamp Technique is its second major characteristic! Once trapped within the vortex, no matter how powerful you are, escaping will be a difficult task!

Even though this is only an auxiliary water technique, it has many uses. It is definitely not any weaker than an attack-type technique. Once practiced to a high enough level, it can kill people without spilling a single drop of blood. Even enemies with great strength can be silently and stealthily killed.

The Swamp Technique is something that all water mages have to learn. Once learned, it becomes a lifelong advantage. Amateurs can use it in simple ways, while masters can use it in advanced ways.

The spell array for the Swamp Technique is more complicated than that of the Moisture Technique. It needs to be drawn with concentration for a long time for it to be activated. Even those that can temporarily store the magic diagram within their staffs cannot easily activate it.

Suo Jia calculated for a bit; previously, he needed around 3 seconds to activate the Moisture Technique. However... using the same drawing speed to draw the Swamp Technique spell diagram, he needed at least 9 seconds. Moreover... the Swamp Technique’s diagram was three times more complicated to accurately draw. To be able to complete it without the slightest deviation was too difficult!

Seeing the students drawing the Swamp Technique arrays over and over again by copying the diagram in the magic book, the female lecturer gave a stern look: “It has already been half a year since everyone has entered

Holy Light. Leaning the Swamp Technique within half a year is a pretty good improvement. It is obvious to anyone that everyone has been putting in great effort daily, and... Teacher is very happy about this.”

Hearing the teacher’s praise, the girls began to smile in delight. Seeing the children’s smiles, the female lecturer continued: “However, at this point, I must remind everyone: even though everyone’s improvement has been very fast, the apprentice period of a water mage is without question, when everyone is still at their weakest!”

All the girls’ smiles froze on their faces. Everyone understood that even though the words were difficult to accept, the teacher was right. Despite the fact that they had improved so quickly, the period of being only a water mage apprentice meant they were still inferior; their attack powers were still weak.

The female lecturer continued sternly: “After another half year, the annual Grand Holy Light Martial Arts Convention will be held. Before this, I hope that everyone continues to study diligently. Even if you don’t win, you must make sure you don’t lose too badly!”

“Ai... ” Hearing the female lecturer’s words, all the girls sighed. Historically, water mage apprentices had never gotten first place in the mage apprentices’ competition. Compared to the fire, wind, and earth mage apprentices, the water mage’s attacks were only light tickles.

Silently looking at the listless girls, Suo Jia did not agree with their thoughts. Although the water-style magics did not have much killing power, Suo Jia did not believe that water mages were naturally weak. As long as one was willing to put in effort, a solution always existed!

As he observed quietly, Suo Jia’s eyes lit up as he noticed two girls with a fighting nature amongst the hundreds of students. One of the two was the tempered Xue Er, and the other girl was someone that Suo Jia had never bothered to pay attention to before.

She didn’t have her head up high, but he could tell she was a slender girl with silverish blue hair. She had a very small face with just as thin lips, and just looking at her gave people the chills.

The reason Suo Jia had never really noticed her before was because she normally did not speak much. No matter what, she was always very cool and calm. In Suo Jia's memories, he had never once seen the silver-haired girl laugh before.

Just as Suo Jia was silently observing this, Xue Er loudly said to the teacher: "Teacher, I don't think that we will definitely lose. Before the competition starts, nobody can determine the outcome; this is something my father has always taught me!"

"Eh!" After hearing Xue Er, the female instructor opened her mouth as if she wanted to argue, but then changed her mind suddenly, "Yes, you are right, I spoke wrongly. Actually... one mustn't give up until the final hour and continue to give it all they've got. As long as people persevere, then they can overcome any situation!"

Hearing the teacher's words, all the girls immediately recovered their energy. They began to excitedly talk amongst each other again. Seeing that the girls that had recovered their spirits, the female lecturer secretly wiped the sweat off her brow. She had definitely not fulfilled her duty as a teacher; how could she teach ideas such as these to the children? Even though losing was an undeniable reality, if these children had gotten used to the habit of giving up before even trying, she would have completely ruined their futures!

While the teacher inwardly rejoiced at her own words, a gloomy but cold voice called out, "Teacher, I don't agree with what you're saying. Even at the very last moment, one absolutely shouldn't give up their pursuit for victory. Victory isn't something that can be easily attained, it has to be achieved and protected with one's life!"

"Xi!" Due to the sound of a cold voice, the whole class immediately calmed down. All of the people stared at the silver-haired girl sitting in the corner in surprise.

Slightly narrowing his eyes, Suo Jia could detect a chilling ambience from the girl's voice. Suo Jia knew that she had definitely experienced something before that caused her to have such a cool and direct

demeanor! Even though he still did not know how powerful she was, it was without a question that such an opponent was someone no person would want to encounter!

“This....this....” Hearing the girl’s words, the female lecturer froze for a bit, then carefully said: “What you said definitely has a point as well. However, I will still stick to my words. Where there is yet life, there remains hope. Being able to win is good, however there are times when victory is hopeless.”

Confronted with the teacher’s words, the girl did not defend herself any further. She only sat coldly in her seat without any refutation, despite not expressing agreement either. Regardless, all the people could clearly tell that she would definitely continue to insist on her standpoint. For the sake of victory, she would even sacrifice her life!

Looking at both the female lecturer and the silver-haired girl, Suo Jia could not help but feel bewildered for a moment. Exactly what was he supposed to do when facing the prospect of a competition? Was he supposed to go all out to defend his victory, or as the teacher had said, learn how to compromise?

Chapter 30: New Discovery

It was now time for afternoon class activities, and yet Suo Jia still could not find an answer to his problem. Miserably shaking his head, Suo Jia decided to temporarily stop thinking about it. For many things, if you cannot find a solution by thinking about it right now, then it is better to stop thinking about it. Time is precious, and using every minute to enhance yourself is crucial.

Lifting his head, he looked at the lighthearted little guy flying within a cloud of moisture. Suo Jia laughed with satisfaction; the little guy grew quickly during the past 3 or 4 months. Although it was still immature, it was already capable of flight!

All in all, this little guy was really quite fortunate. In this world, he was probably the only one lucky enough to receive several thousands of Moisture Techniques everyday. Although everyone had already learned the Swamp Technique at this point, casting spells from longer distances still needed work. Because of this, the little dragon could continue to enjoy the moisturizing rain for quite a while.

Currently, after three months of hard work, Suo Jia was capable of casting 60 Moisture Techniques in succession with a bit of energy left over. As for the other girls, although they weren't as hardworking as Suo Jia, they still averaged at around 20 consecutive Moisture Techniques. A few girls were even able to cast 30 in succession.

Suo Jia had never casted the Moisture Technique in front of his other classmates. In general, as soon as he recovered some energy, he would immediately secretly cast a Moisture Technique on the little guy. Casting the Moisture Technique during class time was not an issue either, as he was very subtle while casting this spell and he didn't need a staff.

Closing his eyes, Suo Jia worked hard to focus on the formation of the Swamp Technique. Suo Jia was not like other students that only focused on memorizing the formation after learning the technique. In his opinion, since all water magic relied on the same principles, they should also have

similarities. If that was the case, then it would be much more effective if he could find out and understand what these similarities were.

So far, Suo Jia had only learned a total of two significant spells. One of them was the Moisture Technique, the other was the Swamp Technique. As for the Water Sphere and Aqua Aegis techniques, they fell under the category of water control and did not have much to do with magic spells.

During the past six months, Suo Jia had already cast the Moisture Technique more than ten thousand times. In regards to the Moisture Technique's formation, he knew it like the back of his hand. With repeated learning and practice, he had already carved the magic formation firmly into the back of his mind. It had become a part of him.

Now Suo Jia was trying to compare the Moisture Technique with the Swamp Technique. He tried to find any similarities between the two techniques and distinguish the parts that were different, and afterwards attempted to understand them bit by bit.

To his surprise, he soon discovered that even though the magic formation of the two techniques were different, the frameworks were basically the same. Whether it was the Moisture Technique or the Swamp Technique, they were both developed using the same method.

By comparing the two, Suo Jia was able to discover the framework rather quickly. Suo Jia was very familiar with this framework. In reality, it was simply a Six Pointed Star Array.

Suo Jia realized that the Six Pointed Star Array was the basic diagram of all magic. This was the reason why you needed to stack other symbols on top of the formation to distinguish the characteristics of the water magic. This meant that other than this basic framework, there should be other similarities between the two techniques as well.

Suo Jia compared the Swamp Technique and Moisture Technique non-stop until finally, Suo Jia found a peculiar symbol. He tried out both magic formations by drawing them on the ground at the same time. To his surprise, he discovered that there were parts within the formation that overlapped completely. The Six Pointed Star Array was the only part

that was identical between spells, the other symbols did not overlap!

After this discovery, the first thing Suo Jia did was to quickly draw out a Six Pointed Star Array. Afterwards, he drew the symbol that represented water. Drawing up until this part, the only symbol left in the whole formation was the Moisture Technique's formation. In other words, this symbol represented the Moisture Technique.

Sure enough, the moment Suo Jia drew that symbol which represented the Moisture Technique, the whole magic spell formation suddenly lit up. A cluster of mist instantly appeared out of thin air and covered the small Frost Dragon. The casting this time turned out to be a success. That meant even if Suo Jia did not follow the teacher's instructions, he could still successfully cast the Moisture Technique!

Everyone started learning magic a specific way: they would follow given sequences and patterns, learning it step by step. If one made a small error while performing magic this way, there was a good chance that the magic would fail. Who would have known that one could draw a magic spell formation in such a simple way!

Suo Jia spent his time at home ever since he was young with no one to talk to. He did things the way he wanted to. Without thinking, he even went as far as changing the magic spell formation's drawing sequence. If this news spread, it would definitely shock the entire world!

After a series of discussion and research, Suo Jia could finally confirm that following an exact sequence was not important. The most important part was that you had to be precise. As long as the formation was correct, the spell would be successfully executed.

Discovering this, Suo Jia was hesitant. If it didn't matter how you drew it, then why did the teaching material require a certain diagram and drawing sequence? Was there actually some hidden meaning to this?

Doubtfully, Suo Jia carefully examined his research. Just by comparing the two, Suo Jia immediately discovered that the drawing sequence passed down by the teacher saved more time and was the most convenient method. If he followed the drawing sequence from before, Suo Jia

wouldn't be able to draw the magic formation within three seconds! There were too many details and repetitions.

While calculating silently, Suo Jia arrived at a conclusion quickly. If he followed the drawing sequence passed down by the teacher, then he only needed 24 strokes to complete the Water Moisture Technique's formation. But if he followed the drawing sequence he created himself, he needed 28 strokes to finish the magic formation! Four additional strokes!

Arriving at this conclusion, Suo Jia couldn't help but frown; there were advantages and disadvantages. Currently, Suo Jia couldn't tell which was better.

The advantage of the traditional drawing sequences from the magic book was speed. The disadvantage was that they were hard to remember and practice. You needed to learn from scratch each time you learned a new type of magic, since the drawing sequence for each traditional magic diagram was different.

With Suo Jia's method, it was easier to remember and practice. All he needed to do was to remember each symbol and what they represented. This was easier to remember and to practice, because in the end...the number of magical symbols were numerous, and spells would have many symbols that would serve as their basis.

Of course, this method wasn't perfect at all. Its weak point was that the strokes to create the spell were more than the other method, and was slower to cast as well. When fighting against another, it was likely that the other spell would smash into you first, so this spellwork was in no way finished yet! In the middle of a battle, whoever cast their spell second would be the one destined to lose.

The traditional method had a shorter casting time, however it was hard to remember and practice while the new method was slower to cast, but was easier to remember and practice. After thinking about it for a long time, Suo Jia finally came to a conclusion; he would have to use his own method to cast spells!

As far as Suo Jia was concerned, all 18 spells of the Laws of Water were

pretty much the same. The Moisture Technique was fine, and so was the Swamp Technique! They all used the same 6 pointed star formation and also used the same water symbols! The only major differing parts were the sections that didn't overlap with each other.

Quickly drawing out the formation and the accompanying water symbols, Suo Jia filled in the symbol for the Moisture Technique soon after. Immediately...a fine rain began to drizzle down, as if the spring rain had come early.

Quelling his excitement, Suo Jia drew the foundation of the spell once more with the water symbols. And soon after, according to his memory, he drew the symbol for the Swamp Technique right on top of the diagram!

"Shuaa!" At the very instant when Suo Jia drew the final symbol, a soft echo was heard as he suddenly felt powerless. There was no response after that, so as he looked around his surrounding environment with doubt, he saw nothing out of the ordinary. Embarrassed, Suo Jia scratched his head, he knew that this time, he had failed.

Continuing to watch and draw using the two methods, he began to think about the probability of success for the new method he came up with. Although there was a problem with how it could exist as a method, Suo Jia knew that wasn't the reason why he didn't succeed in casting the Swamp Technique; it was because the way he was writing and casting the spell wasn't the standard way of doing so.

"Kyaaa!" As Suo Jia was internally despairing, a shriek was suddenly heard echoing throughout the training floors. As he looked up in shock, he could only see a plump lady with a face full of fear as she stared at her own foot and continued to scream non-stop.

Puzzled on what was happening under the foot of the lady, he looked at both of her legs. Her legs had already been sucked into the ground, and although she was pulling at herself with all her strength, she was unable to pull herself out.

Fortunately, she wasn't stuck too deeply, the girls around her extended

their arms. With a strenuous amount of effort, she was pulled out. However both of the girl's shoes had remained stuck in the ground!

Chapter 31: The Six Sisters

“What is going on?” All the girls from the training floors gathered to find out what the ruckus was about. They all looked in confusion at the girl who had sunk into the floor, asking each other about what had happened.

Suo Jia sat back in his chair dumbfounded, staring in disbelief at the floor that had collapsed. Could it be? Did he really successfully cast a Swamp Technique using the experimental method that he had developed?

Suo Jia didn't dare to make a sound and shut his mouth tightly. Seeing the chubby girl's crying state, Suo Jia could not help feel guilty. However, Suo Jia shut his mouth tightly, not daring to speak a word. How could he claim that he had made the swamp If he couldn't explain how he had created it?

After hesitating for a while, Suo Jia slowly stood up and walked towards the crowd. Seeing Suo Jia moving toward them, the girls moved out of the way and let Suo Jia successfully reach the girl who was suffering in front of him.

Suo Jia apologized to the girl while looking at her dirty feet: “Please don't cry, I will buy a new pair of shoes for you tomorrow!”

Upon hearing Suo Jia's words, the girl asked in a surprised and excited voice, “Is what you said true? Will you really buy me a new pair of shoes?”

“Yes!” Suo Jia promised immediately while confidently nodding his head. After all, since he was the one who caused this situation then he had to resolve it himself. He wasn't like all those other irresponsible men who didn't clean up their own messes.

Even though Suo Jia acted out of a sense of guilt, to the other girls, it seemed that he had feelings for the girl; taking the initiative to give a present meant that he obviously had some feelings for the girl. Although these girls were barely nine years old, they could not help but feel jealous.

All the girls looked at the joyous chubby girl with envy in their eyes.

How they wished that they could be in her shoes! But they were unfortunate, and could only wait for the next opportunity.

After he ate his dinner, Suo Jia took out a pen and paper, and started to study. He thought very carefully, even though the new method he invented required more strokes, as long as he practiced the basic formation until he was familiar with it, he could shorten the amount of time required to draw the formation and still be able to get close to the casting time of the traditional method.

It was fine even if the water symbol was drawn in a reversed position. This was no shortcut, but the basic formation did not follow the traditional drawing sequence. Suo Jia had to experiment by himself to find out the fastest and easiest drawing sequence.

On top of the white paper, Suo Jia repeatedly drew the Six Pointed Star Array in many different variations in order to find the fastest and simplest method. But no matter how many times he drew it, it still required almost the same amount of time and number of strokes.

“Knock knock knock...” Just when Suo Jia was feeling extremely anxious, a sharp and clear knocking sound was heard from the door.

Letting out a long sigh, Suo Jia casually put down the pen that he was holding and leaned on the luxurious chair with his back while lightly kneading the space between his eyebrows, “Come in, the door is not locked!”

After hearing Suo Jia speak, one of the six maids, the pretty maid who was in charge of the family’s diet, pushed a trolley that was gilded with a thin layer of gold inside the room: “Master, I see you haven’t slept yet, being as it’s this late at night, I made some midnight snacks for you.”

After hearing the girl, Suo Jia really did feel a little hungry. Nodding his head, Suo Jia momentarily gave up his research. He turned around to look at the girl who took out the fragrant food and said: “Next time don’t call me Master, it sounds very awkward. Next time calling me Young Master is fine.”

TL: He doesn’t want to be referred to as the head of the house but rather

as a Young Master (a less formal way).

“Yes, Young Master!” The maid cleverly replied immediately.

Suo Jia slightly glanced at the maid in high regards, and turned his attention to his midnight snacks. Only in a single glance, he praised: “Such a bountiful supper! Oh my god! Isn’t this a bit too luxurious?”

“Hehe....” The maid giggled and said: “I don’t know if it’s luxurious or extravagant but this is the standard of living set by the Young Master. If Young Master still thinks that this is too luxurious, Young Master can lower standard of living..... ““

“It’s fine, it’s fine..... “ Captivated by the four-colored dishes as well as the small bowl of porridge and steamed bun, Suo Jia happily said, “No need to lower the living standard, if spending 1,000 gold per month can give us such an extravagant life, it’s still worth it. What is the reason for making money? So we can spend it!”

While still in the middle of talking, Suo Jia impatiently grabbed the bowl and chopsticks, and started eating. Suo Jia almost accidentally bit his tongue due to the delicious dishes. Although the dishes his mother made were also delicious, compared to this girl who trained since young, the differences were way too large. Moreover, the ingredients used were also different.

Seeing the Young Master enjoying the meal, the maid could not help but giggle. It was very important to her that her hard work had been recognized. If a maid was not up to standard, she was no longer necessary!

After a few glances, the maid cutely averted her gaze from Suo Jia. She had been taught since childhood that it was impolite to watch other people eat. Many maids got punished by their masters because of this!

Standing cutely on the side, the maid arbitrary looked over at the table. What entered her field of vision were the pieces of white paper completely covering the table. On every piece of paper, there was a similar drawing of the same strange pattern. The maid couldn’t help but giggle, the Young Master was still a child after all. It’s so late already, yet

he was still here drawing randomly and not going to bed earlier. He still needed to go to school tomorrow.

Suo Jia was eating happily, but he suddenly realized that the maid had gotten quiet. He felt puzzled and turned his head to look behind him. He only saw the maid who was on the verge of smiling while looking at the table. Following her gaze, Suo Jia saw the table that was covered with the drawings.

While eating, Suo Jia inquired casually: "Right, what are your names? I still don't know what to call you six sisters."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the maid hurriedly turned around, and said respectfully: "We six sisters have been raised by the Duke since we were young. We don't have names, only numbers. If it is necessary, young master can give us names."

"Gulp..." Smoothly swallowing down the food in his mouth, Suo Jia lifted his bowl of porridge and then quickly downed it in huge gulps. He then said in satisfaction. "I am not that skilled. You girls should decide your own names!"

Speaking up to here, Suo Jia held a snow-white bun. He tilted his head and thought for a bit, then said resolutely: "You girls are all much older than me, so I will call you girls "Older Sisters". Based on age, I will call the oldest "Big Sister", call the second oldest "Second Sister", etc."

"Ah!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, the maids exclaimed in shock. "This is unacceptable Young Master, we cannot be called as such. Even though we are older than Young Master, we are still mere maids, how can we deserve..."

"Of course you deserve it!" Without waiting for the maid to finish her words, Suo Jia said resolutely, "I don't have any power or riches, I only know you girls are taking care of me and my mother. You help us do a lot of things and made supper for me out of consideration, just like big sisters. It's been decided, I will address you sisters as such. As for how mother address you six sisters, you can go ask her."

Taking a big bite out of the steamed bun, Suo Jia said indistinctly,

“Alright, you should be able to tell me now, which sister should I refer to you as?”

Opening her mouth with a little effort, just when she wanted to retort, at last... the maid gave up. Suo Jia's expression was too firm. Moreover, for a maid, the master's command was everything.

Smiling gently, the maid opened her mouth, “According to the Young Master's statement, you can call me Third Sister. Elder Sister is in charge of overall management. Second Sister is in charge of sewing clothes and administration. I am the Third Sister in charge of food. Fourth Sister is in charge of housing management. Fifth Sister is in charge of daily products. As for Sixth Sister, she is responsible for receiving guests.

After listening to the maid, Suo Jia started thinking and laughed before saying, “This is easy to remember. Elder Sister is the general, and then the Second, Third, Fourth and Fifth Sisters are in charge of clothes, food, shelter and daily products respectively. Lastly, the Sixth Sister is responsible for the reception. Next time I won't mix it up anymore.”

Listening to the Young Master's playful words, and seeing the look on the Young Master's face, the maid could not help but laugh. Young Master appeared to be one very cute, pure and easy going master. Being able to serve such a master, was also a good fortune for us six sisters!

Chapter 32: Shocking Discovery

Because she had previously underwent strict maid training, she quickly understood how she should treat the young master. As a general rule of thumb, little kids do not like being ignored; they love it when people take time to talk with them, especially when people dote on them and give them lots of praise. So the maid knew her young master wouldn't feel happy if she didn't talk to him. Only adults who liked peace and quiet maids would enjoy silence.

With a faint smile, the maid gathered her courage and asked, “Young Master, it's very late. Why haven't you gone to bed yet? Why did you draw so many sketches? What are they for? Why do they all have the same design?”

Of course, the maid's words immediately piqued Suo Jia's interest. While chewing a bun, Suo Jia said vaguely, “Don't look down on these diagrams, they are extremely difficult to draw. Currently, I'm researching which of these drawing methods is the fastest, simplest, and most energy-conserving!”

“Eh?” The maid scratched her head, and with a puzzled expression she looked at the strange diagrams. “Aren't these drawings very simple already? Does this really require a whole night's worth of research?”

“...”

Suo Jia began to choke on his food after he heard what the maid said. It wasn't until after quite a long bout of hacking coughs did he finally manage to cough the food out, leaving him red in the face. “Don't underestimate these diagrams! If you tried drawing them, you would understand how complex they really are. What's more is that you have to be accurate. Look closely at the size and the proportion. All the arrays I have drawn are practically identical!”

Suo Jia reached for a pen and piece of white paper and pushed them towards the maid, saying impatiently, “If you don't believe me, try drawing it yourself. It's very complicated and extremely difficult to draw!”

“Right! I am extremely sorry Young Master. I was ignorant and had upset you. Young Master, this lowly maid of yours will not dare act so foolishly ever again!!” Looking at the Young Master’s completely red face, the maid thought that the Young Master was seething, and so she desperately tried to beg for forgiveness.

“What?” Suo Jia looked inquisitively at the maid, and with a questioning voice continued, “What is there to forgive or not to forgive? You didn’t do anything wrong; I just wanted to correct your mistake. Come...hold this pen, and try drawing it yourself. If you do so, you will understand what I’m talking about”

Seeing the Young Master’s persistence, the maid finally gave in and apprehensively picked up the pen. She looked at the diagram once again, and felt that what she thought was still true. Such a simple diagram couldn’t be that hard to draw, could it?

Seeing the girl beginning to draw, Suo Jia reached for the cup of water next to him to refresh himself. However, just before he was able to, he heard a female voice say, “Young...Young Master, I’ve finished drawing!”

“What! So quickly?” Hearing the maid’s voice, Suo Jia forgot about the cup and immediately turned around to look at the white paper.

Under Suo Jia’s inspection, that exact Six Pointed Star Array had cleanly appeared on the white paper. Even though it was not as precise as the one Suo Jia had drawn, it was obvious from first glance that without going through professional training, it was impossible to draw the Six Pointed Star Array so accurately!

Doubtfully looking at the maid, Suo Jia said in confusion, “Have you drawn this diagram before?”

Hearing the Young Master’s words, the maid shook her head in confusion. “No, I haven’t! In the past, I rarely went out; I spent every day helping my master prepare food. I’ve never drawn this before.”

Scratching his head in confusion, Suo Jia furrowed his brows and said, “Then how did you draw it so accurately? Draw it again for me. This time, I will watch carefully so that I can observe exactly how you drew this!”

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the maid did not discuss any longer, and took the pen. After a few strokes, an exact Six Pointed Star Array was completed. She once again turned to look at Suo Jia, and saw that his mouth was gaping as if petrified, frozen in place.

Suo Jia's mind had practically collapsed. If he had not personally witnessed it, he would have never in his lifetime imagined that the Six Pointed Star Array could be drawn in such a way!

The maid's method of drawing was very simple; she first drew a triangle right-side up, and then drew another triangle upside down. These two triangles perfectly formed a Six Pointed Star Array when combined! This only required 6 strokes and it could be drawn very easily. Based on this new method of drawing, Suo Jia could finish drawing the entire Six Pointed Star Array in half a second. Moreover, the result was extremely accurate!

After his euphoria passed, Suo Jia's whole body began to tremble. Perhaps other people wouldn't understand, but Suo Jia knew that this drawing method was far too formidable.

Seeing the Young Master's dumbstruck expression, the maid could not help but panic. She gently asked Suo Jia, "Young Master! Have I drawn this wrong somehow?"

"Eh!" Suddenly aroused from his daze, Suo Jia was simply unable to reply to the maid's words. Instead, he extended his right hand as fast as lightning and quickly used the maid's previous method to draw out the Six Pointed Star Array. Afterwards, to represent the water element, he used the Moisture Technique's symbol to quickly fill the diagram. He circled it with his right hand and the Moisture Technique was activated!

In silence, a cluster of fine rain mist started to form over the maid's head. Seeing this scene, Suo Jia let out a loud cheer. He jumped up in excitement and grabbed the startled maid and started to jump around the room.

The maid let out a slight breath of relief. Although she still did not know why the young master was so happy, it was obvious that he was no

longer angry. Thinking that this was a very good thing, the maid also began to laugh in a relaxed manner.

To Suo Jia, this discovery was enough to change his entire life, even if it was only a maid who had discovered it. Suo Jia clearly understood that because he was single-minded from what he was taught, he never would have drawn a Six Pointed Star Array by drawing two triangles. In Suo Jia's eyes, the Six Pointed Star Array was extremely complex. However, in the eyes of a maid who didn't know magic, it was nothing more than the combination of two simple triangles.

Suo Jia was definitely sure that this was the simplest, fastest, and the most convenient way to draw it. There was no other method that could simplify the Six Pointed Star Array further; this was the best method.

With such a method of drawing, Suo Jia only needed to remember the Moisture Technique's simple representative symbol as well as the Swamp Technique's two symbols. The basic Six Pointed Star Array added onto the water element's symbols, as well as magic's generic symbols, could activate various types of water magic!

This might be hard to believe, but in reality using the new method prevented the activation time from extending, even managing to greatly reduce it! Up until now, the Moisture Technique had traditionally used a model of 3 seconds. Now that it was reduced to a new model of 2 seconds, it could essentially be activated within the blink of an eye!

Moreover, the most important part of the new activation model was that the necessary amount of spirit power became ridiculously low. As for the procedures for activating magic, aside from the general magic symbols, the basic Six Pointed Star Array and the water element symbols were identical. Once practiced enough, they could be drawn subconsciously and would not require any consumption of spirit power.

If one method works, a hundred methods will work as well. With the new model, once it is mastered with one type of water magic, it is equivalent to mastering all types of water magic. The only difference is the general magic symbols. Different magic symbols reveal different

results in the magic.

In terms of the traditional model, the diagram for the Swamp Technique is two or three times more complicated than that of the Moisture Technique. Being able to activate the Swamp Technique within 6 seconds means that the person was definitely an expert. However, with Suo Jia's new method, the Swamp Technique had only one more symbol compared to the Moisture Technique. Within 3 seconds, Suo Jia could fully activate the Swamp Technique.

After some organization, Suo Jia split the new model into 3 parts. The first part included the basic foundation of all magic: the Six Pointed Star Array. The second part used the water attribute's marks: the water element's symbols. The third part represented the magic's specific categorical classification symbols!

Among these, the first and second parts were the exact same for every technique. Only the third part was completely different. For example, the Moisture Technique had only one specific categorical classification symbol, while the Swamp Technique had two!

After analyzing up to this point, Suo Jia could not help but wrinkle his brows; was this a coincidence? The first-rank magic, the Moisture Technique, had exactly only one specific symbol; the second-rank magic, the Swamp Technique, coincidentally had two specific symbols!

In order to verify his suspicious, Suo Jia quickly pulled out the magic book distributed by the school. Page after page, he flipped through the book, all the while looking for clues. The first page was the Moisture Technique, the second page was the Swamp Technique, and the third page was the representative magic he remembered his teacher had performed: the Ice Sphere Technique. This magic qualified as a third-rank magic!

Taking a deep breath, Suo Jia continued to read. Firstly, the basic spell array was completely identical; it was still a Six Pointed Star Array. The water element symbols were also the same. Upon reading further, the three different symbols were finally within Suo Jia's line of sight!

After impatiently flipping page after page, Suo Jia realized it was just as he had thought; the magic spell rank was determined by the number of symbols. The highest ranked magic spell was rank 12: Absolute Zero! With the foundation array, after water element symbols as well as other rank 12 elemental symbols were added, the rank 12 magic would be completed!

Chapter 33: Ice Sphere Technique

Drawing the magic diagram was no longer a problem. With the new model Suo Jia had previously invented, he was able to completely activate the Ice Sphere Technique. Although the Ice Sphere Technique had an extra symbol compared to the Swamp Technique, combined with his new casting method, he was definitely able to draw the diagram in time.

While thinking, Suo Jia excitedly recalled the three symbols needed to cast the Ice Sphere Technique. Again and again he drew the outlines for these symbols. After about two hours, Suo Jia could finally successfully draw the diagrams for the Ice Sphere Technique.

Excitedly swallowing, Suo Jia knew that it was time to test his theories. If he followed this pattern and it could even cast ice magic, then to Suo Jia, magic really couldn't be simpler. Before long, he would be able to perform the forbidden water spell – Absolute Zero!

Suo Jia took a deep breath and gently shut his eyes, trying to calm himself down. After a short period of time, Suo Jia suddenly opened his eyes and stretched out his right hand. The glowing blue Six Pointed Star Array was completed in an instant, fast like lightning. Soon after, he precisely stacked the symbol representing the water element on top of the Six Pointed Star Array, as well as the three symbols that represented the Ice Sphere Technique!

Finally all the patterns were finished in a stroke. The entire process only took four seconds. After all, when compared to the Swamp Technique, the Ice Sphere Technique only had one additional symbol.

The magic formation and the pattern floating in front of Suo Jia lit up one after another in quick succession. A blue, crystal Ice Sphere appeared in front of Suo Jia's palm out of nowhere!

“Whoosh!” With a whistling sound, the blue, crystal Ice Sphere launched out from Suo Jia's palm. The completed Ice Sphere was unlike the teacher's. The surface was very smooth and there were no spikes present at all. Suo Jia suddenly felt slightly dizzy as he looked at the Ice

Sphere, as if something had been pulled out from his body.

Suo Jia felt that his body was very weak and swayed left and right. He felt powerless, and fortunately, he was already on top of his bed. He fell directly onto the soft bedding and managed to avoid injuring himself.

Weakly looking at the ceiling, Suo Jia suddenly realized a problem. He completely ignored the prerequisites of casting a spell: magic power!

Using the previous method to activate the Moisture Technique required the user to completely deplete all of their spirit power before using magic power. Because of this resulted in a lack of spirit power, the user will naturally become unable to activate magic.

Although the new model Suo Jia was currently testing required very little spirit power (to the point where it allowed Suo Jia to have a surplus of spirit power left over), his magic power was still completely exhausted.

Moreover, Suo Jia had discovered that although it wasn't necessary to use much magic power while drawing the spell array, the spell still required spirit power for initiation. When Suo Jia first activated the Swamp Technique at school, he had previously felt a bit dizzy. However the feeling had been subtle, so Suo Jia had not paid much mind to it. Now that he was trying to activate the Ice Sphere Technique, the dizziness became a lot more overwhelming.

Low spirit power causes people to experience dizziness, and even unconsciousness at times. If you are extremely injured, it will cause irrecoverable damage. On the other hand, a deficit in magic power can cause one's body to become weak as well. But extreme deficit can cause the physical body to collapse in a flash, rendering one unable to have magic power ever again.

People stress the importance of the traditional activation model because for good reasons. Using the traditional model guarantees that there is absolutely no chance of encountering such dangers. On the other hand, the new model that Suo Jia researched is actually one that people had researched millennia ago. However this model has undetermined limits that can cause mages to die prematurely, so it was abandoned years ago.

The traditional model, although slow, was very safe. The new model, although fast, was extremely dangerous; a single mistake could kill even a skilled mage. The usage of spirit power could injure one to the point of becoming an imbecile, or even eliminate one's ability to use magic all together. Considering these points of magical theory, the traditional model's most outstanding benefit was definitely its safety!

Although many people chose to use this method millenniums ago, by now this type of method has already died out. The mages from the ancient times, in order to warn their apprentices of impending risks, emphasized order when passing down magic knowledge. Everything has to be progressed step by step, and nothing can be rushed.

In order to make their argument more credible and authoritative, the ancestors made up many stories about how magic had been bestowed to the people by God. Therefore, it could not be altered without permission, or else one would be punished by the Heavens.

As time passed, activation models like Suo Jia's essentially disappeared. Until now, even if an individual thought of it by chance, they would not try to test it. After all, the traditional model has an irreplaceable advantage.

Feeling exhausted and powerless, Suo Jia allowed himself to fall into a deep sleep. Only after the second morning had arrived did Suo Jia tiredly wake up. Even though he had slept for the whole night. Suo Jia's whole body was still drained of strength, and he was tired to death. If he could have, he would have continued to sleep for another 3 days and 3 nights.

However, Suo Jia would not let himself do so. Gritting his teeth, Suo Jia resolutely forced his sore body up. He had to go eat and attend school like he was supposed to. Although it wasn't obvious on the outside that Suo Jia was not feeling well, there was no way that they could have possibly imagined exactly how much pain Suo Jia was going through.

The whole day was very peaceful and passed by with few incident. However Suo Jia naturally would not just let the day pass like that. After school, he arrived at the school's library. He had to research a bit. What

exactly was with his current state?

After some effort, Suo Jia found some relevant books. After looking through them carefully, he finally realized that his rash attempt at skipping steps in activating magic had such a large risk factor.

Reading the warnings in the books, Suo Jia's whole body began to tremble. The books stated clearly that skipping steps to activate the magic not only could cause permanent damage to his spirit power, it could also cause him to become an imbecile. Moreover, his body could also collapse as a result, and become a normal person that would never again be able to use magic.

In fear, Suo Jia used the Moisture Technique on himself. It was still fine; Suo Jia discovered that he could still use the Moisture Technique with no problems. In other words, he had not lost his abilities of magic and perception.

Gently closing the book, Suo Jia silently began to ponder. With respect to spirit power, he had already achieved the level necessary to activate the Ice Sphere Technique. Although he had gotten dizzy for a moment, he had recovered quickly. After resting for a whole night, Suo Jia could clearly feel that not only did his spirit power not suffer from any major harm, it had also increased by a lot.

Since his spirit power wasn't a problem, the main problem was his magic power. Thinking up to this point, Suo Jia returned the books in his hand to the shelf, and began to look for books on how to increase magic power.

After asking the librarian, Suo Jia soon found the book he was looking for. The first method of increasing one's magic power was to naturally allow it to grow with the body. As one grew older, one's magic power would also gradually increase. This was a natural process, not something that one can control.

The second method was through meditation. This was a mage's specialty; only those who could meditate could be considered a mage. Through meditation, not only can one's magic power increase rapidly, but

to a certain level, one can also raise their spirit power. Moreover, meditation was also the best method for recovering lost magic power.

Besides these two methods, the last method was a bit more unique, known as the Exhaustion Training Method. The so-called Exhaustion Training Method is simply to strive to completely exhaust/deplete one's magic power and spirit powers. Afterwards, when one naturally recovers his/her spirit power and magic power, the levels will increase slightly.

The previous two methods could not help Suo Jia in any way. The last method, however, was one that Suo Jia had already personally experienced. In terms of magic power, it had not yet recovered so nothing could be determined yet. However in terms of spirit power, Suo Jia had definitely felt its growth.

Of course, the third method wasn't without faults. Although the method of exhausting did indeed result in increased powers, it only showed clear results in the beginning. The more it was used, the less effective the result became. This type of training method had strict limitations and could only be used for a short period of time, and cannot be used for a whole lifetime. To a mage, the best and most basic method of increasing magic power and spirit power was still meditation!

After reading the books in front of him, Suo Jia was so excited that he wanted to shout out loudly in happiness. Even though this third method could not be used forever, Suo Jia had not expected to use it his whole life anyways. In Suo Jia's point of view, he would spend the next half a year using the Exhaustion Training Method to quickly raise his magic power and spirit power levels. Achieving the Meditation Technique, as well as the level of the Ice Sphere Technique, would be his main objectives.

Within half a year, if he was able to freely enter the meditative state and freely activate the Ice Sphere Technique, then the competition in half a year would be within his grasp. With this, Suo Jia gained more confidence in the upcoming competition.

Chapter 34: Exhaustion Training

According to the book's explanation, the first 100 uses of the Exhaustion Training Method will result in very obvious changes. Such changes will allow one to raise their spirit power and magic power by several fold rather quickly. However, after the first 100 uses, the continual usage of the Exhaustion Training Method will provide no further advancements.

In addition, the Exhaustion Training Method will raise spirit power and magic power proportional to one's own strength. The greater one's magic and spirit power, the more it will increase. Similarly, the lower one's magic and spirit power is, the less it will increase. It is for precisely this reason that most people traditionally only use the Exhaustion Training Method after reaching the Dacheng Realm, even though the method is incredibly effective.

However, Suo Jia didn't agree; he wanted to find his own way. Even though he had no idea how he was going to achieve his goals, he would not give up as long as there was even the slimmest chance at victory.

In addition, another aspect that Suo Jia considered, was that although using the Exhaustion Training Technique right now would not be as beneficial as using it in the future, he was only missing out on the potential to double his spirit and magic power. If he could learn meditation and Ice Arrow earlier, the potential gains would outweigh the losses in Suo Jia's opinion.

Since the beginning of recorded history, the youngest age to have learned meditation was 10 years old; the second youngest was at 12 years old. These records have remained unchanged for the last thousands of years, so Suo Jia did not actually think he was talented enough to learn meditation before the age of 10. What's more was that it was said that in the entire history of the continent there was not one individual who ever had talent remotely close to that of those two people.

Perhaps there have been some people who have suspected that by using

the Exhaustion Training Technique, meditation can be learned earlier and they could thus set new records. However, if that is the case, then why hasn't anyone done so?

The reasoning was quite simple; becoming a Magister was the highest rank a human could occupy. Only one in a million was capable of being promoted from a Magic Priest to a Magister; However, those who use the Exhaustion Training Method to double their spirit power and magic power in a short period of time could easily enter the ranks of the Magister. But who would be foolish enough to give up the chance of becoming a Magister by choosing to learn the Meditation Technique faster? That would be meaningless.

The amount of spiritual and magic power that could potentially promote a mage from Magic Priest to Magister by using the Exhaustion Training Method was a hundred times more than the amount that could be gained through using the technique right now. If the benefits Suo Jia gained from used the Exhaustion Training Method was represented by a single drop of water, the amount of Spiritual and Magic Power gained while at the Magic Priest level was like that of a great ocean. Who would be willing to give up an entire ocean for a single drop of water?

However, Suo Jia had his own thoughts regarding this. He was currently only eight years old, and if he could learn the Meditation Technique now, at the very least, he would have a four year advantage over others! At least he would be able to stand at the very top of his peers in the initial stages of ice magic.

Suo Jia was interested in setting a record and leaving behind a legacy. He wanted to become the youngest person to learn the Meditation Technique and Ice Arrow and become the youngest Apprentice Mage. He wanted the power to defeat all the opponents at the same level as him six months from now and stand above his peers. He wanted to become the most powerful water mage in this generation!

In actuality, Suo Jia did not actually care too much about his future mage prospects. Since the day he enrolled in Holy Light Academy, Suo Jia had never thought of becoming a great mage until now. Suo Jia's initial

goal of becoming a brave warrior like his father was still firm and resolute.

After returning the book to the librarian, Suo Jia rushed home, finished his dinner, and went to bed early. He did not carry out the Exhaustion Training Method. One reason was because his magic power had not fully recovered yet, the other reason was that tomorrow was Sunday and he needed to carry out his street stall business.

The next morning, Suo Jia carried the tent and prepared to head out. This time, Suo Jia did not prepare to take his mother with him. The Sixth Sister who was in charge of travel preparations accompanied Suo Jia.

When they finished packing and were about to leave, his mother appeared in front of the door and pleaded sincerely, "Suo Jia, Mother is really bored staying at home everyday. Let Mother accompany you!"

"Agah!" Upon hearing his mother's words, Suo Jia couldn't help but let out a weird exclamation. The reason he did not bring his mother was because he was afraid she would be tired. However, he had not imagined that letting her stay at home would make her feel bored instead!

After a bit of thinking, Suo Jia soon understood. Even though she had a son that was already 8 years old, his mother had given birth to him when she was still very young. Therefore, his mother was currently only 24-25 years old. Since she was still young, being shut at home would definitely make her feel bored.

While thinking, Suo Jia said helplessly, "Fine. If Mother wants to go, then of course I'll welcome you. Are you finished preparing? Let's go!"

"Nn..." Seeing Suo Jia actually agree, the woman immediately nodded her head in excitement without a thread of motherly appearance. In reality, when talking with her 8 year old son, she could have simply commanded him to bring her along with her authority. There was certainly no need to have discussed it.

However, it was exactly because she normally discussed such things with Suo Jia that Suo Jia had developed an independent personality since he was young. It was also the reason why every one of Suo Jia's opinions

and ideas dictated his own will. If it was any other child, if their parents did not approve, would he/she dare to casually test new activation methods? Would any other child use the Exhaustion Training Method at such a young age?

The group of three first headed to the church to pray. After they had arrived once again at the designated spot on the street, they raised the tent. During the past year, Suo Jia had already built up a regular set of customers. There would already be a huge crowd of girls lined up waiting for them when they arrived from praying.

The tent was quickly set up and Suo Jia began to let people enter the tent one by one. His mother stood at the entrance and was in charge of allowing people in while Sixth Sister was responsible for reception. She had somehow managed to produce a ton of leaflets from somewhere and was now distributing them in front of the church on the same street.

When Sixth Sister came back to grab flyers, Suo Jia had quietly asked her. It turned out that... these plans were all organized by Eldest Sister. Since in the future, the location of the business would change to their home, she had naturally wanted to distribute a few leaflets, making sure to bring the regular customers to the new location as well!

Sighing in admiration, Suo Jia shook his head. He casually activated the Moisture Technique and at the same time, he secretly sighed in sorrow. This older sister was really not simple, to have thought of such a method. Perhaps this method was not very brilliant, however Suo Jia had never considered it before.

With the guests entering and exiting one after another, the number of gold coins in Suo Jia's pocket increased. After activating 100 Moisture Techniques, Suo Jia still did not feel drained at all. This level of method of activation really did greatly conserve his spirit power.

After activating 160 Moisture Techniques in a row, at last Suo Jia felt the strain. Not only was he lightheaded, his whole body felt like it was made of soft cotton. Feeling all this made Suo Jia excited; these were the requirements for using the Exhaustion Training Method!

Although Suo Jia had often ran out of spirit power in the past, this was not the same as practicing the Exhaustion Training Method. Entering the state of the Exhaustion Training Method had a set procedure.

Suo Jia's previous 'exhaustion' hadn't been real complete exhaustion. Real 'exhaustion' meant that there wasn't a single remaining trace of power; it only counted if it was completely used up. Otherwise, it would be categorized as 'dried up' and not 'exhausted'!

Utilizing the Exhaustion Training Method requires certain steps: first, low ranked magics have to be cast continuously. Once the low rank magics have exhausted the magic power, you have to cast the highest rank magics you know. Although the activation will obviously not succeed, the activation of higher rank magics flushes out all the few remaining streams of magic power and spirit power within the body.

However, there was one important point that had to be addressed; going beyond was just as bad as falling short. For example, the previous evening, although Suo Jia's magic power had similarly been emptied, there were no benefits to it. Suo Jia not only failed to raise his magic power, he had allowed his magic power to drop. The goal of the Exhaustion Method was to completely drain the body of power until empty, and not go into the negatives. Once it caused harm to the body, it could no longer be called 'exhausting', it was essentially organ failure, and caused harmful damage!

After dispersing all the customers, Suo Jia instructed his mother to not let any others inside for the moment. He faced the ground in front of him and consecutively activated the Swamp Technique numerous times. Even though none of the activations were successful, his body's spirit power and magic power were quickly decreasing with each attempted activation.

Finally, the instant that the thirteenth Swamp Technique activation had failed, Suo Jia felt as if he was floating. Of course, Suo Jia was not really floating and simply at that sort of sensation. His body had already collapsed onto the floor from the exhaustion of magic power.

The fact that he could feel himself floating up in the air verified this

point. Suo Jia's spirit power had already been completely exhausted; it was completely used up. Otherwise, he wouldn't have the feeling of floating in the air. As for magic power, he had completely exhausted it earlier when he had activated the Swamp Technique for the third time.

Exhausting magic power only made the body weak, it didn't actually exhaust spirit power. Only by continuing to consume spirit power itself will the spirit power eventually enter a state of exhaustion.

Trying with all his effort to endure the dizzy feeling as if he was floating in the sky, Suo Jia felt like vomiting; however he could not even feel his body's physical existence, so even if he wanted to vomit, he had no way of doing so. This type of extreme feeling of suffering was so painful that Suo Jia just wanted to die on the spot.

Chapter 35: A Ghost in Broad Daylight

Perhaps there are people who still do not understand the feeling of completely exhausting one's spirit power. Basically, if you spend a whole night f*cking 20 girls in succession, or pull all-nighters for an entire week because of a game, you will understand the feeling of exhausting spirit or magic power.

Although using the Exhaustion Training Method allows one to advance by leaps and bounds within a short period of time, one must realize that like everything else in this world, there is a price that must be paid. The Exhaustion Training Method's biggest deficit is that with each use, hellish torture must be endured for up to an hour.

After a long time, Suo Jia was finally able to regain feeling in his limbs and body again. It was in his state of extreme fatigue that thin streams of magical power began to diffuse from every pore throughout his body, gradually condensing and joining together.

Finally, after Suo Jia once again woke up with his entire body completely sore, he discovered that his inner magic and spirit power had been completely replenished. After closer inspection, Suo Jia discovered that his magic and spirit power had been increased by 20% after using the Exhaustion Training Method just once!

Suo Jia was shocked to feel the surging magical and spiritual power within his body. He was totally dumbfounded; what was this? According to the book, the first use of the Exhaustion Training Method should only have raised his powers by 10%. However, now it turned out that it had advanced by 20%?

Actually, this is perfectly normal. The main reason why Suo Jia managed to bring out a significant 20% increase in spirit and magic power is because he is still only 8 years old! He is currently at an age of rapid growth and has unmeasurable potential. At his age, it doesn't matter what he practices, since the result will still be much greater than that of an adult's. An even more extreme comparison can be represented

with an old man; if both a child and an old man use the same training methods, the child will naturally improve more.

Doubling up one's magic and spirit power is only applicable to adults and older individuals. However, Suo Jia's case is definitely not as simple as just doubling his powers. Even if he were to increase his power by two folds, so what?

After contemplating for a while, Suo Jia still could not figure out the reasoning behind this. Not daring to think for too long, Suo Jia notified his mother to let the next person come in. Quickly... one after another guests walked in to accept the Moisture Technique and then went out with a full smile.

After repetitively using the Moisture Technique, Suo Jia subconsciously felt that something was missing. After thinking for a long time, Suo Jia suddenly remembered: ever since he had refused to help the girl in red and her sisters when they had visited three months ago, they hadn't visited since. They couldn't possibly be angry, could they?

Recalling the girl in red as well as her pleasant sisters, Suo Jia could not help but furrow his brows. He could barely take care of himself three months ago, how could he have possibly considered taking care of those girls? Now, however, sister Wen Ya had already given him a big house, and he was no longer lacking in gold. Most importantly, his ability to make money at present had already become increasingly high.

He had already earned more than 300 gold coins just from this morning. Currently, money did not have much of an influence on Suo Jia's life anymore.

Before he had grasped this new magic casting sequence, Suo Jia's monthly earnings had already reached 2000 gold pieces. After mastering this new technique coupled with the Exhaustion Training Method, Suo Jia's monthly income would only increase exponentially. After the wooden house finished its construction and the beautification center was completed, then income would no longer be a problem.

After half a year, Suo Jia had managed to ensure a stable lifestyle

through hard work. Only now did he finally have the the privilege of helping out those that were pitiful. Previously, even if he wanted to, he couldn't!

Moreover, Suo Jia did not believe that people of this world deserved such mercy. Nobody was required help out another person, since everyone had to make a living. In his opinion, the only way of helping each other was through exchanges. Suo Jia did not want to help a person free of charge. The reason he had helped Wen Ya lose weight was because he had to return the favor!

Suo Jia had never owed anyone before; if he did he would pay it back as soon as possible. In the same way, he did not allow others to owe him either. Since birth, he had lived with his mother without any help from others. In Suo Jia's mind, buying things required money. If so, then if someone took Suo Jia's things, it was only correct that he/she paid. It didn't make sense for Suo Jia to have to pay for things when others were able to get them for free, right?

Perhaps Suo Jia was being stingy, and even a bit picky. However, this was a natural result of the life he had experienced; if no person had ever been sympathetic enough to help him and his mother in the past, how could he possibly pity a person enough to help?

Suo Jia naturally became perplexed while pondering over this. That group of girls was extremely pitiful, however the price they offered to pay was really too low. As Suo Jia had previously told them, earning only 10 gold per day was an amount that was entirely unpractical.

It has to be understood that these girls did not only require moisturization for their faces. Under the merciless roasting of flames, their entire bodies had to be moisturized. Although there were only 36 girls (this included the girl with red clothes), this was still a huge project. Suo Jia could not find a good enough reason to undertake this work. Unless there was enough compensation, pity was simply not enough for him to consider helping.

While Suo Jia was quietly thinking, his surroundings abruptly became

silent. Soon after, there was a storm of messy footstep sounds, and a disturbance could be heard occurring outside the entrance.

Wrinkling his forehead in confusion, Suo Jia didn't know what was going on outside. Speaking logically, he was currently under Wen Ya's protection. There shouldn't be any problems. Could it possibly be hoodlums?

While contemplating, the tent's entrance opened up and a few fiery red figures quietly walked in. One, two, three, four, five, six individuals. One of them was wearing a red cloak and gave off a murderous intent. The individual silently bowed his/her head and stood in front of Suo Jia.

Suo Jia inspected the fiery red cloak, and noticed that it also had gold threaded embroidery of a blazing totem on it. Suo Jia carefully stood up, unsure of who this individual was or where he/she came from. What he could confirm was that the disturbance outside had been caused by the cold murderous intent emitted by these people, causing everyone to piss their pants from horror.

Although he was extremely scared, as a member of the Holy Light Academy, he did not really fear what the individual was going to do. In Suo Jia's opinion, even if the individual was a hoodlum, he/she would only ask for money. As long as he gave money, anything would be resolved, since there was no previous enmity between the two.

Moreover, with Wen Ya supporting him, Suo Jia was also quite confident [that nothing major would occur]. Even if these were some random hoodlums, so what? With Suo Jia's relationship with Wen Ya, if those random hoodlums dared to act, they would not be alive to see the next sunrise! The friendship between Suo Jia and Wen Ya lasted as long as he helped her maintain her current beauty. She would definitely not allow Suo Jia to encounter any problems!

Thinking this far, Suo Jia furrowed his brows and bluntly said, "If you are a customer, then please line up one at a time. If you are looking for trouble, then I am afraid to tell you that you've come to the wrong place. This isn't some place for you guys to make trouble."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the six in red cloaks did not say anything. After a period of silence, just as Suo Jia was about to yell at them again, the six in red cloaks actually all fell to their knees in unison. The instant they knelt down, Suo Jia discovered that there were clear streams of water running down their red cloaks, dripping onto the soft ground.

"Younger brother Suo Jia, we beg of you to save us. Please, we beg you..." Just as Suo Jia had been shocked into a daze by their sudden changes[in demeanor], a pitiful pleading voice rang out.

Seeing the red forms kneeling in front of him, Suo Jia wrinkled his brow, and once again sat down on the ground: "Who are you guys? Why do you want me to save you? And how am I supposed to do it?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the six bodies in red cloaks began to tremble and then....the six red cloaks stood up from their positions. Under Suo Jia's gaze, the six red cloaks simultaneously removed their hoods. Six faces wearing grieved expressions full of tears appeared in front of Suo Jia.

"Heavens!" When Suo Jia saw the faces of the six in front of him, he involuntarily cried out in shock. What...what was this? Did ghosts haunt in broad daylight too?

Chapter 36: To Advance By Leaps And Bounds

Seeing Suo Jia's fearful expression, the tears of the six red cloaks fell more violently. Each and every one of them looked at Suo Jia with big watery eyes that were both pleading and bitter, not saying a single word.

Suo Jia slowly calmed down after seeing this scene. Looking over them carefully, Suo Jia's entire body began to shake violently. These six people in red cloaks were people he knew!

That's right, these six people in red cloaks were those amongst the group of 36 fire wind warrior sisters. The one Suo Jia was most familiar with was the girl in red. She was amongst them, but even recognizing her took Suo Jia a long time.

Compared to three months ago, their appearances didn't change much but... their faces that were originally covered with a hint of healthy red blush had completely changed.

After three months, those spiderweb-like red lines on their face had all cracked open, exposing the flesh under their skins on all sides of their faces. It seemed that after a long period of exposure to fire, the flesh under those cracks had already turned purple in color. The slightest hint of blood and colorless fluid could be seen flowing out from the cracks. Even ghosts weren't as scary as them!

The six faces Suo Jia saw in front of him were uglier and more disgusting than a ghost's. When compared with the sweet and charming girls from three months ago, Suo Jia could not believe that these girls were the same people. The difference was much too large!

Swallowing his saliva with difficulty, Suo Jia said in a rough voice: "What have you girls been doing the past three months? Why didn't you come to get moisturized? If you had continued to do so, your conditions wouldn't be so disastrous."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the girls cried even harder, and one by one, they

began to wail loudly. After a long time, the red clad girl opened her mouth to reply, “Our lecturer brought us to the magic beast forest to enter a 3 month long strength training. Thus, we turned into these states. You definitely have to save us!”

Laughing bitterly, Suo Jia said helplessly, “How do you want me to save you guys? Your skins have already been wounded to this extent; it is not something that can be recovered with a Moisture Technique. Also, I’m sure that the conditions of your bodies are not any better than that of your faces!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the six girls suddenly began to tremble. It was very obvious that what Suo Jia had said was correct. Although they had been wearing clothes to cover their bodies [when exposed to the fires], how much use could clothes really be? Even though the states of their bodies were much better than the states of their faces, the skin on their bodies had also completely split open.

In reality, the reason they had worn cloaks was not for the sake of covering their faces. Once the skin on their bodies had been completely split open, they could no longer wear clothes that stuck closely to their skins. Even clothes made from soft fabrics would irritate their wounds with unbearable pain. The most important point was that once the fabrics mixed with the blood, the clothes would stick to their skins. At that point, if they wanted to remove their clothes, they would have to rip off their skin too!

The people outside didn’t know, but in reality, underneath their large cloaks, they weren’t wearing a stitch of clothing. Although fire-wind warriors were the continent’s strongest existences, they were forced to pay unimaginable prices to achieve their power!

Coldly looking at the six girls in front of him, Suo Jia said indifferently. “It’s not that I’m unwilling to help you, but with my current magic power, I can only heal one wound with the power contained in one Moisture Technique spell. You girls calculate it yourselves: how many wounds do you have all over your bodies? How can I possibly help you?”

“Moreover, even if I was willing to help you, so what? My power alone still has limits. At most, I can slow down the wounds’ progress. Ultimately, it will still result in your current appearances!” Suo Jia continued.

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the six sisters were at a loss. It was true... even if Suo Jia was willing to wholeheartedly help them, he alone would not be able to fix the situation. Perhaps Suo Jia could help maintain one girl’s appearance; even if his power was enough, helping two girls was the limit. However, there were actually 36 sisters; how could he split his powers?

If Suo Jia simultaneously looked after all 36 sisters, then it would be as Suo Jia had stated previously. Even though he would be able to delay the wounds’ progression, under their training circumstances, they would soon revert back to their current appearances. It was only the difference of it happening slightly earlier or slightly later.

Seeing the six dumbstruck girls, Suo Jia let out a sigh, and said helplessly. “Today, I will help cast the Moisture Technique once on each of you sisters. I will not accept your money. Also, in the future, you should not look for me here, as I will no longer set up a vendor’s booth at this location.”

When they heard Suo Jia, the six girls desperately looked at one another. They did not accept Suo Jia’s kindness; instead they stood up like zombies and left the tent silently. They understand that the situation was pointless, as one Moisture Technique would only make them feel comfortable and reduce one crack only; there was not much use behind it.

Seeing the six girls leave blankly, Suo Jia closed his eyes in pain. Even though he pitied them in his heart, Suo Jia could not help them for no real cause or reason. They lost their appearances to trade for formidable power, and if Suo Jia helped them, he would not gain anything from it. This would be too unfair!

Even if Suo Jia actually did want to help, he was unable to. With just him alone, helping 36 girls would not show any results even if he was

worked to death. Since that was the case, he might as well dissipate their vain attempts. If they didn't have any hopes, then they would be able to live their lives with less regrets.

After the six girls had left, Suo Jia once again continued his work. The rest of the day went by smoothly, but Suo Jia's heart was unable to calm down. He kept thinking back to his encounter with the group of beautiful girls, and Suo Jia could not help but feel pity for them.

With his new model of activation, Suo Jia recorded that within the entire day, he had moisturized 1000 customers and earned 1000 gold. In only one day, he had earned enough money for a month's worth of living expenses. When Sixth Sister carried the huge bag of gold coins back home, all the girls including Eldest Sister could not help but gape at it with their mouths wide open. This money had been earned even faster than if it had been stolen!

However, the puzzling thing was that despite earning so much money, Suo Jia was strangely depressed. After finishing his plentiful dinner, Suo Jia returned to his room very early, and locked himself inside. Nobody knew what he was doing. Everyone thought that Suo Jia was simply tired, and left him be.

However in reality, Suo Jia was not tired. In fact, because his spirit power and magic power had been raised greatly by the Exhaustion Training Method, despite activating 1000 Moisture Techniques in succession today, he did not feel the slightest bit tired. The reason he was depressed was because of the pitiful six sisters in red. He could only sigh as he remembered how powerless he was in front of those girls.

What should be mentioned is that the Exhaustion Training Method cannot be practiced in succession; doing so would cause the body to collapse. Performing it once a week was the most reasonable pace, and also provided the best results. So throughout the day, Suo Jia had relied only on his first use of the Exhaustion Training Method.

The night passed uneventfully. The second morning, since Suo Jia had slept early, he naturally woke up early. Walking onto the balcony, he

faced the rising sun, and stretched his waist lazily. Seeing the lush green trees in the distance, Suo Jia's mood finally improved a bit.

As he was enjoying his time, Suo Jia suddenly discovered that in the direction of the fake mountain, it looked like there were many people moving. Moreover... that place seemed to have a pile of products. What were they doing?

Pondering for a bit, Suo Jia understood the situation. A few days ago, he had ordered Eldest Sister to contact a carpenter and build a wooden house. It seemed that the construction had already begun! While thinking this, Suo Jia impatiently changed his clothes, went downstairs, and flew towards the construction area.

Arriving in front of the construction area, he discovered that those swaying figures he had seen from the distance were surprisingly the six maid sisters and his mother. At that moment, the seven females were standing next to the construction site, gesturing at the site while talking. As for the workers, they had not yet arrived. The morning was still young, and the earliest they would begin arriving would be after breakfast time.

Seeing Suo Jia arrive, his mother's eyes lit up, and said happily. "Suo Jia, this idea of yours is really a great one. Living in a wooden house is both healthy and refreshing, and with such an environment, it is really too awesome. You definitely have to let Mother stay in the room facing the flowing waterfall!"

Chapter 37: If You Say So

“Ah!” Hearing his mother’s words, Suo Jia opened his mouth in amazement, and dazedly said: “What are you girls thinking? The reason I wanted to build this wooden house was not for people to live in, but to open a beautician site!”

His mother unhappily rolled his eyes at him upon hearing his words. “You silly child, sometimes you are frighteningly intelligent, but other times you are just so dense. Let me ask you: with such a small location, how many customers would you be able to accommodate? Where would you make everyone wait?”

“This...” Hearing his mother’s words, Suo Jia could not help but glance at their surroundings. The construction area had a man-made lake on one side, a fake mountain waterfall on another, and the other two sides had both grass and man-made woods. The room was to be built on the empty space in the exact center of this environment. Aside from the house, there really weren’t any other available spaces for customers to wait.

Seeing Suo Jia’s embarrassed expression, his mother continued. “Think carefully; including you, there are eight of us here. That white villa is so grand, and with such few of us living together, it’s too quiet and uncomfortable. It’s also such a waste of space.”

At this point, his mother’s eyes lit up, “The first level of the white villa consists of an enormous lounge capable of fitting 400-500 people. The second level is also spacious with dozens of rooms as well as a large parlor that could be used as your place of work. Isn’t this villa perfectly suited for your purposes?”

Here, Eldest Sister also piped in, “I also agree with your mother’s words. Aside from that huge lounge on the first floor, the surrounding gardens accommodate customers as well. Even if there were 500 people, it would not seem crowded at all. In other words, if you use the white villa as your base of operations, then we will have the ability to accommodate up to nearly 1000 people!”

“Wa!” Hearing both his mother’s and Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia shouted out excitedly, “This is really too wonderful. If we do it that way, then the amount of customers will no longer be a problem. I can moisturize at least 1000 afflicted people per day, meaning that I could potentially earn 1000 gold a day. Heavens, we’ll be rich!”

“Haha...” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Eldest Sister laughed as she shook her head. “Young Master, I have a few suggestions. I wonder if you would be willing to hear them?”

“Suggestions!” Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia’s eyes quickly lit up. Suo Jia greatly admired Eldest Sister’s abilities. After all, he was still young and inexperienced, and didn’t have much knowledge about these types of things. If Eldest Sister was bringing up a suggestion, then she definitely had some good ideas.

With Suo Jia’s urging, Eldest Sister smiled. “With Young Master’s natural talent and abilities together with Young Master’s and Miss Wen Ya’s relationship, I can ascertain that Young Master’s future will be splendid and glorious. You will enter the aristocrats’ circle for sure!”

As Eldest Sister finished these words, Suo Jia’s mother happily nodded her head afterwards. “That’s right, that’s right; it is exactly so. My precious son will definitely have an extraordinary future!”

Respectfully nodding her head at Suo Jia’s mother, Eldest Sister continued: “Since this is so, if Young Master has so many extraordinary abilities that others don’t have, I recommend that this beautician service’s standards should be higher. It is not necessary to accept 1000 customers every day. Actually, we should not simply focus on the normal citizens; we should be seeking to earn money from the aristocrats. While earning this money, we can also build our relations with the aristocrats for the sake of allowing Young Master to enter their circle and build his foundation there.”

At this point, Eldest Sister’s eyes glowed even brighter and was almost breathless from excitement. She continued, “This area is very famous. The area’s sites are tied to Holy Light’s foundation, to the point where we

could accept fees from those just coming to sightsee. Thus, anyone able to visit this place could definitely be considered wealthy and respectable!”

Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia could not help but furrow his brows. “Eldest Sister, isn’t this a bit too influential?”

“Influential?” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Eldest Sister suddenly laughed. “If you think that this is influential, then I cannot refute it. However, I am simply discussing it from a business viewpoint; I am only considering this for the business’ sake. I am responsible for stating my suggestions, rejecting or accepting them is Young Master’s decision!”

Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia swallowed his words, and without a sound, he gestured at Eldest Sister to continue speaking. Receiving his permission, Eldest Sister continued. “In short, my suggestion is that this place shouldn’t become just another common marketplace, but rather Holy Light City’s most elegant and luxurious area. In the future, it should become the gathering place for aristocrats. Those able to enter here must have a symbol of their status and privileges. Common people would not have the qualifications to set a single step in.”

Speaking up to this point, Eldest Sister’s confidence grew, and said, “As long as we set up such a form, then Young Master’s status in the aristocrats’ circle will also be set up. As long as you maintain good relationships with the customers, then within Holy Light City, you will be able to do whatever you please, and be well-known everywhere!”

Speaking in excitement, Eldest Sister looked straight at Suo Jia with a strong gaze. “Money, privileges, influence; no matter what you want, it will be there. If there is anything you want to do, it will become a reality. Is such a scenario bad?”

“How is that possible!” Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia could not help but shout out. Even Suo Jia’s mother had an incredulous expression on her face.

Seeing Suo Jia’s and his mother’s expressions, Eldest Sister laughed and said, “When I was receiving my training at a young age, this idea was drilled deep into my mind repeatedly: this world is controlled by men,

while women are in control of the men!”

“This can’t be!” Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia violently shook his head, “How can women control men? If it’s true, then why did father leave?”

Suo Jia’s mother looked down sadly upon hearing this, revealing a sad expression. But Eldest Sister was not emotionally moved in the slightest bit. She just stood there silently and looked at Suo Jia. Eldest Sister quietly said, “Even if the wife can’t control the husband, I ask you, can your mother control you? Are you going to listen to your mother’s words?”

Suo Jia replied angrily, “What nonsense are you talking about? Of course I will listen to my mother’s words! But what does this have anything to do with women controlling men?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s childish reply, Eldest Sister smiled and said, “So are you trying to say that your mother is not a woman?”

“That...” Suo Jia finally realized after listening to Eldest Sister. The ones that were controlling the men were not only their wives, but also their mothers, daughters, and grandmothers...

Seeing the sudden change in Suo Jia’s expression, Eldest Sister smiled and continued, “Think about it, Young Master. If your mother begged you to help someone by giving him 1000 gold, would you refuse?”

Suo Jia finally understood completely what Eldest Sister was saying. This world... was really controlled by men, but in the end, men were still being controlled by women; if not the wife, then the mother. If the mother also couldn’t, then the daughter. There were no men who were not under the control of women. If there really were, they couldn’t be considered human.

Seeing that Suo Jia finally understood, Eldest Sister continued, “And have you ever thought of this: If our customers are the commoners, then we can only receive one gold coin per client. A payment of ten gold coins is out of the question. In such a case, we can’t earn much even if we worked to death! There is absolutely no benefit. But if we serve the aristocrats, this will not be a problem.”

“We will Hire the best designers and build the highest-grade work spaces possible in the best location. The work space must be at least 100 square meters to allow for numerous luxurious leather chairs and expensive couches we plan to add. We can also allow carriages to enter the villa and go to the work space directly.”

“Next, we can consider the garden next to the main building; beside the garden is a swimming pool. Now picture this: Holy Light maids lining the walkway to the entrance and standing by the front door. Each of them will be wearing unique, specially designed headdresses that compliment their youthful vigor. They will, whether they like it or not, give guests a nice “Welcome!” readily with an authentic Holy Light accent! They will also have to be very respectful [to the guests].”

“We will build several recreation rooms with the highest quality materials, and also add ornaments made of pure gold. To enter any one of these rooms, one will have to pay a small fee of a couple dozen gold coins. We will also add another kitchen to the house, except this one will supply food to the guests all 24 hours of a day. To even eat a single piece of bread will require a price of several gold coins, let alone a luxury banquet. There is only one way to describe this lifestyle — Luxurious!”

“The customers who have entered will have to wear either platinum or amethyst jewelry. Anyone entering with a gold necklace will find themselves utterly put to shame, too embarrassed to even greet anyone else. With this kind of beautician venue, how much do you think it will cost to get even a single Moisture Technique done?”

At this, Suo Jia answered, “No matter how you look at it, it must cost at least 10 gold coins.”

The maid replied, “Ten gold coins? That is only the beginning price! 100 and above gold coins could still be considered inexpensive. Even those who think it is expensive wouldn’t ask for a discount. You have to understand the aristocrat’s pride competitive spirit. If they are willing to pay a 10 gold entrance fee, they wouldn’t care even if they had to pay an additional 90 gold coins for anything else!”

“Do you know what it means to be called an aristocrat? An aristocrat is someone who buys the most expensive things, even if they are not necessarily the best! That is why the slogan for our beautician is -- Not necessarily the best, but definitely the most expensive!”

Chapter 38: The Building Under the Lake

Suo Jia stood dumbfounded after hearing Big Sister's speech. However... even if he did not understand the meaning behind Big Sister's words, he could confirm one point; everything was for his own good.

With this in mind, Suo Jia smiled wryly, and interrupted Big Sister's advice, "Alright alright... you don't need to continue elaborating further. Regarding this matter, I leave everything in your hands. You will be responsible for everything; just do whatever you want to do. You know the limit of my abilities, so you decide how everything will be done!"

After hearing Suo Jia give all of the responsibilities for this matter to her, Eldest Sister got so excited that she almost jumped up. As a maid, she had no right to speak up. A maid's privileges were all granted by the master. Now however, Young Master had given her such important responsibilities; this was already the best thing she could ever get as a maid. She finally had the opportunity to use her talents to the fullest.

After assigning all of the responsibilities to Eldest Sister, Suo Jia went to eat breakfast as if nothing had happened, and then rushed to school. Although he was currently unable to perform the Meditation Technique, Suo Jia knew it was about time for him to start learning and grasping how to use the Meditation Technique. However, before he could use the Meditation Technique, he had to first understand how to perform it.

It took Suo Jia only one hour to understand how to perform the Meditation Technique. In actuality, meditation was not a magic spell, nor was it a way to cultivate the mind. Instead, it was a type of practice that resided in between two different realms. The effects of the meditation depended on the spiritual power and mental state. Simply having either high spirit power or an advanced mental state was useless; achieving the desired effect, required mastery of both these realms.

Upon fulfilling both of the prerequisites and entering the meditative state, a mage with strong spiritual power will rapidly gather tremendous amounts of magic power. The stronger the mage's spirit power and the

more profound his/her mental state are, the better the results will be.

Meditation is divided into ten levels. The first level of support is Rank 1 Magic, the second level support is Rank 2 Magic, and so on. For example, one can only cast the mysterious ice arrows magic if they have reached the first level of meditation. Suo Jia could only cast the Moisture and Swamp Techniques because these are considered rankless. One can still cast these spells as long as he/she knows the method.

If this is categorized based on the water magic system, then there are 12 different ranks of water magic. But the third rank of water magic, the mysterious attack-type arrows, are in fact only equivalent to a first rank ice magic. It is precisely for this reason that legends claim there are two versions of the ranking system; one version has up to twelve ranks, and the other has only up to ten ranks. Actually these ranks refer to the same category of magic, the only difference being that they have different starting ranks.

Novice Mage Trainee, Elementary Mage, Intermediate Mage, Advanced Mage, Great Mage, Magic Scholar, Great Magic Scholar, Magister, Great Magister and Mage Saint. There are a total of 10 mage titles, with each title corresponding to a certain mage rank. Each mage rank corresponds to his/her rank in meditation as well, but legends claim that there exist mages who exceed the Saint rank – the Mage Deity. However, a legend is only a legend after all, and so this has never been confirmed.

Previously, Suo Jia had never thought that he could learn the Meditation Technique by himself. However after yesterday's Exhaustion Training Method, he discovered to his surprise that he was already able to cultivate in the early phases of the Meditation Technique!

As stated earlier, the Meditation Technique has two requirements: spirit power and mental state. In terms of spirit power, Suo Jia still had not developed much, but since he practiced the Exhaustion Training Method, spirit power definitely would not be a problem. He could reach the required amount in a short period of time.

Besides spirit power, mental state was another factor. If you cannot

bring yourself to calm your mind and enter the ancient calm yet rippling realm, how can you possibly sense the vast magical elements within?

There are two main parts to the meditation technique. The first half involves clearing the mind to reach a state of nothingness, because only by allowing the mind to reach an unworldly and selfless realm of nothingness can one enter the meditative state. The second half involves thoughts. Since thoughts influence spirit power, this also determines the effects of the Meditation Technique. An extraordinary heart combined with both of these halves allows a mage to better understand the magical elements. What Suo Jia needed to do now was to enter the meditative state.

In order to reach a selfless and empty state, [the surroundings] must be tranquil, and the lighting must be dark. The less disturbances there are, the easier it is to enter the meditative state. This is why it is crucial to have a special place to cultivate meditation.

After enduring through an entire day, as soon as classes had ended, Suo Jia leapt out of the school grounds and raced home. In order to use the Meditation Technique, he needed a basement. There were no other places besides a basement that would be dark and quiet enough for meditation. This concept was not something Suo Jia had thought of, but something that all mages had practiced since ancient times.

Once Suo Jia had rushed to the wood cabin, the few construction workers had already finished the building's foundation. Seeing this, Suo Jia could not help but smile bitterly. Unless they pushed over the foundation, the basement would probably be impossible to build.

Just as Suo Jia was despairing over this, Eldest Sister walked over from a distance. Seeing Suo Jia's face of despair, Eldest Sister asked in confusion, "Young Master, what is wrong? Is there something you are unsatisfied with? If there is, then please say it now. Since construction has just started, making any changes now is easy."

Hearing Eldest Sister's words, Suo Jia's heart jumped, and said hurriedly, "It's like this Eldest Sister: I need a dark, undisturbed place where nobody

can interrupt my training. Therefore, I wanted to dig a basement under the wooden cabin, you see...”

Knitting her brows, Eldest Sister asked hesitantly, “Young Master, do you want to build a basement underneath the wood cabin, or do you simply want a dark and secluded area to train?”

Suo Jia replied to Eldest Sister’s question with little hesitation, “I originally wanted a training area, but I recall that the white villa doesn’t have a basement, right?”

“Oh, you!” Charmingly rolling her eyes at Suo Jia, Eldest Sister rebuked, “If Young Master needs anything, please just give me the command. In reality, it is entirely unnecessary to construct a basement. I can recommend a better place; I know this whole area like the back of my hand.”

While saying this, she turned and headed towards the direction of the man-made lake. Upon arriving at the opening, she said, “Follow me; see if this location will satisfy your needs.”

Suo Jia followed behind Eldest Sister in doubt, and the two of them eventually arrived at the forest next to the man-made lake. Even after living in this mansion for so long, Sou Jia had not ever known that there was actually a tower in such an isolated location!

The tower had no windows, only two sliding doors for the entrance. Eldest Sister withdrew some keys from her person and opened the doors. Everything within the tower immediately appeared in Sou Jia’s line of sight.

The tower was about 4-5 meters high, and the inside of it was very large, occupying a space of over a hundred square feet. From the looks of it, it appeared to be similar to a training area. It was only empty space; there was absolutely nothing there.

Wordlessly, Eldest Sister carried the set of keys, then walked to the opposite wall, and knocked it lightly. At that moment... the scenic picture on the wall rose with a creaking sound, revealing a passage leading downwards. The passage had magic lamps lining both sides, lighting the

passage with a faint red glow, and giving it an exceptional sense of warmth.

Leading in front, Eldest Sister said warmly, “Young Master, did you ever think it strange that there would be such a large man-made lake built in this area? In terms of bathing, there is already a swimming pool!”

“Eh! That...” Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia thought about it for a bit, then guessed, “Was it not created for the sake of a scenic view?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s reply, Eldest Sister laughed. “What you have said is only one aspect. However, if the man-made lake was meant to be a scenic view, it would count as a type of water scenery, and would then be redundant with the swimming pool. In reality, the man-made lake’s existence has a very deep reasoning behind it.”

Speaking up to this point, Eldest Sister stopped in her tracks, and waited for Suo Jia to catch up before once again striding forwards. As she walked, she said, “About 20 years ago, the western aristocrats presented a few bottles of fine liquor that had very unique flavors to Duke Wen Sha as gifts. However, these bottles could not be stored at room temperature, because if the temperature was too high, the liquor would turn sour. The bottles could only be stored for long periods of time in an environment below 20°C!”

“However, because of Holy Light’s geographical position, although it is never blazing hot, there are still four distinct seasons. The temperatures during the summer can easily reach 40°C, so for the sake of storing these fine liquors, the Duke had built a man-made lake. The purpose of this lake was precisely to control the temperature of the storehouse below it.”

Chapter 39: Mental Training

While chatting along the way, the two people finally arrived at the storehouse's main area. Eldest Sister indicated for Suo Jia to wait for a bit, then used the keys to enter the main entrance of the storehouse.

When the two thick and heavy doors opened, an enormous underground world appeared before Suo Jia. The first scene that he saw was a huge hall that could easily fit a thousand people inside. The hall was filled with pillars of gold and jade. This area was already 20+ meters below the ground, and because the lake was right above, the place would have collapsed ages ago without sufficient underlying support.

Within the hall were some wooden shelves. Although the wooden shelves were currently empty, Suo Jia could imagine that these shelves were originally packed with wine jugs. After the wines had all been consumed, only emptiness was left on the shelves.

Seeing the chaotic surroundings, Suo Jia wrinkled his brows, "This place is both messy and dirty. When you're free, find people to come clean it up; otherwise it cannot be used."

Smiling, Eldest Sister nodded, "This is no problem. If Young Master desires it, I can immediately find people to clean it up. At the latest, I will be able to get the place cleaned in three days."

After saying this, Eldest Sister knit her brows and continued, "However, with just us six sisters, I'm afraid we will not be able to clean such a large area. Therefore, tomorrow I will hire some workers to come clean it. If Young Master wants to use it for a long period of time, I recommend Young Master to personally go purchase or hire some maids to maintain this place in the future."

Suo Jia nodded, however as he had not yet decided whether or not he would use this place, he did not reply, and simply continued to stroll around the large space. Honestly, being in such a large space alone would actually be slightly frightening. Although all of this was in accordance to what Suo Jia had requested, he was still a bit reluctant to come here

regularly.

After touring the area for a bit, Suo Jia had finally finished examining the space. This large area was about 1000 square feet. The surrounding walls split into hundreds of storage rooms. The rooms were not large, and could fit about two large wooden shelves, which were probably used to store wine jugs.

While Suo Jia was observing this, Eldest Sister laughed, "If Young Master had not reminded me of this, I would have completely forgotten about it. Even though the majority of the wines have already been brought out and consumed, there should still be some left over right now. I'm not completely sure of the exact amounts; Young Master should come check them out with me!"

Hearing about the remaining wines, Suo Jia could not help but get excited. Since he was so young, he had not yet drank wine before. He wanted to try and experience what wine tasted like. Now that he not only had wine, but extremely expensive wine at his disposal, Suo Jia definitely had to taste it.

Quickly walking to one of the rooms in the corner, he opened the room's door. Suddenly, a space of approximately 100 meters appeared before Suo Jia's eyes. Within the room there were rows and rows of shelves, and on top of those shelves were wine barrels the size of a human head. Roughly estimating, there were perhaps a thousand barrels!

The wine jugs there were not the same as those sold outside. The ones sold outside could fit ten of these wine jugs inside them. If all of the wine in this room was added together, it would be equivalent to only 10 barrels of wine bought from the outside.

"I was right after all, there really is some left over. Although there isn't much here, these are all top quality wines costing in the thousands!" Seeing the room full of wine, Eldest Sister excitedly shouted.

Glancing at Eldest Sister with hesitation, Suo Jia asked, "What? Are these wines that expensive? That can't be, these were brewed from grain right?"

Rolling her eyes at Suo Jia, Eldest sister rebuked, “Young Master, rare things will always be more expensive. This wine originates from the west, making it terribly expensive; after all, we are in the east. Young Master, think about it: If these jugs of wine were not precious, would the owner build such a large cellar underneath a lake for them?”

Completely indulged in the wooden barrels, Eldest sister delightedly said, “You shouldn’t look down on the small size of these barrels; the price of one barrel is not something that a normal person can afford! In actuality, just one small bottle of this can sell for at least ten thousand gold!”

Arriving at this point, Eldest Sister’s eyes suddenly lit up. She clapped her hands loudly together and said, “I know what to do! I was worried that we wouldn’t have any luxury products to enhance the style and taste of our beautification center. Now it’s no longer a problem; with wine like this, even if we wanted to deny that we were a luxury center, we wouldn’t be able to. The only problem is that our stock is limited, so we have to be cautious with our usage.”

Looking at Eldest Sister with a baffled expression, Suo Jia replied in confusion, “Since this wine is so precious, can’t we simply bring over a batch during the winter from the west? Either way, we have this cellar to store it, so it shouldn’t be a problem, right?”

Bitterly smiling, Eldest Sister shook her head and said, “It would be great if it was really that simple. You have to understand that aside the fact that this wine originated from a precious and rare source, if you actually did manage to purchase this wine, you would still need to travel across many greater trade routes before finally arriving at our Holy Light Empire. Now you should have a better understanding of the prices of these wines right?”

“Greater trade routes!” Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Suo Jia’s eyes momentarily flashed. It was precisely on these greater trade routes, that Suo Jia’s father and his companions traveled on, never again returning.

The greater trade routes were the world’s most flourishing business

routes, and they were the only channels between the east and west. The thousands of miles the routes extended for were filled with thieves, mercenaries, and knights. It could be said that this route was where all of the world's strongest people gathered!

The most powerful mages from Holy Light City were only shrimps compared to those on the greater trade routes. The greater trade routes were where billions of elites gathered from around the world. This was the paradise within every warrior's dreams; if they did not encounter the greater trade routes even once within their lifetimes, then they could not rest in peace even if they died. Being recognized as warrior that had traveled along these trade routes was something recognized worldwide.

Going on the greater trade routes was one of the objectives that Suo Jia strived to reach. Once Suo Jia believed that he was powerful enough, then he would move on to travel along the greater trade routes. This was firstly because of his own military dream as a warrior, and secondly, because he wanted to find his father to bring him back home.

Suo Jia had first begun to understand the greater trade routes from the stories his mother had told him since he was young. By now, he was already extremely familiar with them. Delivering products along the greater trade routes was extremely difficult. Even if a person managed to successfully go through alone without any merchandise, it was already a feat to be extremely proud of. This was exactly why the fine wines, which had traveled along the greater trade routes, were so precious and expensive. These wines were no longer just ordinary wines!

While thinking, Suo Jia's blood constantly boiled as he was overwhelmed with emotions. Looking at Eldest Sister with fiery eyes, Suo Jia said heavily, "There will definitely come a day where I will be able to transport a large amount of this type of wine home. Just wait patiently!" After saying these words, Suo Jia immediately turned around, and walked out of the main entrance.

Originally, Suo Jia had been very apprehensive about training here alone. However once Eldest Sister had mentioned the greater trade routes, Suo Jia immediately set down his resolve. How could this place even

compare to the greater trade routes? Compared to the greater trade routes where a life could be lost in an instant, this underground storehouse was like a child's playground. If he couldn't overcome such a minor fear, then how could he possibly even consider traveling the greater trade routes!

After dinner, Suo Jia grabbed a cushion and opened the tower's large doors to enter the underground basement alone. He sat cross-legged in the center of the spacious and empty storehouse area.

The large underground space was pitch-black and quiet; Suo Jia was even able to hear his own heartbeat. Even though he had already gathered his courage, he was still only an eight years old child. Having determination was one thing, however being scared or not was another.

Suo Jia sat there on the ground, timid and trembling in fear. He had difficulty gathering his wits, let alone start training. Frequently looking around at his dark surroundings, Suo Jia kept feeling like there was something watching him, something that could pounce on him at any moment with a gaping mouth that would rip him into tiny pieces.

For the whole night, Suo Jia couldn't train, or even sleep, and tossed about restlessly for the entire evening. Once Eldest Sister and Second Sister together called him to go eat breakfast the next morning, Suo Jia ran for his life out of that dark underground space.

The instant he had raced out of the tower, Suo Jia let out a huge sigh of relief, feeling as if he had just survived a calamity and started a new life. Suddenly starting, Suo Jia angrily slapped himself twice. He had been immature, definitely too immature. In reality, nothing had happened at all that whole evening, and yet he had been scared out of his wits. At this rate, how could he possibly even think of the greater trade routes!

Chapter 40: Entering the State

For the next few days, Suo Jia was completely unable to enter the mental state he needed to. However, despite this, Suo Jia still persevered; every night after finishing dinner, he would enter the dark storehouse underneath the lake alone. Even though he was unable to force himself to not be frightened, after staying in that place every night, his fright decreased.

Finally, after putting everything down and spending two weeks for strictly self-disciplining, Suo Jia was able to overcome his fear. The night that he had managed to overcome his fear was also the night he was able to enter the realm of oblivion.

People are just like this; when you are in an extremely frightening environment, your spirit and mind focus on the thing that you are extremely scared of. Once you overcome this fear, your mind will naturally enter the realm of oblivion instantly. This is why fights to overcome one's self are always the hardest battles.

What should be known is that during the previous week, Suo Jia had once again practiced the Exhaustion Training Method. This time's result was definitely less than the first time's, however Suo Jia was unable to sense this. According to Suo Jia's perception, he had once again raised his spirit power and magic power by 20%, even though in reality, that was not the exact amount.

Once the third weekend's Exhaustion Training Method was completed, Suo Jia could already clearly sense that his spirit power and magic power had risen around 15%. Currently, compared to three weeks ago, Suo Jia had increased his powers by 60%. It should be known that every time he improved, he was using his previous/latest state as a standard of comparison, not using his condition from three weeks ago as the base.

Feeling the strong magic power within his body, Suo Jia was excited beyond what could be expressed in words. His spirit power was high enough, and he had already achieved the correct mental state. This meant

that he could now begin to enter the meditative state.

That evening, Suo Jia sat cross-legged in the center of the storehouse and slowly entered the state of nothingness. Once his soul had reached complete silence and nothingness, Suo Jia gathered all of his spirit power and started to meditate, trying to go all out to perceive his surroundings.

Gradually, within the dark and empty world of meditation, small colorful spots appeared one after another. Each spot of light was only about the size of a single sesame seed. Swiftly and nimbly fluttering around, they wandered and danced around between the heaven and earth like a group of fireflies.

“Are these the magic elements?” Looking at the countless spots of light between the heaven and earth, Suo Jia’s mind was able to glimpse at a trace of understanding.

He silently felt around and explored everything within this mysterious world. After what seemed like only a very short amount of time, he heard Eldest Sister’s footsteps coming from the direction of the door.

As he silently left the meditative state, Suo Jia’s face was covered with tears. The world of meditation was really too beautiful and mysterious. After striving for so long, he could now freely enter the world of meditation!

Suo Jia knew what it meant if he could successfully enter the meditative state. It indicated that he had now officially become a qualified mage. Even though he was only a Novice Mage Trainee, with his current level, he would definitely not have any problems with casting the Ice Sphere Magic.

When Eldest Sister—who had previously come to call Suo Jia to eat left, Suo Jia took a deep breath. He excitedly stretched his right hand forward and started drawing the magic spell formation for the Ice Sphere Magic at lightning speed. Following a faint blue light, a fist-sized ice sphere shot out from the center of the magic spell formation.

“Bang!” An explosive noise resounded in the spacious and empty warehouse. That fist-sized ice sphere broke into pieces upon impact with

the solid wall of the warehouse. Although he could successfully perform the Ice Sphere Technique, Suo Jia knew that the temperature of the ice sphere was not low enough, and the hardness was not at a sufficient level yet. It could hurt people, but the power was still lacking. If the lecturer had been the one to perform the technique, the one that broke would not have been the ice sphere, but the wall!

However, Suo Jia also knew it was impossible; Rome was not built in one day. To be able to perform the Meditation Technique and Ice Sphere Technique by the age of eight was already a miracle. Although he had borrowed the strength of the Exhaustion Training Method, Suo Jia himself knew that he had worked hard.

After ending his experiments, Suo Jia silently walked along the passage, approaching ground level. His family was waiting for him to eat; he couldn't let others wait for too long. However, he had many things he had to think about on the way home.

The Exhaustion Training Method really did play a significant role. In such a short time, it actually allowed Suo Jia to enter a realm capable of using the Meditation Technique. However, as of right now, the Exhaustion Training Method has already begun to show signs of decrease in effectiveness, as it was no longer as effective as the first two times he had performed it. In this situation, should the Exhaustion Training Method continue to be used?

Suo Jia had already used the Exhaustion Training Method to carefully upgrade his magic power with the sole purpose of being able to use the Meditation Technique and cast the Ice Sphere Technique. This was all for the sake of the grand tournament being held half a year from now. Since he was already capable of using the Meditation Technique after using the Exhaustion Training Method three times, he had already reached his previous goal. With that said, he really did not know if he should continue using this technique or not.

Suo Jia knew that repeatedly using the Exhaustion Technique would only degrade the beneficial effects further. This concept was similar to taking medicine; since if one takes the same medicine for a long period of

time, a resistance towards the drug is formed. However, if one stops taking the drug before too much resistance is developed, then after not using the drug for a while, the resistance might decrease or even disappear. If at that time, one was to take the drug again, then once could enjoy the great effects of it once more.

Upon undergoing the Exhaustion Training Method for the third time, Suo Jia realized that the effects weren't as good as before and that he already began to develop a resistance to it. Since it was already like this, then perhaps stopping for a period of time before continuing might be able to restore its effects.

Thinking up to this point, Suo Jia became hesitant. Honestly, if the Exhaustion Training Method was used like crazy to improve cultivation, then it was similar to using harmful drugs that become difficult to abandon. However, if the drugs are not abandoned, the effects will only degrade further, eventually doing more harm than good.

Gritting his teeth, Suo Jia finally decided to temporarily stop using the Exhaustion Training Method. He couldn't let his only hope be used up. Waiting for the right opportunity might be able to help him get through a critical moment in life. It would be far more effective than using it now.

Even though he was reluctant, Suo Jia still sealed the Exhaustion Training Method without hesitation. With his current status, Suo Jia had already surpassed all the mages in his year by leaps and bounds. Even though he was only 8 years old, he could use the Meditation Technique already. At least compared to other people, he had started 4 years in advance. Such a large advantage was already enough!

Suo Jia tried his hardest to forget the Exhaustion Training Method. When he had returned home and had tastelessly shoved his meal into his mouth, he gloomily began to rush towards the school. He needed something to help distract him so that he could forget the regret he was feeling towards abandoning the Exhaustion Training Method.

Since he had left his home relatively early, by the time Suo Jia had arrived at the school grounds, there was still quite a bit of time before

classes would start. Despite this, when Suo Jia entered the classroom, it was filled with all the girls in his class. After all....to them, staying in the dorm all day was boring; everyone gathering in the classroom to talk amongst each other was more interesting.

Along the way, Suo Jia greeted every girl he met with a slight smile. After more than half a year, Suo Jia had already formed deep friendships with every girl in his class. Everyone had already become genuine friends and this made Suo Jia feel comfortable with them. By this point, he had finally realized why his mother had always urged him to form close relationships with his classmates.

If it could be said that Suo Jia had previously only been patient and friendly with the girls before because of his mother's wishes; it could also be said that Suo Jia genuinely smiled at all the girls now. This was because whenever he made the girls happy, their presence also made Suo Jia feel at ease.

Suo Jia sat in his seat and casually pulled out a pen and paper. He began to write the specific symbols for the Moisture Technique, Swamp Technique, and Ice Sphere Technique. To Suo Jia, practicing these magics literally meant practicing the symbols he was writing in his book.

Author's Note.

One question? Others would not dare to say, as the country's future most elite ultimate wind and fire warrior, the most powerful people in the future, even the country could not provide the most simple water mage for them and require them to go and plead to an eight year old child. You think the country's big shot is an idiot? Such a great opportunity to bribe people, do you think others won't do it too? Just by practicing fire style, your skin will start to crack. Since the females are like this, the males can't be much better off. In this world, your skin will crack no matter if you are male or female and look like a ghost. Do you think this is possible? Boss, your settings must have problems.

There was a problem with a concept in the story. Why did the Fire/Wind Battle Goddesses have to go look for a water mage to treat

them? Could it be that the water mages have a lower status than the battle goddesses? If this is the case, then you are wrong. Fire/Wind female battle goddesses are the equivalent to bodyguards, while water mages can become high officials. Having someone like a high official give bodyguards any type of service is surely a laughable matter.

Fire wind warriors are definitely powerful, however their formidability is on one-on-one or one vs many combats. However, a mage, especially a Mage Saint, can guard a fort and easily wipe out millions of soldiers at the same time, and embodies the strategy category. However fire wind warriors only fall into the tactics category. No matter how strong they are, if there are only a few of them, they cannot be of much use.

Six rank magic are powerful, the only difference is the power of the stages. Water magic is only weaker at the initial stage. Afterwards, you become so powerful. Such as Absolute Zero, Frostsaber Purgatory, Diamond Storm and Frost Breath. Every moves can slaughter thousands and thousands. That's why you should not underestimate any mage.

Of course, this doesn't mean that mages are all-powerful; it depends on their level of training. For example, not all students are able to enter college, become graduate students, and earn PhDs, and maybe even go past that level. However, other students still have that hope. Therefore, in terms of position, mages are the country's cornerstones, and are higher than fire wind warriors. This is because of their strategic positions. In reality, mages are all aristocrats, and warriors are mostly bodyguards. This is not something only I have decided; everyone always sets a similar system, don't they?

Other than that, the question about fire burning, I don't really understand, do you wonder if fire mages are immune to fire? This isn't correct, if you look at the video games, are fire mages immune to fire in there? If they are, then tell me haha.

If you play with fire, you will get burned. This is something that I have always believed in. However, fire wind warriors are especially strong, thus the so-called borrowing the benefits from both fire and wind, where wind aids the fire's strength and therefore causes intense fires. Moreover,

under my decision, playing with fire definitely harms the skin. Perhaps this seems like an irrational decision, however I think this reasoning makes sense. What does everyone else think?

Using China's traditional martial arts as an example, when practicing the principles of the iron hands, what happens to them? And when training with the leg, it becomes coarse. Training with the hands mean beating them. This type of outcome isn't uncommon. There is a young Shaolin monk that practiced with only a finger. And as you watched him practice with that finger, you can see it thicken. That is the price to pay I would think. So, when practicing fire magic, wouldn't the skin become roasted, I do not think that this would not be hard to understand right?

Lastly, you only read the book until here. There is still much more to come. Seriously, I admit what you said makes sense. Since they can bribe, why others did not try to bribe? Why wait until Suo Jia's turn and make so much trouble for him? It does not make sense, even I think so too. But the story is not finished yet, let's just continue moving on. As I said, everyone will eventually understand. If I reveal everything now, will there be any meaning left?

I won't say anymore about this. This friend's (TL: author referring to himself in third person) opinions and suggestions have all been purposely laid down. If you don't think it makes sense, it probably actually doesn't make any sense. However, the answers will be disclosed; in general, everything has their reasons. Nothing is arranged in its place for no reason.

Finally, Suo Jia will not keep going up the aristocratic ladder. It can actually be said that the story's actual beginning is not in the Holy Light Empire; this is all just the portraying the surface of the story. Everyone just please be patient and keep reading; soon, everyone will completely understand everything.

Chapter 41: Playing With a Hundred Beauties

After writing for more than 10 minutes before his hand began to get tired, Suo Jia was finally satisfied with his work and stopped. After looking at the clock, Suo Jia saw that it was almost time for class so he could not continue to practice anymore. Thus, he put away his paper and pen.

After he putting away his paper and pen, Suo Jia began to exercise his wrist while listening to the conversations of the girls around him. When Suo Jia listened carefully, a pleasant voice echoed, "Lan Lan! This Sunday, where do you plan to play!"

In response to the girl's questions, the girl called Lan Lan sighed and said with a hint of loneliness, "Holy Light is so big, where can we go to play? Who dares to go out? Last time Xue Er went out, she got lost and almost couldn't find her way back!"

"Ah....." Listening to Lan Lan, the other girl sighed, "It's so boring, we might as well not have a holiday. When we have a day off, we can't go anywhere and can only lock ourselves in the dormitory."

"That's right! It's so boring....." Lan Lan agreed unhappily.

Listening to these two girl's conversation, Suo Jia can't help but be amazed. Since he first came to Holy Light Academy, Suo Jia already had basic freedom and did whatever he wanted to do. Before, when his mother went to work, she didn't have the time to take care of him. But now that his mother felt reassured that there was no need to take care of him anymore, he had already forgotten the taste of loneliness and boredom.

But even though he no longer currently felt it, Suo Jia was still very familiar with the feelings of loneliness and boredom. After all, he had endured these feelings before entering the academy. If he was not playing with his stream of water, he would be listening to his mother's stories everyday. These kinds of feelings could only be understood by someone

who had experienced them firsthand!

Carefully observing his surroundings, almost all the girls were discussing the same topic. Even though tomorrow was Sunday, not a single person was feeling happy about it. Instead, they felt depressed. For them, it was better not to have a holiday. Even if they had the determination to go out and play, how would an 8 years old girl dare to go out to play by herself in a foreign town?

Seeing all the girl's lifeless expressions, Suo Jia felt sympathetic. Since last night, the construction of the wooden house had been completed, the renovation of the white villa was also completed. The sixty newly hired Holy Light maids had also been organized; now he was just waiting to select an auspicious day that they can formally open on.

Looking at the hundred plus girls in the class, Suo Jia could not help but laugh. Since they were so bored, then why not invite them to his home as guests? Then, they would no longer feel lonely or bored. On the other hand, he would also be able to test just how many guests the white villa could contain. Through this, he could discover any problematic areas earlier and resolve them as soon as possible. Otherwise, it would be troublesome to discover any problems after the official opening.

"Papapa!" Taking action as soon as he thought about it, Suo Jia stood up and clapped his hands vigorously, and successfully attracted the attention of all the girls with his sharp and clear clapping sounds. One by one, they turned their heads to look at Suo Jia in confusion.

Under the watchful eye of all the girls, Suo Jia smiled and said, "Fellow students, tomorrow is Sunday, so we do not need to go to our classes. Therefore, I would like to invite everyone to play at my house. I wonder if everyone would be willing to do me the honor?"

"Kyaa!" After hearing Suo Jia's words, all the girls were so surprised that their jaws dropped open. One of them was so surprised that she had even squealed. One after another, they looked at Suo Jia expectantly, trying to determine whether or not he was serious.

After a period of silence, a girl with long, icy-blue hair coldly said, "I

believe everyone here wants to go, but do you have your family's consent? Can your home hold this many students?"

Smiling and nodding his head, Suo Jia warmly said, "My family all agreed. They would love to welcome you all as my guests. My mother and sisters would very much like to see you all. Also, since my house is big enough, there would be no problem even if there were a few hundred more people."

Hearing Suo Jia say this, all the girls were naturally speechless. Then, they all began to agree excitedly one after another. Because of this agreement, all the students were a little absentminded for the rest of the day. This caused the female lecturer to feel confused; what was wrong with these girls? Why were their spiritual powers so unfocused today?

That afternoon, Suo Jia did not participate in the routine class activity: the so-called magic research sessions. He only left the little pet alone at the training grounds and rushed back home by himself to share his plans with his family.

Suo Jia's family obviously fully supported his idea. Actually, even if Suo Jia had not invited them, they would have also invites other people here to test the capacity of the white villa. Since Suo Jia had brought up such a good proposal now, it would be weird to disagree!

The next morning, according to the arrangement, Suo Jia arrived very early at Holy Light Academy. He made an appointment with all the girls to go pray at the church. A row of hundred plus people then began their grandiose tour around the town under Suo Jia's leadership. None of the girls were afraid of getting lost anymore; there was no longer anything to fear.

When these girls who had been stuck in the academy for more than half of a year suddenly went out, anything seemed strange to them and everything was nice to look at. This kind of world-class megapolis Holy Light City was even more awe-inspiring; everything was a feast for their eyes! Even though they were simply shopping, all the girls felt that they had never been so happy before.

Along the way, the girls were all chattering and giggling, joking around while looking at the scenery of the street. Upon encountering a store, they would make their way in like a swarm of bees, completely ignoring their fatigue. Even the soldiers would be flabbergasted upon witnessing this kind of powerful endurance.

Alternating between stopping for a while and moving on again, they all felt like they had just started shopping, but by then, the time had already reached noon. Even though they still wanted to continue shopping, their stomachs were already starting to growl. Children were like this: their digestive systems were good and they got hungry easily. Their breakfasts had been very simple, and after walking for an entire morning, it would have been strange if they were still not hungry.

The smell of the captivating aroma exuded by the street hotel caused all the girls to drool with desire. Most of the girls didn't have a lot of money, so it was impossible to enter the hotel to eat and drink as much as they liked. Although a few of them did have money, they didn't want to break away from the group, even if they were reluctant to leave the area, they had no choice but to part with the door of the hotel one after another.

Looking at the expression of all the girls, Suo Jia couldn't help but chuckle. Despite this, he did not say a word. He knew if he didn't say anything, all the girls would definitely drag themselves back to the academy and go straight to the dining hall to find something to eat. After all.... nobody dared to break away from the group by themselves. They wouldn't be able to find the way back to the academy by themselves. Furthermore, they could easily be abducted if someone saw such lovely girls all alone.

Finally, the row of people arrived in front of Suo Jia's home. Suo Jia stopped moving and turned around. He smiled and said, "Fellow students, it is already the afternoon. I believe everyone should be hungry already!"

"Uh! Still fine, still doing fine..... " Faced with Suo Jia's question, none of the girls were willing to admit that they were hungry. Hunger always made people think that they were some type of creature that was both clumsy and lazy.

Witnessing the group of girls fake-acting, Suo Jia did not feel the slightest bit of disgust. Instead, he thought that they were really cute. Obviously, they were starving to death but didn't want to admit it, no matter what. No wonder people said that when a woman says no, she means yes!

Smiling warmly, Suo Jia kindly said, "We have arrived at my home, so even if you are not hungry, please go in and eat a little. We can play at my house during the remaining time!"

Being told that they had arrived at Suo Jia's home already, all the girls' faces lit up with excited expressions. Seeing the snow-white fence and white jade-like classical styled door of Suo Jia's home, they could tell it really had an aristocratic style.

Suo Jia smiled after seeing all the girls sighing in admiration. This was originally a villa of an aristocratic family; it was the Holy Light City's lord, Duke Wen Sha's, gift to his baby daughter. How could it possibly be ugly?

"Ding dong!" After pulling the rope beside the door lightly.... a melodious and beautiful sound rang out from the golden bell located in the inner courtyard. Immediately following the sound of the bell, the two large elegant doors slowly opened from the inside. At the same time, everything beyond the door appeared in front of all the girls.

Chapter 42: Desperately Begging At The Door

Outside the main entrance stood two young beauties wearing maid clothing. They smiled slightly as they bowed from their waists at everyone outside the door; their actions were both elegant and beautiful. At the same time, they chorused with pure, ringing voices, “We welcome you to enjoy yourselves in our home.”

Seeing such a scene, all the girls felt a bit overwhelmed by the favor extended from their superiors. They hurriedly bent their knees slightly to return the greeting using the standard ladies’ etiquette. However, with so many people crowded together, it gave off a slightly awkward and messy feel, completely lacking the elegance and grandeur a young lady’s greeting should have.

The girls nodded their heads in satisfaction. The two maids at the door, whether it was their faces, figures, temperaments, or their conversation style, manners, and smiles, everything was impeccable. Anyone watching could not help but feel at ease. The most important thing was that everything raised the white villa’s style to a much higher degree.

Turning their heads to greet all the girls, the group of people grandiosely entered the yard. Inside the doors, a wide, white, paved path led to an elegant, milky-white villa close by. The path actually split the garden into two sides, and as it was a nice summer day, the fresh blooming flowers overwhelmed the young girls with fragrant aromas. Stone benches and wooden chairs were spread out on the garden’s empty spaces. Everything felt graceful and unique, the fresh and clean ambiance also imposing an aristocratic manner.

Even further out was an enormous swimming pool, a large artificial mountain, as well as the waterfall cascading off of it. There was a man-made lake and forest as well, making everyone who saw this scene in front of them think they were under a spell. This place no longer seemed like Holy Light City, but rather, a paradise fairyland with verdant hills

and limpid water.

In the end, all of the girls that came with Suo Jia were thoroughly confused, and began to guess what kind of person Suo Jia really was. How could he afford to live in such a large and wonderful place? Only after the food had been served in front of them did they awake from their stupors.

After a complete renovation, the ten rooms on the second floor had been converted entirely into luxurious dining rooms. Each of these rooms had a luxurious table that could seat up to 12 people. The girls all sat down and took up ten tables, each and every one of them speechless. However, what really made the girls hunger for were the dishes of food. None of them were able to hold back their saliva upon seeing the mouth-watering dishes.

After the dishes had arrived, Suo Jia accompanied his mother to greet all of the girls. As his mother invited them to start eating, all the girls forgot their manners and disguises, and attacked the food with their chopsticks.

The dishes had all been meticulously worked on all morning and prepared by professional chefs. The taste of these dishes far outclassed those of the simple dining halls. For a while, the girls were completely focused on the dishes, eyes glued to the food, and absolutely refused to let anything divert their attentions.

In order to ensure that the white foyer had enough reception capacity, Eldest Sister had hired fifty extra workers. They were responsible for various things such as cooking, cleaning, and entertaining guests. This proved that fifty workers were perfectly capable of maintaining the white foyer.

Based on Eldest Sister's plans, the entire white foyer had undergone construction. Although Big Sister did indeed say that the floor could accommodate a total of a thousand people, it would really be too crowded then. In addition, none of the nobility and rich would enjoy being in a cramped place, making a hundred roughly the best number. If the number ever rose above that, the class and style of the place would

definitely decline.

Although the first floor foyer could indeed fit a thousand people, it could only comfortably fit 100. The second floor had undergone renovations, and had been converted into a dining area. The third floor had a total of ten rooms, and had actually been converted into an amusement center. As for Suo Jia's workplace it was now located within that small wooden hut. According to what Eldest Sister said, that was the idler's stop, secluded by a beautiful scenery.

Based on Eldest Sister's calculations, Suo Jia's set customers could not be too high of a number. Firstly, because Suo Jia would be too busy to entertain them, and secondly, because once there were too many people, the value could not rise any higher, and the class of the location would fall, making Suo Jia's status less conspicuous; his status among the aristocrats was the most important factor.

Eldest Sister meant for Suo Jia to maintain ten customers maximum; it was best if it were 6-7 customers. As long as he diligently treated each person, it would represent his status, position, privileges, and wealth to his customers. That way, Suo Jia would no longer have a problem with earning any amount of money.

Suo Jia didn't get tired, was able to earn more money, and had both name and power; everyone would naturally help Suo Jia spread the word, significantly saving the costs of getting large amounts of advertisements. Suo Jia could also have more free time since....to the current Suo Jia, earning money was secondary; studying and training, as well as constantly strengthening himself, were the most important.

Although Suo Jia did not really accept Eldest Sister's uses of influence as correct, he also could not deny his admiration at her abilities. By organizing it this way, Suo Jia only needed to spend very little time to concentrate at catering to a handful of customers, and yet he could still earn a lot of money.

If it was a while ago, Suo Jia probably wouldn't have minded the issue of time much. However, ever since he had learned meditation, Suo Jia's time

became more and more precious. Meditation was the fastest way to raise spirit power and magic power. If Suo Jia had a lot of time left over, he could spend more of the time on meditating to refine his magic power and comprehend its true meanings. If Suo Jia had gone by his original plans of moisturizing 1800 people per day, he would not do anything else.

Although the dishes were very delicious, an 8 years old girl's stomach was like the size of an egg; even though her eyes were not yet satisfied, her small stomach was already bursting. She could not resist stopping, but she would still have to helplessly place down her chopsticks as she reached the point where she really couldn't eat another bite.

Seeing all the girls place their chopsticks down, under Eldest Sister's commands, the maids began to present cups of sweet and tasty fruit juice that were placed in front of the girls one by one.

Even though this was Holy Light City, the world's richest and most luxurious megapolis, fruit juice, or even just fruit, were not things that everyone could constantly enjoy.

Seeing the colorful, fresh fruit juice, the girls began to bring the cups up to their mouths in wonder to drink it. After drinking, all the girls closed their eyes in bliss; this was really too delicious. The fruit's flavor was sweet and refreshing. That taste was something all children loved. Even adults would be unable to resist its allure.

Seeing the girls' contented expressions, Suo Jia could not help but laugh. Picking up the juice in front of him, he lightly pursed his lips, preparing to silently enjoy its taste. However, just then, Eldest Sister walked in with a serious expression.

Without warning, she walked to Suo Jia's side, and whispered lightly in his ear, "Young Master, a group of people wearing red hoods are outside saying they want to meet you."

Suo Jia knit his brows; he knew that the people who had arrived was definitely the group of fire wind warriors. Even though he really wanted to help them, he had already stated very clearly last time that it wasn't that he didn't want to help; even if he did help them, they all knew that

he was powerless to actually aid them.

While pondering this, Suo Jia swallowed the juice in his glass in one gulp, casually placed the empty glass on the table, and slowly stood up. Calmly, he said, "Later when they finish drinking their juice, bring them to stroll around the gardens. I will arrange for those people to leave."

After giving this message, Suo Jia furrowed his eyebrows, and began to walk towards the main entrance. He just could not understand; he had said his words so clearly, so why did these girls still come to visit him?

Hurriedly walking, soon...Suo Jia arrived in front of the entrance. At the same time, the 36 figures completely covered in red and gold and wearing red cloaks came into view; they really were the same girls!

While trying hard to calm himself, Suo Jia quickly walked to the group of red cloaks, and silently stopped a few steps in front of them. Indifferently, he said, "I believe that last time I gave a very clear explanation to my response. I don't understand why you have come to seek my aid again."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, all the red cloaks began to tremble. Afterwards....one of the red cloaks opened her mouth and said, "Mister Suo Jia, this afternoon, someone saw you bring 100 water mages from the street. Hearing this in passing, we figured out that the relationships between you and these girls must be very close. They must all respect you, like you, and even worship you. Therefore, I thought that you could definitely persuade them to help us."

Author's Note:

Damn, once everyone lets go, they really don't lack in opinions, hahahaha. Should I be happy or pained by this?

I'll explain some questions:

First, the order of nobility is not this series' main point. It is simply a phase, one that Suo Jia will grow and develop in. This type of trivial thing will not be pursued for long.

Once again, the fire wind warriors will not renounce their leading roles. I've already wasted so many words on them, of course they have main roles. However, Suo Jia simply does not have the ability to help them right now. He will begin to help them very soon.

As for the issue of him being too young, this may be slightly true. However, it was already explained earlier that what I want to build is a mage's whole lifetime, and thus naturally started the story when Suo Jia is young. However this is definitely a large mistake on my part. The next story I write will definitely not start from a child for sure.

Chapter 43: Sacrificing Everything

Hearing the red cloak's words, Suo Jia wrinkled his brows in disgust, "They are them, I am me; this means that I don't have any power to persuade them. Even if I did, why would I do that for you? Why would I go owe a hundred people favors for your sake!"

At this point Suo Jia grew even angrier. Looking darkly at the group of fire wind warriors across from him, Suo Jia said in an unconstrained tone, "You girls have sacrificed your appearances for the sake of obtaining the strongest combat powers in the world. However, in order to help you, we would need to sacrifice money, time, and happiness. What can we possibly get back in exchange?"

Speaking to this point, Suo Jia discovered that he was getting too emotional. Taking a deep breath, Suo Jia tried to calm himself down, then said heavily, "I don't owe you girls anything, my classmates also don't owe you anything. If it were just me alone, perhaps I would help you. However, I cannot represent those 100 girls as they do not follow me in any way. We are only classmates, and I do not have the power to command over them."

Seeing Suo Jia get so upset, the red cloaks were speechless. Before coming, they were clinging on to the simple hope that there was a chance to finally regain their second lives and being surprised by the mass of water users. However, it never crossed their minds that these people had no obligation to help them.

Seeing the girls go silent, Suo Jia laughed in disdain, "If you want me to persuade them it's fine; you should know that my white villa is just about to open for business. The price of one Moisture Technique is 100 gold. If you are willing to pay those girls that price, then I will be responsible for persuading them. However, if you cannot do so, then don't look for me again."

"Xi!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, all the girls immediately went into shock. They had at least thousands of cracks on each of their bodies, and each

crack required one Moisture Technique. Putting aside maintaining their skin, even trying to heal all of their cracks today would require 3,600,000 gold. Even if they were crushed and sold their bones, it was not worth that much!

At this point, all the red cloaks suddenly accepted the truth. If they got help, Suo Jia and the others would be paying a great price to do so. Yet Suo Jia and the others did not owe them anything, and had no obligation to pay such a large price to help the girls restore their beauty. The difference between the price to pay and price earned was way too large.

As Suo Jia had said, the girls had sacrificed their appearances in exchange for the world's strongest fighting abilities. In contrast, if their saviors sacrificed everything, what would they get back in return? Nothing would be gained!

But despite knowing this, faced with their final hopes, the girls could not bear to let the chance escape. All of them knew clearly that if this opportunity was let go, they would admittedly have the power to shake the earth, but they would not have anything else for the rest of their lives. They would be just like the rest of the female warriors, carrying the weight of their tragedy for eternity.

Seeing the 36 girls trembling in their red cloaks, Suo Jia said helplessly, "Even though I feel pity for you girls, at most I can only help moisturize each person once; that is already my limit. Aside from that, think about it carefully yourselves, how else could I possibly help?"

At a loss, the girls stared at Suo Jia. All the red cloaks knew that for Suo Jia to be able to reach that extent, he was already being extremely benevolent. Even though they had been aroused from their dazes, all the girls still refused to leave. This was really their absolutely last strand of hope; as soon as they took one step out this place, they would bury this hope from then on until they died.

"Is there really no other alternative?" Carrying the very last expectation, one of the red cloaks asked Suo Jia sorrowfully.

Helplessly looking at the red cloak who had spoken, Suo Jia said

indifferently: "Let's reiterate this in a different way: If I was to beg you girls to spend large amounts of time every day, consuming not only time, but energy as well in order to help another person for the rest of their life, yet there were absolutely no rewards for doing so, would any of you agree?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, all the girls completely fell into complete despair. Once the circumstances were explained from such an angle where they could see it from the other point of view, they finally came to a thorough understanding. Their requests were simply too ignorant. If one practiced magic, that did not mean in any way that they were obligated to use their magic to help you!

Giving a final glance at the red cloaks, Suo Jia said heavily, "Even though I really want to help, please forgive me for being unable to help at all. I still have things to do at home, so I won't see you girls to the door." After speaking, Suo Jia turned around and began to walk back towards the white villa in wide strides.

Seeing Suo Jia gradually walk further away, all the girls began to cry. To them, it was not only Suo Jia leaving, it was also their hopes and their second lives!

Seeing that Suo Jia was just about to disappear from their lines of vision, finally....a mournful voice rang out from the crowd of red cloaks, "If we were willing to pay something equivalent to the price you named, would you consider helping us then?"

Suddenly stopping, Suo Jia silently considered this for a while, then replied without even turning his head, "I can't think of anything you could possibly pay, unless you would like to enlighten me?"

"This...." After hesitating for a while, that voice replied, "If those water mages are willing to spend their precious time everyday to help us, then in return, we will also be willing to spend the same amount of time to help them!"

"Che..." Hearing that voice's reply, Suo Jia scoffed, "Firstly, we don't really need your help. Also....the time the 36 of you have cannot compare

to the time of us 100. Your time is nowhere as precious as ours.”

Once Suo Jia’s voice dropped, a red figure suddenly leapt out from the crowd and dropped onto the ground to kneel, “Mister Suo Jia, I beg of you; right now we really don’t have anything else. If you are willing to help us, we will be willing to accept any price you demand!”

Hearing this, the other red cloaks began to shake, obviously shocked by these words. However they all soon understood what to do, and unhesitantly walked forward and knelt down one by one. Even though they did not say anything, their meanings were clear; all of them were willing to sacrifice what they needed to for this sake.

Seeing the kneeling red cloaks, Suo Jia laughed bitterly and turned around, saying helplessly, “Aren’t you just making things more difficult for me? Although I’m very moved by your sincerity, I really cannot think of any possible ways I could help!”

“Shua!” Suddenly lifting their heads, penetrating lights seemed to shoot out from within the dark cloaks. At the same time, the female warriors said confidently, “Perhaps we really cannot be of much use. However, you should not forget that we will be the strongest warriors in the world—fire wind warriors! Once we become stronger, we will definitely have the power to besiege any place in the world; how could we possibly be useless!”

“Hahahahahaha.....” Hearing the girl’s words, Suo Jia could not help but laugh out loud. After a while, Suo Jia replied in an amused and intrigued voice, “Your choice of words is really moving. However, I don’t have the desire to be able to besiege any lands, so this usefulness is not something I would need.”

After hearing Suo Jia’s words, all the girls began to panic. They had already sacrificed everything they could, and yet nothing was enough to exchange for their only hope. Did this mean....that their fates were really set in stone?

After reflecting on this for a while, finally....one of the red cloaks stubbornly raised her head and said in a profound voice, “As long as you

are willing to help us, we swear that if you ever need anything from us, no matter what it is, we will follow your commands. This is already everything we can possibly offer!”

Suo Jia sighed in praise at the girl who had spoken. Those words were really too clever; she already knew very clearly that in order to gain the help from the 100 mage girls, the only method was to communicate through Suo Jia. Only Suo Jia had the ability to gather these girls and have them help the red cloaks for eternity. Nobody else could possibly achieve this.

It was because of this that all the girls agreed to follow Suo Jia’s commands, and not the commands of one of the hundred mage girls. After all....there was no way they could at any point follow the commands of a hundred people. If they did, they would die from overwork, and would not be able to fulfill the commands.

The 36 fire-wind warriors had no way of exchanging something of equal value with the hundred mage girls. Only through Suo Jia would their desires be able to come to fruition. Of course, this was also only a possibility. The most important thing was seeing if Suo Jia would be able to persuade those mage girls to gather, and stay by his side from beginning to end. Otherwise, after graduation, the mage girls would all just split up and go their separate ways.

All 36 pairs of eyes shone with a blazing determination and locked onto Suo Jia. After pondering this matter for a very long time, Suo Jia finally smiled and muttered, “Perhaps you girls may really be of some use. No matter what, I’ll try and help first. However, whether I am successful or not depends on your prayers for God’s blessings!”

Chapter 44: Misunderstanding In Such A Way

Even though he had made a promise, Suo Jia knew he had to think very carefully about this matter. Only with a reliable method could he fulfill the promise. It was easy enough to make everyone help once, but it would be a joke to ask for their help constantly without an end in sight.

After he dismissed the 36 fire wind female warriors, Suo Jia quickly rushed back, and played happily together with all his classmates beside the artificial lake in the garden. In a moment such as this, Suo Jia did not want to ponder about such things. Wanting to play meant dropping everything else and playing to the heart's content. Only in this way could one give it their all when it came to work. No matter is being done, it should be enjoyed.

Suo Jia sent all the girls back to school only after they had played for the entire afternoon, and finished eating the specially prepared dinner. After all..... even if the white villa was very large, it was not very realistic to have those hundred plus girls stay overnight.

At the entrance, the group of girls that had played crazily took a step back and turned around to look at the courtyard that had brought them such limitless joy. They couldn't remember how long it had been since they had last enjoyed playing to this extent. With such a wonderful day, they believed that even if they had to face a dull and uninteresting life in the following years, they could at least keep this happiness in their hearts.

After seeing his classmates home, Suo Jia walked back to his home alone. Along the way, Suo Jia finally started to ponder carefully while watching the busy crowd.

Even though he could not think of anything that the fire wind female warriors could help him with, he truly felt pity for those girls and really wanted to help them. In addition, if he could help his classmates find something to do so that they wouldn't feel so bored and lonely, this could

even decrease the distance between him and his classmates.

Suo Jia didn't have much to worry about before, but the thought of having 36 powerful fire wind female warriors on standby, waiting for orders at all times, made him feel thrilled. As long as he ordered them, they would rush over and help him resolve any problem. To dominate and look down on others, Suo Jia couldn't contain some kind of pleasure that was rising from the bottom of his heart.

Along the way, Suo Jia still had not come up with a feasible solution. By the time Suo Jia had returned to the underground warehouse, which had been converted into a training room, he had no choice but to stop thinking. It was the time to start his training.

The next morning, just when Eldest Sister's footsteps were heard, Suo Jia slowly got out from the state of the Meditation Technique. The first thing Suo Jia thought about while slowly opening his eyes, was what he thought about prior to entering the state of meditation; how could he help those 36 pitiful sisters?

"Young Master, breakfast is ready. We can start any time. Should we wait for a while before eating?" Eldest Sister's gentle voice resounded from beyond the door.

Out of habit, Suo Jia agreed immediately upon hearing Eldest Sister's words. His eyes lit up and he suddenly turned his head, Eldest Sister was so sinister and crafty. Oh wait..... that could be resourceful. If he allowed her to help him think of an idea, perhaps they would be able to find a solution immediately.

Thinking up to this point, Suo Jia raised his voice to say, "Eldest Sister, please don't rush to leave. Come in...I have something to discuss with you."

Hearing Suo Jia's voice, Eldest Sister, who was standing outside the door, started. For the past few days, she had never received an order to enter the storehouse. The place was both dark and quiet, as well as isolated. It was not an appropriate place for a male and a female to interact with each other by themselves.

Although the young master was only a child, it wasn't like 8 years old children couldn't do anything. Despite the fact that he did not yet possess the true abilities of a man, he could definitely still play around with and humiliate women. Such things were common amongst aristocrats. Adults would only praise the children for maturing so early, and would never criticize them for it.

Even though she knew this clearly, as a maid with no freedom, if her master wanted her to do anything, she had no power to reject his command. Not only was she unable to refuse, she also had to make sure to wholeheartedly make sure the master was satisfied. However, even though this sounded trivial, what kind of fully grown woman would be willing to play around with an 8 years old child?

Hearing the young master call for her, the first thing that she thought of was that the young master would want to toy around with her. Now that the Mistress was not here, there was nobody to prevent the young master from doing anything he wanted to; this was too frightening.

Just as she began to become scared, Suo Jia's confused voice once again rang out, "What are you doing? Hurry up and come in!"

Hearing the young master's urging tone, Eldest Sister stopped thinking about it and tightly gritted her teeth, internally thinking, "If I am to be damned, then I will be damned. As a maid, what power do I have to fight back?" While thinking this, Eldest Sister pushed open the storehouse door, and entered the room as if she were a convict entering the execution grounds. With a solemn and stirring heart, she began to walk towards Suo Jia.

Seeing Eldest Sister enter, Suo Jia lightly patted the cushion next to him, indicating for her to sit down. Seeing this scene, Eldest Sister's heart clenched; was it going to begin so soon?

Trembling, she sat down next to Suo Jia. Just as she was secretly worrying about what would happen, Suo Jia lowered his voice and said in a furtive voice, "This morning, only you came to call for me?"

"Gulu...." Suo Jia's words made Eldest Sister's mood frightened to the

extreme. Forcefully swallowing her saliva, she nodded, indicating that she had, in fact, come alone.

Hearing Eldest Sister's response, Suo Jia became even more furtive, sneakily running to the storehouse door. He looked outside to confirm that there were really no other people, and then exerted strength to close the doors.

"Kada!" Although the sound was soft, to Eldest Sister's ears, it was as no less alarming than thunder. She knew that this sound was the sound of the young master locking up the doors from the inside. Once the doors were locked, nobody from the outside would be able to enter. This action from Suo Jia gradually made Eldest Sister's state of mind panic to the highest point possible; any more tension would break her.

"Hehe...." Lightly rubbing his hands together, Suo Jia awkwardly laughed and at the same time, secretly began to think about how to explain to Eldest Sister. The reason he was embarrassed was because scheming about other people was really never a good thing. Aside from Eldest Sister, Suo Jia did not want even his own mother to know of this.

Under Eldest Sister's frightened attention, Suo Jia slowly walked in front of her. The next moment....Suo Jia's face of curiosity slowly neared Eldest Sister. At the same moment, Suo Jia's palms slowly extended towards her body.

Even though she had earlier already acknowledged that such a thing was something she could not escape from, once Eldest Sister was actually experiencing the moment, she could not endure any longer. Suddenly closing her eyes, she shouted wildly, "Don't! Young Master...I beg of you, please don't do this; this isn't right!"

"Eh!" Hearing Eldest Sister's words, Suo Jia started in his place. With a face full of confusion, he said, "What? Is hanging some grass on the lapel of one's clothes a new type of decoration?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, Eldest Sister's eyes shot open, and looked at where Suo Jia was pointing towards. Hanging from her shoulder was a rolled up leaf. Seeing this scene, Eldest Sister finally realized that she had

misunderstood the young master.

Slightly exhaling, Eldest Sister questioned, “Young Master, for you to ask me to enter, do you have anything you want from me?”

“Nn!” Nodding his head with certainty, Suo Jia said cautiously, “I do in fact have a request, however before I tell you, I hope that you will promise me that no matter what, you will not reveal this thing that I am about to tell you to others. Otherwise....” Without completing his sentence, Suo Jia stopped. After thinking for a while, he still could not think of something to do to Eldest Sister if she did reveal it.

“Xi!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Eldest Sister’s heart, which had just relaxed a bit, immediately began to race extremely fast again. It was coming; finally, it was coming. What the young master was talking about was definitely that. Besides from that, in a young child’s home, what else could be something he would be afraid of others discovering?

In despair, the girl looked upwards and slowly nodded, “Don’t worry, Young Master. This lowly maid understands what can be said and what cannot. This lowly maid only hopes that Young Master will be gentle so that you won’t break me; this lowly maid still needs to clothe you.”

“Ah?” Hearing Big Sister’s words, Suo Jia exclaimed in confusion, “What are you talking about? What ‘be gentle’? And how am I breaking you?”

Author’s Note:

Suo Jia bought a Diamond Dragon so that he could practice the Moisture Technique any time he wanted to. The reason he couldn’t help the fire wind warriors was because the fire wind warriors cannot stick to him and follow him around all the time; the fire wind warriors also need to attend class, ok? If Suo Jia wanted to help, then he would have to help these girls for an hour after school everyday. I say, Suo Jia still needs to maintain his own lifestyle, right?

For this, I really need everyone’s opinions, but what I need are those with depth and not not the trivial kinds. The most unbearable is that those that were picked out were all painstakingly planned out foreshadowing by me. For the intro, everyone is welcome to make

suggestions, however it is best not to make repeat suggestions, especially those that I have already answered, otherwise it'd just be evil.

The structure is too crappy, the fire wind warriors were fated to become servants from the beginning, then why do they need to become fire wind warriors? Don't aristocrats all have their own personal water mages? This is only a necessary an apprentice must be able to activate Moisture Technique to earn so much money do you think this is reasonable? Ten-year dream.

Explanation: fire wind warriors are chosen at a young age, although they are not normal slaves, they can still be said to be the country's slaves, they have no freedom to speak of.

As for the apprentices being able to use the Moisture Technique to earn money, this point has no doubt, only, do you really thing they can earn that much money? Will one gold per Moisture Technique end up as a lot? Even if the apprentices earned money on the street, supply does not meet demand

Suo Jia's actual revenue is depending on the beautician techniques. The skills are not complicated, but they aren't simple either. The theory behind atomic bombs is simple, but if you don't say it, who would go research one out?

Finally, this needs to be repeated again, mages have high statuses. Most become aristocrats after graduating. Warriors' statuses are lower, becoming an aristocrat is very difficult for them.

To put it simply, a high level warrior perhaps could defeat a high level mage, but if it was 100 vs 10, then the group of high level mages can kill ten times more people than the group of high level warriors in a flash without a doubt. The number of mages a country has determines the country's power. The warriors are just cannon fodder.

If compared to current armory, warriors are like rifles, the top-notch warriors are like sniper rifles, only able to kill one at a time. However, mages are like cannons, missile-like weapons, and top-notch mages are like the ultimate nuclear weapons.

Comparing single individual's powers, the two users are tied, however once they form groups, the mages' powers can be consolidated. Unless the warriors manage to charge next to them, otherwise, the mages groups will completely massacre the warriors group in a flash.

In terms of individual people, a warrior is a bit more awesome, while in terms of a country, mages are the strongest. If nobody believes this, you can find a game, like a fantasy saga, and divide the scene, 10 mages simultaneously activating raging ice to bombard 10 warriors of the same level, and see if the warriors have any chance of getting in close range?

Chapter 45: Future Choices

After hearing Suo Jia's words, the girl's face blushed deep red in embarrassment. How was she supposed to explain? Was she supposed to say, 'This specific place is delicate', or 'Young Master has to be tender/affectionate in this way', in order to prevent him from breaking her?

Helplessly, the girl clenched her teeth and said resolutely, "In short, this lowly maid's everything has been entrusted to Young Master. Young Master just has to remember to take pity on this lowly maid. As long as you remember this, anything you do will be fine."

"What...." Helplessly rubbing his forehead, Suo Jia bitterly laughed, "I don't understand what you're talking about it. Forget it, I'm sure that there are many things that children [like me] do not understand. Anyways, I'm just going to directly say what I wanted to!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the girl breathed in a sharp breath. She tightly closed her eyes, waiting for that moment to arrive. Even though the girl knew that this day would eventually arrive, and she had even once dreamt about the circumstances of her first time, no matter what, she had never imagined that her first time would unexpectedly be with the young master.....

Just as the girl was waiting for Young Master to make a move on her, Suo Jia's voice was heard and took 5 minutes to explain the circumstances from top to bottom. Lastly, he pointed out that he wished for Eldest Sister to help him think of a solution.

Opening her eyes in disbelief, Eldest Sister said breathlessly, "You secretly called me inside just for this?"

"Yes, what else would it be? I really can't understand you; no matter how much I think about what you said before about breaking you, I can't understand it. I'll ask Mother later, and have her help explain it to me...." Suo Jia muttered to himself.

"Wu..." Hearing the young master's words, the girl grew more

embarrassed the more she listened. Eventually, when she heard that the young master was actually going to question his mother in order to understand the situation, the girl panicked, and held him back. She quickly used her hand to cover Suo Jia's mouth, and said in a strained voice, "Don't, Sister begs of you; please don't tell others about what just happened, alright?"

Hearing Eldest Sister's words, Suo Jia understood that there definitely had been some misunderstanding between the two of them just now, although he didn't know how it happened. Moreover, this misunderstanding was something that Eldest Sister did not wish for any person to know about. From her ashamed expression, she looked like she wished the misunderstanding had never even occurred.

Wrenching Eldest Sister's hands away, Suo Jia gloomily said, "Why cover my mouth for no reason? This place doesn't have anyone else in it; as long as you don't tell other people about what I'm about to tell you, I will also keep your secret."

After saying this, Suo Jia furrowed his brows, and anxiously said, "You should hurry up and help me think of a way. I really don't have the heart to see those older sisters become disfigured, but I also don't wish to see my classmates do something so senseless every day."

"Hehe..." Once the emergency had been avoided, the girl's mind immediately kicked back into action. While pondering this problem, the girl lifted her finger and said, "I've got it, Young Master. I've thought of a solution!"

"Hurry up and say it..." Hearing Eldest Sister's words, Suo Jia excitedly urged her to continue.

Smiling at Suo Jia, the girl said confidently, "If you hadn't invited your classmates over yesterday, I actually wouldn't dare say there's a solution. However, based on their actions here yesterday, besides from a few select girls, most of the girls in your class are from normal backgrounds. Even the few who are from better backgrounds definitely aren't part of aristocratic families!"

Suo Jia nodded his head. In regards to his classmates, he understood quite a lot about them. After all, they had been together for a bit over half a year; it was inevitable for him to understand at least some things about them.

After contemplating for a bit, Suo Jia said with certainty, "In my class, there are definitely some rich and powerful people. However, I can ascertain that none of them are from aristocratic families. The other girls are all from middle-class backgrounds."

After saying this, Suo Jia looked at Eldest Sister with a puzzled expression and said, "Out of curiosity, how were you able to guess this when you've only seen them once?"

Laughing in glee, Eldest Sister proudly replied, "Do you think I just fooled around during my years of training? Not mentioning other things, Eldest Sister is extremely skilled in observing people."

At this point, the girl felt that she had bragged too much. Embarrassed, she stuck her tongue out and said, "In reality, it's not anything big. If they are from aristocratic families, then they would not have admired our house so much, and would also not have gone wild with joy when they had tried those dishes we served. If they really were from aristocratic backgrounds, they would have been tired of eating those types of foods."

Wrinkling his brows, Suo Jia asked in confusion: "This explanation is fine, but the few girls from the rich and powerful families should've also been tired of these foods. On what basis did you rule out the possibility that they were from aristocratic families?"

"Temperament, speech patterns, manners, etiquette, poise, and bearing." Faced with Suo Jia's question, the girl fluidly said these six characteristic without a single pause.

Hearing Eldest Sister's words, Suo Jia first started, then immediately understood. There were many things that could be pretended, but things like temperament, speech patterns, manners, etiquette, poise, and bearing were things that were difficult to learn. Aristocrats had their own versions of these characteristics, and although they were not good or bad

in any way, they were definitely different from those of an average person's, like the contrast between black and white.

Looking at a spot on Suo Jia's head, the girl continued, "If that is case, then it's easy. Rather than persuading them, why not persuade their parents instead? Against the commoners, we convince them with money. In regards to influential families, we move them with fame. With both fame and money, there aren't many problems that can't be solved in this world!"

With a blank face, Suo Jia laughed bitterly and said with difficulty, "When you say it, it sounds simple. However, where would I make a name for myself, and where would I go to pass it onto them if I don't have fame or money myself?"

In exasperation, the girl rolled her eyes at Suo Jia, and sighed, "You don't have fame or money? Right now in all of Holy Light City, there is nobody that doesn't recognize the name of the genius mage. First, you casted the Moisture Technique on people on the streets voluntarily, then you miraculously succeeded in helping Miss Wen Ya lose weight. Even though you don't realize it yourself, in reality, you've already become the main source of gossip in all of Holy Light City!"

"It can't possibly be to such an extent!" Suo Jia exclaimed in shock.

"It isn't possible?" Glancing up and down Suo Jia, the girl said with certainty, "The topic has already fallen into girls' discussions, since your abilities are exactly what girls dream about. Especially since we recently advertised quite a bit, as well as the fact that Miss Wen Ya helped you spread the word, you are currently the biggest trend in Holy Light City."

Hearing about how famous he had become, Suo Jia stood up in happiness, and paced around. Although unsure of how to express his inner happiness, his expression soon turned bitter again. Turning around, he said to the girl, "However, even if it is like so, my reputation and benefits are both fake. I can't pass them to others; I can't even really earn them myself."

"Hehe...." Shaking her head with a smile, the girl's eyes lit up as she

said, “Young Master, listen to me. We should draw up letters and directly send them to the girls’ parents. The letters will all have the same format: first, introduce an appropriate wage, then explain how working here can help them enter the aristocrats’ circle. This way, no matter what type of parents they are, they will not be able to resist such temptations. No matter whether for reputation or for benefits, coming here will definitely be the best choice.”

“However, what if there are people who do not desire reputations or benefits?” Even though Suo Jia had faith in Eldest Sister’s plans, Suo Jia still tried to investigate all possibilities.

Helplessly rolling her eyes at Suo Jia, she replied, “No matter what they desire, coming here is still the best decision. Even if they were pursuing greater strength, coming here would raise their chances of fulfilling this goal. Also, since we’re giving wages, where else could they find a better opportunity?”

After speaking up to this point, the girl’s eyes shone and she lightly smiled, “Also, when you send the letters, you should also ask your Sister Wen Ya, with her status in Holy Light City, to send out invitations. With the government involved, people’s trust in us will be preserved. I don’t think anyone would be doubtful enough to reject our offer.”

“But....” Furrowing his brows, Suo Jia said worriedly, “What I need is for them to stay by my side for the rest of their lives so that they can help those fire wind warriors. With just your idea, won’t everyone still go their own separate ways after graduating?”

Looking at Suo Jia in praise, the girl replied, “Suo Jia, the fact that you have considered this possibility proves that you have a strong resolve to see this through to the end. However, you must understand that if anyone is ever willing to follow you, they will definitely be doing so because they are satisfied in your abilities to fulfill their desires, ideals, and the pursuing of their objectives.”

Standing up with a serious demeanor, she continued, “Your current task is to quickly improve your strength and try to enter the aristocrats’ circle

as soon as possible, so that you can obtain the status of a noble and earn lots of money. Once you have enough power, privileges, and gold, then you will be able to fulfill everyone's desires. In that case, who would bear to leave your side?"

With the spirit of admiration reflected in her eyes, the girl excitedly continued, "Look at Duke Wen Sha; he has so many people who want to stay by his side. All of the students in Holy Light Academy would be willing to follow him. If you reach Duke Wen Sha's level, then how could anyone not vow loyalty and devotion to you?"

Author's Note

The water element really doesn't have any formidability, however the ice element does, mainly due to the harm the freezing air can cause. As for water, it isn't as if you are using your hands to touch the water. Although it can cause damage, it isn't a significant amount. The most important factor is that water magics can recover and heal, so there are no problems.

This is actually similar to China's traditional wuxia. If you want stronger attack, then you need to first injure yourself, for example the Seven Injuries Boxing. As for those martial arts that use soft attacks to beat steel, it not only doesn't do damage, but it also has benefits, like TaiChi.

Also, to a country, even though the number of mages may be small, high level warriors and mages are equal in numbers. As for low level warriors, or those who have not gone through the systematic training, are common, and they are only a bit stronger than average people.

I'll explain here that a Mage Saint's area of attack is at least a city 100 meters in diameter. The fire element, which has the largest attack range, can attack targets within a 200 meter diameter, and all these will be completely eradicated, even steel.

Mages are strong for another reason as well. This is because they can call life with the same element, for example the water, fire, earth, wind, etc. Therefore, once at a high level, the strategy of a mage is that they can

even subjugate a legion.

However, mages are also not omnipotent. Using high level magics require very long activation times, and once they leave the protection of other professions, they cannot do anything. Reality is also like this. The mages in the western legends all have followers or aids with the responsibility of protecting the mages, allowing the mages to activate their magics.

It can be said that as long as a mage can be protected long enough to activate magics, a mage can easily kill tens thousands of warriors that are the same level as them in a flash. However if they have nobody protecting them, then a warrior can easily slaughter a mage of the same level. Therefore, mages are for strategic use, while warriors are at most for tactical use.

Mages are aristocrats, and warriors are not as low as slaves, just normal soldiers. High level warriors and mages are equally rare and precious. However, fire wind warriors are exceptions. They are essentially raised by countries to become assassins. If everyone continues to read, you will soon understand their positions.

Chapter 46: First Encounter With The Prince

Seeing Eldest Sister's expression of worship, Suo Jia nodded his head as he thought about it to some extent. He knew that Eldest Sister's message was: if you wanted others to follow you, then you needed to have unique charisma, extraordinary power, extremely high status, and seas of wealth. Only then could you satisfy everyone's desires.

However, despite these words, there were still many things that remained unresolved. Knitting his brows, Suo Jia cautiously asked, "Reputation and status are things we can slowly gain right now; after all, they cannot be achieved immediately. But what about money? Where are we supposed to get all the money needed to pay wages to a hundred girls?"

Looking at Suo Jia with an expression of appreciation, the girl replied without hesitation, "This is not a problem at all. We can just form a service project that, at a set period of time, will call a gathering. Anyone who attends the gathering will be able to enjoy a hundred water mages consecutively activating a moisturizing rain to bathe in. That way, it will not only improve the style of our white villa, it will also create another source of income. Once we have this revenue, we can pay off the wage expense."

After muttering to himself for a while, Suo Jia shook his head and said, "This idea of yours won't work. Everyone has to attend school everyday; there's no way they can come here to help out frequently. Even if we offer wages, it won't work. After all, as students, our current duty is to study!"

"Hehe...." Laughing nonchalantly, she said, "Young Master, this concern of yours is superfluous. Do you still remember our objective? We are not advancing based on quantity, so even if they don't come every day, once a week would be fine as well. Although the frequency would decrease, the price of attending a gathering would, in turn, increase. No matter if they come every day or once a week, our income will not change."

In understanding, Suo Jia rubbed his head, suddenly understanding everything. He sighed in admiration at Eldest Sister; how would the income not change? Knowing her, she would definitely take advantage of the situation; if the original prices were not increased by ten times, she would definitely not be satisfied.

With Suo Jia now pleasantly surprised, the girl continued, "Moreover, we don't need to offer very high wages. Rich and powerful children are not uncommon, and giving minimum wages to middle class is fine. After all....an eight year old child has no way of going out to work; not every person is like Young Master."

Sitting back on the ground, Suo Jia wrinkled his brows and considered it for a very long time. After a while, when he was finally unable to pick out any more flaws, Suo Jia clapped down hard on his leg, "Ok Eldest Sister, this matter is decided then. We'll send out the letters to my classmates' parents today; this matter cannot be delayed any longer!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, Eldest Sister replied without a pause, "If it's like this, then I will hire people to request a day off from school for you. Don't go to school today; instead immediately hurry to the City Lord's residence and find Miss Wen Ya to discuss this matter with her. That way, we can completely finish this matter today."

Suo Jia agreed to Eldest Sister's request without any hesitation. In reality, going to school now didn't have much meaning anymore. He had already learned the Meditation Technique and the Ice Sphere Technique. He didn't need to go back and practice mage apprentice level magic like the Swamp Technique anymore.

After quickly finishing his breakfast, Suo Jia rushed over to the City Lord's residence. After announcing his presence, Suo Jia walked towards Wen Ya's quarters alone. This matter required her to help in order to secure the matter.

Just as he was nearing her quarters, he heard Wen Ya's joyous laugh. Following it, he heard a deep male voice. Just as he was secretly guessing the male's identity, Wen Ya saw Suo Jia from her window, and shouted

happily, “Younger Brother Suo Jia, come in quickly. I want to introduce this person to you.”

Hearing Wen Ya’s voice, Suo Jia quickened his pace, and after turning around the wall’s corner in a few large strides, he entered Wen Ya’s quarters from the main entrance. Within the entrance, Wen Ya was currently snuggled next to a man with a face full of happiness, and she waved Suo Jia over with a smile.

Although Wen Ya’s beauty was Suo Jia’s work, Suo Jia could not help but be awestruck at her unique beauty every single time he saw her, to the point where he could not speak. If her skin wasn’t always so beautiful, no matter how capable Suo Jia had been, he would not have been able to make her look so good.

After looking at Wen Ya, Suo Jia looked toward the man beside her. He was a fair and plump young man, with a look of heroic spirit. Unfortunately, his life was probably too abundant, as he seemed a bit fat; his belly already bulged up slightly, and he had a double chin.

With a quick glance, it was obvious this slight bulge was not normal, the young man who was a little fat, at this moment..... he looked at Suo Jia with a smile, his face showing praise and a thankful expression.

As Suo Jia secretly observed the opposite party, Wen Ya proudly said, “Younger Brother Suo Jia, this is the Holy Light Empire’s Fourth Prince, your Big Sister’s future husband. Why aren’t you greeting him quickly? You must know, as a prince of a country, he definitely won’t let your greeting go to waste.”

Smiling, Suo Jia was not at all intimidated by the man’s identity. With a scrutinizing look, he glanced over the Fourth Prince. Afterwards... Suo Jia acted just like Wen Ya’s blood-related brother, and in a spoiled manner, curled his lip, “Although this man’s standing matched Big Sister’s, his appearance is not appropriate, and I don’t think he is good enough for my beautiful sister.”

“What!” After hearing Suo Jia’s words, no matter how well-tempered the Fourth Prince was, he was still unable to accept such words. Even though

he did not burst from anger, it could be seen from the expression on his somewhat fat face that he was trying hard not to let the anger get to him.

Suo Jia remained smiling; at the same time, Wen Ya's expression had evaporated. She knew what kind of people Suo Jia and the Fourth Prince were. She also knew that Suo Jia wouldn't have said such hurtful things thoughtlessly, and that the Fourth Prince wouldn't just explode rashly either.

Truthfully, Suo Jia had his reasons to dare to say such things. Where he had first heard about the Fourth Prince's identity, Suo Jia suddenly realized: rather than asking for Wen Ya's name, wouldn't it be better if the Fourth Prince's was used? If they sent the invitation letter in the name of the Fourth Prince, anyone who dared to refuse would end up waiting for the slaughter of their whole clan. With the royal family's power, how would the royal family allow such a stain, much less, the Fourth Prince's invitation. This consequence was something that everybody would be able to realize in their sleep; even idiots won't refuse.

However, although perhaps the Fourth Prince would help on behalf of Sister Wen Ya, he also would not necessarily agree to help if Suo Jia asked directly. However, if Suo Jia really did do so and ended up owing the Fourth Prince, how exactly was he supposed to return a royal's favor? The only way would be to become his servant.

While thinking this, Suo Jia swept a glance over the Fourth Prince, and shook his head, mouth twitching, "Don't accept my words so easily; I didn't say you were ugly. To be honest, you are quite handsome."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Fourth Prince's expression became a bit better. Sadly...just when he had barely begun to feel pleased with himself, Suo Jia once again attacked, "However despite this, whenever you and Sister go out together, people will definitely say that Sister is like a fresh flower that was stuck in the...."

Suo Jia was clever enough not to finish the sentence; otherwise, that would qualify as insulting royalty, something that would lead to death no matter how many lives he had. However, on behalf of Wen Ya, the Fourth

Prince would have no way of punishing him. A royalty's dignity was his most important aspect, and was definitely not something that could be stained.

There are many things that did not have to be said out loud; people can understand the meaning even without the physical words. Once said aloud, then problems become more complicated. 'Loose tongues can cause a lot of trouble'; knowing when to say certain things is also an important skill that needs to be learned.

As expected, after listening to Suo Jia's words, the Fourth Prince's face became green. He was abnormally furious inside; even a saint would not be able to bear someone saying that he wasn't good enough for his girlfriend right in front of her. Moreover, although a little fat, the Fourth Prince considered himself as being someone as confident and at ease.

"Gege..." Hearing Suo Jia's words, Wen Ya actually was so amused that her heart was racing. She completely ignored the Fourth Prince's feelings, and instead began laughing in delight. Hearing Wen Ya's laughter, the Fourth Prince glanced at her lovingly, and his anger abated a bit. Anyone, regardless of their identity, would have a difficult time maintaining an angry mood when faced with such a beauty.

Seeing the two exchange flirting glances at each other, Suo Jia no longer held back, and walked to the table next to the two lovers to drink a cup of tea. Once he finished, he loudly sat on the chair, and began to dig into the delicate sweets. Since he had eaten his breakfast in a rush, he was still hungry.

Seeing Suo Jia's uncaring manner, the Fourth Prince could not help but shake his head as he bitterly laughed. If an adult did the same thing Suo Jia was currently doing, the Fourth Prince would have dragged the person out and beat him up. However, since it was Suo Jia, the Fourth Prince could only tolerate it. The great Holy Light Empire's Fourth Prince could not, after all, sulk because of a mere child!

Glancing at the Fourth Prince critically, Suo Jia seemed to have become addicted to teasing him, "Fourth Prince, your big belly and that fat chin,

are really too ugly. Your body is so fat that it looked like edema; it's torture to eyes." Speaking, Suo Jia nodded hard, as if completely serious.

After hearing Suo Jia being so rude, not just the Fourth Prince, this time, even Wen Ya changed colors. The Fourth Prince was still after all, a prince of the the country. How could he allow himself to be so humiliated? Suo Jia, exactly what was he trying to pull?!

Chapter 47: The Denounced Scheme

As if he had not seen the lovers' expressions, Suo Jia minded his own business and said, "Brother-in-law, you should not be unhappy about this; I'm currently trying to help you for your own sake. Your origins, knowledge, and status are all perfect, and definitely match up with Sister's. However your outer appearance is slightly flawed. Despite all this, even if I looked all over the entire world, it would be very unlikely for me to find any man that is more suitable for Sister than you."

The instant he heard Suo Jia suddenly correct his words to talk of his brother-in-law so sweetly, the Fourth Prince did not know whether he was supposed to stay angry or laugh.

While the Fourth Prince was having difficulty deciding on his feelings, Suo Jia stuffed all the sweets in his hand into his mouth, and said unclearly, "Brother-in-law, although outer appearances are not the most important, you are still the Holy Light Empire's Fourth Prince. Since you represent the country, although slight flaws may be fine on other people, for you to have slight flaws really makes a person feel regret!"

"Ya!" Hearing this, although the Fourth Prince was still confused, there was no way Wen Ya would not understand. With glowing eyes, she looked at Suo Jia, and said hurriedly, "Suo Jia, what you've said is completely right. How have I never thought of this before?"

At this point, Wen Ya excitedly looked at the Fourth Prince, "Fourth Prince, you should let Suo Jia help you lose some weight. I have personally witnessed Suo Jia's abilities. As long as he acts, you will immediately become the world's naturally most handsome, most distinguished, and most elegant prince. In the future, no matter where we go, everyone will praise us as a match made in heaven; people will no longer say that I am a fresh flower stuck in...stuck in..." Wen Ya was still unable to finish the sentence.

"Cow dung...." Lovingly looking at Wen Ya, the Fourth Prince finished her sentence.

Hearing the Fourth Prince's words, Wen Ya gently cuddled against the Fourth Prince for a bit, then charmingly said, "You are not to say such things about yourself. No matter how you change, I will always love you. Perfecting your appearance is only out of consideration for your future."

"Nn..." The Fourth Prince nodded his head while in deep thought. To the average person, perhaps appearances were not that important. But as a prince, one of the country's possible successors, outer appearances were too important. Otherwise, he would lose his majestic presence!

Although he had never said this out loud, in reality, the Fourth Prince actually really minded his appearance. Otherwise, his mood would not have fluctuated so much with Suo Jia's few words. Truthfully, this was exactly what he was the most self-conscious about.

Once a person gains weight, it gives others the impression that he/she looks stupid. A foolish and chubby appearance makes it harder for others to believe in a person. The Fourth Prince's current appearance couldn't be looked down upon; this was already something he had gained by pouring all his efforts in and suffering through diets. If he had eaten freely, then he would currently be fatter by at least three or four fold!

In this world, Wen Ya was not the only one that wanted to lose weight. She was simply a more extreme and disastrous case. However, almost all rich and powerful aristocrats had chubby appearances. Therefore, losing weight was a problem that essentially all aristocrats faced.

Unfortunately, after so many years, an effective method of losing weight had never been discovered. Otherwise, Wen Ya would not have known that she would have to suffer for so long, and the Fourth Prince would definitely not have relied on painful diets to maintain his form.

Hearing that Suo Jia could painlessly help him lose weight in an instant and give him a model-like figure, the Fourth Prince was internally beyond happy. Even though Suo Jia was still very young, the Fourth Prince still completely believed in his abilities. After all, wasn't the Wen Ya next to him a perfect example of Suo Jia's success?

The Fourth Prince was not an ingenuine person. Thoughts were

thoughts, and he wouldn't purposely pretend that he didn't care. If such a good thing really existed, who wouldn't want to try it out? Immediately....under Suo Jia's commands, the Fourth Prince laid down on the bed for Suo Jia to activate his Weight Loss Technique.

Unlike Wen Ya, the Fourth Prince was only slightly chubby, so the amount of work required was not a lot. After spending only three hours, Suo Jia completed all of the procedures necessary.

When the servants had come to inform it was time to eat, the Fourth Prince looked at his reflection incredulously, rubbing his steadfast and handsome face. He was unable to believe that he could look so outstanding.

The most brag-worthy point was that Suo Jia had not turned the Fourth Prince into some pretty boy. As the empire's successor, a dignified appearance was the most important to the Fourth Prince, and so Suo Jia had strengthened the creases on the Fourth Prince's face to make the edges of his face sharper and more distinct, sculpting out a more masculine appearance.

Dignity, determination, strength, composure, and confidence were all characteristics that the Fourth Prince's current appearance expressed. Moreover, along with these traits, the Fourth Prince's handsomeness was also preserved. At first glance, he even gave off a very cool feeling, causing people to unconsciously trust him.

Before losing weight, the Fourth Prince also did not know what appearance would be best. He could only helplessly let Suo Jia act freely. Even if he was unsatisfied, his appearance could gradually be altered later. However he had not imagined that after Suo Jia's first miraculous weight loss treatment, the Fourth Prince would be so satisfied with his appearance that he could not speak. When Suo Jia questioned if the Fourth Prince wanted any further changes, the Fourth Prince replied without hesitation that this was already perfect, and did not require the slightest bit of change!

What men need is never beauty. However, this new face already

consolidated everything the Fourth Prince did need. In Fourth Prince's opinion, a single change would actually ruin the perfection. Deep inside, he felt that his face was actually better than Wen Ya's, not worse. Although it wasn't as stunning as Wen Ya's, as a man, this was the best possible face he could have.

Seeing his new expression, the Fourth Prince finally knew why Suo Jia had insulted him in the beginning. Compared to his current appearance, his previous self was really too lacking. A foolish, fat, and imbecilic appearance was definitely not suitable to be with Wen Ya.

The Fourth Prince was an intelligent person; Suo Jia's little act could not possibly escape his perception. Even if he did not understand the reasoning for it in the beginning, there was no way he wouldn't understand it now. It was obviously the concept of doing one a favor to ask for one in return; that brat must have had something that he wanted the Fourth Prince to help him with.

However, without even mentioning that Suo Jia offered him such a big help, just by looking at the fact he has helped him bring Wen Ya and him together, the Fourth Prince would definitely be willing to fulfill any favor Suo Jia asked of him.

Pondering this, the Fourth Prince took off his airs and invited Suo Jia to eat lunch with them in a friendly manner. Since Suo Jia still had a request, he naturally did not want to leave, and thus agreed to join them without hesitation.

On the dining table, the Fourth Prince gently picked up some food and placed it in Wen Ya's bowl. After lightly stowing his chopsticks, the Fourth Prince said in a neutral voice, "Little fellow, you've already been busy for the whole morning. Since my current mood is pretty good, you can just say whatever you wanted to request of me."

"What are you saying, I can't just help brother-in-law for no reason?" Suo Jia smiled mischievously.

"Eh!" Pretending to nod his head in understanding, the Fourth Prince laughed, "If that is so, then I will not mind you. I'm just about full, so I

will go rest now!" After saying these words,

"Don't!" Seeing this scene, Suo Jia shouted out in panic to stop him. After all, Suo Jia was still young, and so he couldn't keep his calm.

"Hahahaha....." Seeing Suo Jia's panicked expression, Wen Ya and the Fourth Prince exchanged glances and immediately began to laugh together.

Seeing the couple laughing hard, Suo Jia finally realized that the two had simply been playing with him. He pouted as he sulked, and chewed hard on the food in his mouth as he said, "Really, since I've already been seen through, I might as well just confess. If I had known earlier, I wouldn't have bothered to spend so much effort and save me from a headache!"

Seeing Suo Jia's adorable manner, the Fourth Prince and Wen Ya laughed even harder. However, while they were laughing, the couple was secretly shocked. Suo Jia's scheme was not very brilliant; any adult could easily see through it with a single glance. However, Suo Jia was only an 8 years old child. Once he grew older and had gained much more experience, how skilled would he become?

Looking at Suo Jia with admiration, the Fourth Prince secretly praised him. Was this the amount of shrewdness an 8 years old normally had? Throughout his whole life, he had never once seen an 8 years old be so scheming. If the Fourth Prince could not use this talent for his own benefit, then once Suo Jia grew older, the Fourth Prince would be putting himself in danger!

Although the Fourth Prince had the power to inherit the throne, it must be known that he was only the fourth prince. There were eight others that had the same rights. The final person to successfully inherit the throne depends on not only their accomplishments, but also how influential they could be to foster a trusted confidant to establish their own power. These are steps that all princes had to experience.

Although Suo Jia's scheme today had been easily seen through, he had already won the Fourth Prince's admiration. Seeing the sulking Suo Jia,

the Fourth Prince secretly decided that he definitely had to win over this child. Ten years from now, when the Fourth Prince would fight for the throne, Suo Jia would definitely be able to help him succeed!

Author's Note:

Everyone already said that Suo Jia's knowledge is too high, unlike an 8 years old. This can only explain one point, which is that I have achieved my goal. Otherwise, how would I let the Fourth Prince notice Suo Jia? Of course, the Fourth Prince's appearance is only a passing part in the plot, soon it will be gone.

As for the weight of 6000 gold, ha. This is really something I have never considered hehe, this is definitely a BUG. Sorry...

As for everything going too smoothly for Suo Jia....nnn....it is definitely a bit too favorable, but there is a reason for it. As for what the reason is, you will find out in the future. If it isn't favorable then it won't work, since there are shady people behind the scenes. I can only say this much, everyone should just guess the rest themselves. It should be something that can be speculated. Moreover, the story has already presented it, and it could even be said that it has been clearly written, it's just that nobody has yet detected it.

As a final comment: never only look at the surface of things. A lot of things look like they are bright and sunny, but they are actually very dark; especially human nature, which is even more so.

Chapter 48: A Letter of Authority

Under the Fourth Prince's suggestion, Suo Jia clearly explained everything he wanted to do, as well as his future thoughts and plans. While hearing Suo Jia tell his story, the Fourth Prince's eye grew brighter and brighter.

The more he began to understand Suo Jia, the more the Fourth Prince admired him. He was only 8 years old, and he had already thought about winning over 100 water mages; the story of the fire wind warriors was even more ridiculous. The most terrifying part was that Suo Jia was completely capable of achieving his wish. Thinking about it, once Suo Jia really succeeded, just the 100 water mages combined with the 36 fire wind warriors would make such a formidable group. If he just added a few more personnel, he would have enough people to besiege a whole city!

Soon after, Suo Jia finished explaining his plans and tightly furrowed his brows. The Fourth Prince contemplated for a long time and did not say anything. Seeing the scene in front of him, Suo Jia uncomfortably tensed up. Was this task really that difficult to take care of?

While Suo Jia was in an uncomfortable state, the Fourth Prince suddenly slapped the table with a muffled sound. He began to shout in a loud voice, "Come, grab a pen and a piece of paper. I want to personally draft this letter!"

Under the Fourth Prince's command, the servants at once delivered the pen and paper. Holding the quill pen, the Fourth Prince hesitated for a moment, and then quickly began to write.

"Under the authority of the Prince, I award the commoner Suo Jia the position of Holy Light Empire's eighth ranked lord. This award entitles eighth ranked noble Suo Jia to bestow official attendant status to 100 individuals, and specially awards Suo Jia the ability to grant 100 official attendant titles." Writing freely, a short official document quickly emerged.

Seeing the simple few lines, Wen Ya revealed a confused and

embarrassed expression. Although she knew that Suo Jia did them such huge favors and that the Fourth Prince would not treat Suo Jia shabbily, to help out this much was not something that Wen Ya could have imagined.

First were noble titles. 8 years-old Suo Jia was already an eighth ranked lord. This was equivalent to immediately moving up four ranks. Historically, Suo Jia was most likely the youngest eight ranked lord. This was something that only the royal family was capable of accomplishing.

In addition, there was the right to recruit 100 official attendants. It must be understood that recruiting official attendants was a privilege that only baron ranked nobility and higher could have. Even princes had limited amounts of official attendants. In order to give Suo Jia these 100 official attendants, the Prince had to reduce the amount of his official attendants.

As a prince, the Fourth Prince could use his authority to recruit 1000 official attendants. Now that he had suddenly given Suo Jia the authority to recruit 100 official attendants, the Fourth Prince could now only recruit 900 official attendants. This was equivalent to gifting his own attendants to Suo Jia, a tremendously great gift!

Finally, he gave Suo Jia the right to grant nobility titles to commoners; this was another great gift. Although the noble rank village paladin was not a high rank, but the fact that 100 commoners were allowed to become village paladins at the same time made this a big deal. Even if it was the a prince, he could not arbitrarily give out nobility titles. This still required the authority of a prince, and the Fourth Prince had to give a share of his rights to Suo Jia!

Since we are on the topic, let's explain Holy Light Empire's nobility title ranks a bit:

Commoner, village palladin, and then there are eight Lord ranks. Eighth ranked lord, seventh ranked lord, sixth ranked lord, fifth ranked lord, fourth ranked lord, third ranked lord, second ranked lord, first ranked lord, high knight nobility, highest knight nobility, baronet, baron, viscount, count, earl, marquis, duke, grand duke, and prince.

Now that the Fourth Prince has awarded Suo Jia these things with his authority, the things Suo Jia originally planned to do weren't even a big deal anymore. Suo Jia originally did not have the power to recruit official attendants, and had to rely on the Fourth Prince's authority. This was simply a matter of royalty; after being given this chance, who would really refuse royalty? Even if there were some fearless individuals, they would still immediately flee. Holy Light Empire not only did not tolerate such individuals, but would chase them to death as long as they still lived in this world.

Wen Ya opened her mouth several times before finally holding herself back. It was too late to persuade the Fourth Prince to change his mind. Although she didn't know what the Fourth Prince was thinking, Wen Ya knew that it was better for women to not be so controlling over men.

For the sake of preventing Suo Jia from abusing his authority, Wen Ya furrowed her eyebrows and carefully explained the three uses of Fourth Prince's authorization. Basically, as long as a person was a civilian from the Holy Light Empire, Suo Jia could use this Authorization Document to promote him or her to an official attendant. In addition Suo Jia had the power to promote him or her to a village paladin. Just this single Authorization Document gave Suo Jia an enormous amount of authority!

Listening to Wen Ya's explanation, Suo Jia finally understood that these lines had enormous value. This was too much; how could Suo Jia dare to accept such a precious gift? This was not as simple as gifting a villa, as all three of these awards were extraordinarily precious!

Nervously swallowing, Suo Jia sternly shook his head and said, "Fourth Prince, you are giving me way too much. These things are all too precious, and I cannot accept such generosity; let's switch to something else okay?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Fourth Prince began to laugh, "For these three gifts of authorization, the first is my gratitude towards you for helping Wen Ya. The second gift is for helping me personally, and the last is one I'm giving to you as a brother-in-law. Since you call Wen Ya your older sister, then I am naturally your brother-in-law, and you must accept my gift.

“This...” Faced with Fourth Prince’s words, Suo Jia’s brain was in chaos. He couldn’t understand Fourth Prince’s thought process. Suo Jia was still too young, and could not understand the Fourth Prince’s intentions.

Before Suo Jia could completely comprehend the matter, he was quickly sent out of the residence. The Fourth Prince expressed that he was already rather tired and wanted to rest. While Suo Jia was still confused, the Fourth Prince tied him up to a boat. After all, even if Suo Jia completely understood what was going on, no matter what he could not refuse. If he refused, then how could he be sure that there was an alternate path? As for the people that the Fourth Prince appreciated, if they were not of any use to him, then he would kill them for sure.

After sending off Suo Jia, Wen Ya furrowed her eyebrows and said, “Your Majesty Fourth Prince, what exactly were you thinking? Why did you give him that much authoritative power? Are you saying that you no longer want to fight for the throne? Even if you no longer wanted to contest for that position, at the very least you would need to save enough strength to protect yourself.”

“Haha...” Smiling, the Fourth Prince said with sparking eyes, “Of course I wouldn’t recklessly gift him with so much authority. This child, although he is still so young, already has such scheming prowess and great strength. This kind of person will certainly become a well respected person in the future!”

In regards to Fourth Prince’s words, Wen Ya felt a sincere appreciation, but this did not ease the doubts within her heart. Seeing Wen Ya’s still hesitant expression, Fourth Prince chuckled and said, “Do you still not understand my intentions? No matter what, we need to establish a good relationship with Suo Jia. In addition, this needs to be the most stable relationship, and become his older sister and brother-in-law. As long as we preserve this relationship, if we ever need help in the future, do you think Suo Jia will simply watch on the side?”

“This...” Faced with the Fourth Prince’s analysis, Wen Ya slowly began to understand a bit. She still did not understand completely however, and asked worriedly, “But he is still so young, do you really think he is capable

of helping you? Also, are you not afraid of him backstabbing you?"

Smiling while shaking his head, Fourth Prince replied, "It is precisely because he is young that I see value in him. Right now I have the power to influence him; if many people have their eyes on him, then it will be difficult to recruit him to our side. As for betrayal, everyone else has just as much of a chance of doing so. If we compare Suo Jia to others, since we have developed a relationship since he was young, it might be the least likely to cause betrayal; unless of course we mess up on our side."

"En..." Nodding her head in agreement, Wen Ya knew that in this world, there was no such thing as absolute loyalty. As for why people believed in loyalty, it was because there was not enough situations of betrayal in comparison. Fourth Prince's words made the most sense.

While Wen Ya was thinking, Fourth Prince continued, "If I had all of my official attendants at my side, indeed I would look mighty; however that is simply on the surface. Now that I have given Suo Jia some of my official attendants, this will allow him to rapidly develop. Once Suo Jia becomes more formidable, won't that increase my strength as well?"

"Indeed!" Looking at the Fourth Prince with praise, Wen Ya excitedly replied, "I understand now; you are raising Suo Jia for the sake of a long term mutual development. That's why you were willing to pay such a large price this one time!"

Profoundly nodding his head, the Fourth Prince narrowed his eyes and said, "Actually, originally I could not make this decision. However, as you've seen today, this 8-years old child is capable of such calculations. In addition... he already has the opportunity of having this generation of fire and wind dual element warriors under his command. Adding that to the water mages that he grew up alongside with, think about it; how secure and united will this team be in the future! Suo Jia represents a strong, united, and committed team that will be useful to me! This is the main reason why I paid such a large price!"

Chapter 49: Incredibly Selfish

After returning to his home, Suo Jia immediately summoned Eldest Sister to come to his bedroom. He explained to her in great detail regarding everything that had occurred today. When the girl heard that Suo Jia had already become an eighth ranked lord, she could not close her surprised mouth.

However, the shocking news that Suo Jia brought home was not simply just this. As the girl continued listening, she became more and more relaxed. With so many pleasant surprises stacked on top of each other, she actually felt a little numb, or in other words, sluggish.

Eighth ranked lord, the ability to recruit 100 official attendants, and the authority to award 100 civilians the noble rank of village paladin: these things were simply too outrageous. Even if it was Grand Duke Wen Sha, he only had so much power. For the first time, the girl could clearly feel Suo Jia's brilliance; he was already becoming an unstoppable force.

Maybe within the eyes of ordinary people, these three gifts seemed extremely precious; however, the girl was trained from a young age, and knew that these were simply things that people saw on the outside. As for Suo Jia's actions, the most precious thing he obtained this time was the prince's feelings and trust. Being seen as important by the Fourth Prince was the real treasured gift that Suo Jia received.

Although this time, Suo Jia did indeed board Fourth Prince's ship, as long as the Fourth Prince did not sink, the things that Suo Jia wished to accomplish would simply be smooth sailing. By borrowing the Fourth Prince's name, within the circle of nobility, he had an identity and status. In the future, if the Fourth Prince claimed the royal throne, then Suo Jia could be said to have limitless good fortune; it would be simply too frightening.

Of course, high profits always carried with it heavy risk. Once the Fourth Prince fell, then Suo Jia could forget about running away. It could be said that if one received glory, then everyone received glory; if one

suffered a loss, then everyone suffered the loss. As for what Suo Jia could do at the moment, before the battle for the throne began, he had to hurry and improve his own strength. After obtaining more influence, he could then help the Fourth Prince claim the throne.

Tightly biting her lips, the girl already thought of things that could potentially happen ten years in the future in an instant. While she was pondering and was lost in thought, Suo Jia said with a joyful expression, “Eldest Sister, now all of our problems are solved. Those 100 village paladin titles, as well as 100 official attendants, let’s give them all to those girls. With this, their parents definitely won’t reject my plans right?”

“You!” Suo Jia’s words woke up the girl from her thoughts. Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the girl opened her eyes wide, and after a moment, began bitterly laughing. “I am starting to have some doubts. The Fourth Prince setting his sight on you was most likely a bad decision!”

“Ah!” Hearing the girl’s evaluation, Suo Jia’s jaw dropped in surprise. Where did these words come from?

Seeing Suo Jia’s astonished expression, the girl said in an angry tone, “You are being blinded by this luxury. Do you think that the village paladin nobility title is something so cheap? Did you know, if a businessman wanted to earn the village paladin noble title, he needs to spend 1,000,000 gold in order to do so. If you add together all 100 titles, then it surpasses 100 million gold. Who gives gifts like this as if it were candy?”

Speaking up to this point, the girl took a deep breath. With some effort, she calmed herself down before continuing, “Not to mention the 100 personal attendants, what do you take them for? Do you really understand? As long as that someone is a civilian, then you can use your authority to order him or her to become your official attendant. No matter who they were or how powerful they are, they have to obey your orders. If not, then they will be seen as opposing the royal crown, and will be completely annihilated.”

Hearing Eldest Sister's voice, Suo Jia's jaw dropped wide open, and carried a completely stupefied expression. Suo Jia bitterly said, "Since it's like this, then what should we use to make the parents of those girls agree?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the girl said without any hesitation, "For now, just use the Fourth Prince's name to send them a letter, and recruit them over to do work. As for wages, let's follow the numbers we originally set. Afterwards, write on the letter that if they are hardworking and diligent, then you will grant them the village paladin titles. This will be enough."

"Ah! So simple! Will this work?" Hearing Eldest Sister's words, Suo Jia asked skeptically.

Coldly snorting, the girl replied grumpily, "Young Master, how can you still not understand? First of all, this is a letter written using the Fourth Prince's name, and in addition our provided wages cannot be considered low; treatment is also excellent. No matter what they require, we can provide it to them. Finally, bestowing a noble title is something that only royalty can do, but you already have this authority. To ordinary people, you already represent the royal family. Would they dare defy you?"

Pausing for a second, the girl helplessly said, "The truth is, this type of great opportunity is not one that you could gain even through begging. Even without mentioning the Fourth Prince, or the ability to confer noble titles, I am confident that you will still be able to recruit them. Since there are so many additional benefits, nobody will refuse."

Happily smiling, Suo Jia nodded his head and said, "Alright, let's do it like this. However, within the letters, tell the parents not to mention my status to their children. I don't want the other students to feel that I am some kind of special existence. I am very satisfied with my current position; I don't want them to suddenly change their attitudes toward me."

After thinking about it for a short period of time, the girl nodded her head and said, "This way is optimal too; only under these conditions could you build the best relationships. If fame and fortune are mixed together,

no matter what feelings they have, it will all be fake to some degree.”

“En...” Joyously nodding his head, Suo Jia resolutely said, “Okay, as for the upcoming plans, I will leave it in your hands. Hurry and go complete these things; I need to go and study.” While speaking, Suo Jia stood up and walked towards the door.

While opening the door Suo Jia suddenly stopped, and turned his head. “Oh that’s right, if you want, I can grant you the village paladin title!”

“What!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the girl immediately shot up. Looking at Suo Jia in disbelief, she really could not believe what she had just heard.

Seeing Eldest Sister’s embarrassed expression, Suo Jia smiled and repeated, “I was saying, if you wish for it, I can bestow upon you the village paladin noble rank.”

Finally confirming the Young Master’s words, the girl’s two eyes were quickly covered with tears. This was something that she didn’t even dare dream about while living as a maid. With no identity, status, or freedom, how could she even begin to think about nobility! In reality, the maids were levels of existence even lower than those of ordinary civilians.

Seeing Suo Jia’s sincere gaze, the girl really wanted to nod her head and accept. However, the Young Master was already so good towards her, what did she need a noble title for? Although on the outside, the Young Master had the authority to bestow this on 100 people, every single one of those titles would be crucial for the Young Master.

After thinking about this tough decision for a long time, the girl finally said with some difficulty, “In the end, I think it’s best if I don’t receive it. Although this lowly maid really wants the title, these titles are simply too precious and too important to Young Master. As long as Young Master remembers the good things this lowly maid has done for him, and respects this maid a bit more, then this lowly maid will not ask for anything more.”

With her two misty eyes looking at Suo Jia, the girl openly said, “Young Master, you need to remember that these 100 official attendant titles and

100 nobility titles definitely should not be given out carelessly. These are your greatest assets; even if it was the Fourth Prince, he could not afford to give you such authority again.”

Looking at Suo Jia , the girl soon after said with respect, “Alright Young Master, you should hurry and cultivate. This lowly maid will also quickly complete these things; time is precious so this maid will not accompany you.”

Bidding Eldest Sister farewell, Suo Jia walked straight towards the underwater training ground. Although there were no classes today, Suo Jia still did not want to waste any precious time by idling. He had to work harder to succeed!

Arriving at the underground training area, Suo Jia did not immediately begin to cultivate. Instead, he carefully inspected the room. This past week, under the hard work of their hired employees, the area’s appearance had completely changed.

The scattered wooden shelves have already been removed. Within this vast space, in addition to several thick pillars and the empty area, the two relatively thicker pillars had also been painted with an eye-catching purple, making them look both gorgeous and elegant.

Within the large expanse of empty space, only on the wall opposite of the entrance were there magical targets. Magic lamps covered the top of the empty space and the multitudes of pillars, as well as the surrounding walls, covering the entire underground training area with a layer of radiance.

Looking at the newly renovated training area, Suo Jia could not hold in his excitement. Stretching out his arms and warming up his arms and legs, Suo Jia prepared to begin cultivating.

He did not immediately begin to meditate, as training this way did not yield the best results. Before meditating, Suo Jia first practiced his magic spells: the Moisture Technique, Swamp Technique, and Ice Sphere Technique. Only after he completely depleted his magic and spirit power, did he meditate. While cultivating meditation, he could at the same time

replenish his spiritual and magical powers. Only this way did he not waste any time.

Chapter 50: Origin of Strength

In regards to everyday life, everything had already improved by a lot. In addition, under Eldest Sister's management, things had been developing more and more in the right direction. At this point, Suo Jia no longer needed to think too much about these matters, since his living conditions were already protected. From now on, increasing his strength was his biggest priority.

Suo Jia's life had improved a lot. Under Sister's management, things have been developing more

For now, Suo Jia's only priority was enhancing his strength as quickly as possible, in order to be better prepared for the upcoming year-end Grand Competition. Although he had already grasped the Ice Sphere technique, and far surpassed any fellow student, that was only within his class.

In reality, the fire arts' Fireball Technique, earth arts' Earthen Spike, and wind arts' Wind Edge were similar to the Moisture Technique in regards to being rankless spells, but in terms of power, they were comparable to the Ice Sphere Technique. This was precisely one of the reasons why the water arts were considered inferior compared to the other arts.

However, despite things being this way, no water mage ever envied any of the other types of mages. On the contrary, it didn't matter if it was fire arts, wind arts, or earth arts, they all envied the water arts' Moisture Technique to death. Within these four elemental arts, water was the only one with the capability to provide treatments.

Of course, the other three elements all had their own perks as well. Earth mages had enhanced Earthen Armors for increased defense, fire mages had enhanced offensive capabilities from their scorching spells, and wind mages had enhanced movement capabilities from their swift winds. They all had special attributes of their own.

In terms of magic cultivation, Suo Jia was already at the forefront of his peers. In terms of magic offensive power however, how could Suo Jia, who

only recently grasped the Ice Sphere Technique, defeat the other three elemental type mages? The others had played around from young to old, yet were far more proficient than Suo Jia, who only recently learned the Ice Sphere Technique. Their controls over the arts were far better as well.

Currently, for means of attacking Suo Jia already had the Ice Sphere Technique, for auxiliary uses he had the Swamp Technique, and for healing he had the Moisture Technique. As for defense, he did not have many methods.

Perhaps some people would mention the Aqua Aegis, but this was actually just a joke, and couldn't even be counted as a magic. Barely mitigating even a little bit of an attack, the strength of the spell was extremely limited. Water arts' primary defensive uses were from ice magic!

Although it was defined as a third ranked spell, the Ice Sphere Technique could only be considered to be an elementary third ranked spell. As far as he knew, other third ranked spells included the Glacial Armor, which was also an intermediate third ranked spell. In addition, there was also the advanced third ranked spell that had a similar effect compared to the Swamp Technique; the Revolving Frozen Gas!

Truthfully speaking, the water spell with the most potential was the attack spell, Ice Sphere. As for auxiliary type spells, there was the freezing effect of the Revolving Frozen Gas. Lastly, there was the defensive type Glacial Armor. Only by grasping these three basic spells, combined with the rankless Moisture Technique, could one be considered an authentic Novice Mage Trainee.

As for the Swamp Technique, it has already been explained. Some people say that it is water magic, others say it is earth magic; that's why it was deemed as a earth-water shared magic. This is also why it is not considered to be within these requirements.

First, Suo Jia casted ten consecutive Moisture Techniques on oneself, making a clear pure moisturizing rain. After raising his spirit this way, he casted a chain of ten Swamp Techniques, before finally, he faced the

magic target near the opposite wall, and released three successful Ice Sphere Techniques that hit the targets with “Ping Pang” sounds. The cellar’s temperature immediately dropped by a significant amount.

Although Suo Jia’s magical power had already been raised significantly through the repeated uses of the Exhaustion Training Method. After using ten Moisture Techniques and ten Swamp Techniques, he could only cast about three Ice Sphere Techniques. After casting the third Ice Sphere Technique, Suo Jia’s spirit and magic powers were immediately depleted.

Not daring to idle around, Suo Jia hurriedly rushed back to his mat, crossed his legs and entered the meditative state. To a great extent, meditation was similar to sleep. The more fatigued and weak one was, the easier it was to enter that state, as well as increase the effectiveness of the meditation.

During the following week, Suo Jia attended school every day like usual, and cultivated afterwards. The white lobby was under Eldest Sister’s management, and gradually, all the service facilities were being completed, making the project more and more exuberant.

A week later, they were already capable of starting their business. However, for the sake of waiting for the girls’ parents’ replies, they had to delay the opening by another week. After two weeks, the express courier finally delivered the hundred letters to Suo Jia’s mansion.

Gasping in praise at the large pile of letters on the table, Suo Jia wondered how the letters arrived to the other party so fast, and then quickly mailed back. Only after asking, did Suo Jia know; Holy Light Empire had its own special courier service. By using a large bird type creature called the Lightning Bird to carry letters back and forth, as long as you were within the empire, no matter how far you were, two weeks was enough to make a round trip.

Wearing a disturbed yet excited expression, Suo Jia and Eldest Sister opened the letters one after another. Carefully examining them for a long time, the two had finally skimmed through all the letters. Although they originally knew that this was going to be the result, the two could not

help but yell in celebration.

Every single one of the letters agreed to comply with the assignment. There were no other options; the letters were sent using the Fourth Prince's name. Even if that meant enduring a living hell, unfortunately, they would still have to let their children jump in! Besides, when would they ever get an opportunity with such great benefits ever again?

The day that they received the letters, Suo Jia had requested for a leave from the teacher half an hour before the final class was over. Then he rushed ahead to the study area of the fire wind warriors. He wanted to inform those poor girls of this news.

Standing outside of a flaming red park with a face full of smiles, Suo Jia couldn't help but start to think: how would those poor girls react after they heard this news? Sadly, their big red cloaks completely covered their faces. Otherwise, Suo Jia could enjoy watching their amazing expressions.

After waiting for a while, the time to dismiss the students finally arrived. What was strange was that during the times where people would normally flood out, it was instead abnormally quiet. Could it be.... that they didn't go home and went out for emergency training again?

Suo Jia really wanted to rush into the park to see if they were still around. But there was a rule in Holy Light Academy that stated nobody could trespass other parks. Violators would not be tolerated, and eventually expelled.

Sitting on the chair outside of the park helplessly, Suo Jia was bored to death, and watched the stream of people walking away from the other parks, one by one. He waited for the fire wind warriors to make their appearances patiently.

Seeing the students walk by in front of him, one by one, Suo Jia could not help but let out a sigh of praise. This Holy Light Academy had all types of students, ranging from children not even 8 years old, up to twenty-something young adults. Ugly, pretty, tall, short, skinny, fat: numerous types of body shapes could be seen.

While watching carefully, a flash of radiance passed Suo Jia's eyes. He

saw an individual wearing a bright yellow mage robe swiftly and skillfully gliding. It seemed as if the girl could take flight at any time; she moved swiftly from afar, heading over.

This girl was really beautiful, and her figure was also very elegant. What should be large was large, and what should be small was small. With delicate small rosy lips, any male would want to kiss them deeply.

However, what caught Suo Jia's attention was not her beauty. First of all, she wasn't even of age, and second of all, no matter how pretty this girl was, could she be prettier than Wen Ya? Even in front of Wen Ya, Suo Jia could keep a cool and indifferent composure; how could any random girl steal his soul?

What made Suo Jia curious was that he couldn't understand how the girl could be so agile. In addition, her foot movements were extremely bizarre. Although on the outside, it looked as if she was walking forwards, contrary to expectations, her steps gave off a swaying yet quick-witted feeling. This made it extremely hard to lock down her position, and if he had to face her in a battle, it would be hard to land any spells on her.

Seeing that the girl was walking closer and closer, Suo Jia's face gradually changed. Before, he always thought that everything would be 'OK' as long as he kept practicing magic until he reached a high level and became more powerful. But now, after seeing that strange girl, Suo Jia suddenly realized that whether a magic was powerful or not was not the most important. What was most important was that it had to hit the target!

Watching the girl walk away slowly with her weird movements, Suo Jia subconsciously wracked his brain, his eyes carefully analyzing the girl's figure. At that moment, Suo Jia suddenly realized that if his goal was the tournament half a year later, then there were many things that he had to reconsider.

"Bang!" While Suo Jia was still deep in thought, there was a crisp sound. Suo Jia could only feel a hum sound in his brain, before a sheet of black appeared in front of him. Numerous golden stars swirled in front of him.

While Suo Jia was experiencing this abnormal feeling, a disgusting voice rang out, "Shitty brat, what are you staring at? Is that someone whom you should be staring at? If it was not for you being so small, I would not have held back."

Suo Jia gradually recovered the strength to speak, as the black cover in front of his eyes slowly disappeared. In the next moment, a shadowy figure appeared in front of Suo Jia.

The voice came from a strong and thick figure, a student wearing a red warrior outfit, age around 20 years old. Now, his back was bent over, a big hand over Suo Jia's head. Clearly, the reason why Suo Jia had blacked out was because of a slap from this individual.

Chapter 51: It Really Hurts Too Much

In his entire life, Suo Jia had never suffered a beating. Even if it was Suo Jia's mother, she was reluctant to even touch one of his fingers. Later on, when he had first arrived at Holy Light, although it was a different place, his classmates were all girls. No one would so violently hit him. Thus, at that time, Suo Jia was still unsure of what could be considered bullying.

However, although he didn't know the difference between discipline and bullying, Suo Jia was still very angry. Who was this guy, to cause him that much pain? Did they know each other?

Infuriated, Suo Jia's small face turned a bright red, yelling in fury, "What are you doing, remove your hand!"

Seeing that the little guy was not only unafraid of him, but was also shouting in anger, the youth was momentarily stunned. Originally, he had only wanted to playfully harass this guy for a bit. However, he had not expected that the opposing party would not only refuse to give him face, but also rage at him! At that moment, the red clad warrior felt that his pride was being challenged. If the formidable fire elemental warrior could not even discipline a small child, then how little was he worth?

While thinking, the red clad warrior felt anger in his heart. However, he put it aside and gently opened his hand. Smiling, he said, "Okay, okay, okay... Since you are telling me to let go, I'm letting go... See, I let go right?"

Seeing the other party slowly retracting his hand, although Suo Jia was still very angry, he forced himself to hold it in. Right when he was about to turn around and not waste any more time on this individual, suddenly, Suo Jia could only see a sheen of golden light. His brain was beginning to lose consciousness, and severe pain impacted Suo Jia's nerves.

When Suo Jia once again gained his composure, he was stunned to find out that he had already left the wooden chair, and was currently lying on the floor about three meters away. His mouth could only taste a salty liquid. He suddenly spat out, and saw that it was actually intensely red

colored blood. Looking at the severe trail of blood on the ground, he could see that there were some teeth mixed in as well.

Suo Jia's brain was in turmoil as his body was covered in severe pain, and what was especially in pain was his mouth. After receiving the slap on his left cheek, his face had completely gone numb, and all he could hear in his left ear was a buzzing noise, preventing him from hearing anything else clearly.

Suo Jia did not know what happened. What was it that caused him to be hit in that way; did he do something wrong? That couldn't be right... he hadn't done anything, so how could he have done something wrong?

Struggling to get up, he wanted to ask the other individual for an explanation. However, when he barely managed to prop up his four limbs, his brain became woozy, and he once again collapsed. Suo Jia's two elbows and knees were already injured, overflowing and oozing out blood, dyeing his sleeves and knee areas completely red.

Although he couldn't get up, Suo Jia had to get an explanation. Lifting his head with effort, he loathingly glared at the red clad warrior, and Suo Jia angrily said, "Who are you? Why did you attack me; did I offend you somehow?"

"Pa la... pa la... pa la..." Hearing Suo Jia's words, the red clad warrior was about to answer, when the sound of messy footsteps from behind Suo Jia interrupted him.

Within the red zone, thirty-six figures hidden in cloaks gloomily walked out. On the bright red cloaks, there were embroideries of a golden flame. All of these people's faces, hands, and feet were hidden within the darkness, their bodies emitting a cold and murderous killing intent, as well as a gloomy atmosphere.

"Gu lu..." Nervously looking at the 36 individuals, the red clad warrior swallowed with difficulty. He did not reply to Suo Jia's question, and immediately turned around and ran.

Before, it wasn't too bad, but recently these girls didn't know if they had the wrong medicine or something. Whenever any of them put on their red

cloaks, they would pick fights with others. There were already many arrogant and obstinate individuals that had been wounded by their hands. Now, almost all of the rumors were about these fire wind warriors.

Seeing the red clad warrior's embarrassing escape, the 36 fire wind warriors only gave him a glance. Silently lowering their heads, they no longer paid attention to him. However, right when they were about to leave, they saw Suo Jia lying on the floor, covered in blood!

Although it was his back that faced them, who was Suo Jia? He was their one and only hope. In their minds, Suo Jia's figure was even clearer than that of a lover's, if they did not have one yet.

In a hurry, all of the fire wind warriors rushed towards Suo Jia. Seeing his mouth covered in blood and his nerves disrupted, the Suo Jia in front of them appeared confused. All of the the fire wind warriors felt like exploding. Who was it? Who was it that dared to harm their only hope?

The fire wind female warriors, who had their faces destroyed originally, already had bad tempers. After all, they were being roasted constantly by winds and fire. Since they had quick and easy-to-burst tempers, there was no one who was willing to provoke them.

However, now there was someone who dared treat Suo Jia in this manner. His spirit was already in disarray. This really drove the already crazy girls mad. Even if they could tolerate someone cutting them, they wouldn't ever allow others to lay a finger on Suo Jia. If they could still move, would they wait for others to make the first move? They would move their two hands themselves.

Hurriedly helping Suo Jia up, the red clad girl asked furiously, "Suo Jia, quickly tell us. Who was it that bullied you to this extent?"

"Haha..." Smiling miserably, Suo Jia replied weakly, "I understand who did this; this was planned by the heavens. I wanted to save you all, but contrary to the heavens' will, God is punishing me, causing me to experience this catastrophe!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, all of the girls were in shock. At the same time, he began murmuring, "Maybe I shouldn't have come here today, and

shouldn't have helped you guys. The heavens have already given me this warning, if I continue to help you guys, I'll lose my life!"

Speaking up to this point, with the help of a few fire wind warriors, Suo Jia weakly stood up. In shame, he looked at all the girls and said, "I'm very sorry. Originally...I had come to tell you girls today that I had already persuaded all of my classmates to help you girls recover your appearances, and maintain your beautifulness for the rest of your lives."

"Xi!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, all of the girls' brains became dizzy; they could not believe that this was real. Although they all had this wish, they all clearly understood how difficult and impossible this task was. In order to convince 100 girls to help them, Suo Jia had to get the all of the girls' parents' consent. When all of the fire wind warriors thought about it, they realized that this was an impossible request. However, Suo Jia had told them that he already completed this miraculous task!

While all the fire wind warriors were so ecstatic that they didn't know what to do, Suo Jia gloomily said, "However, you girls have all witnessed what happened today. I have not actually helped you yet, but my punishment has already arrived. It looks like...God also does not want to let me help you girls. He does not want to witness you girls gain the strongest powers, while maintaining your beautiful appearances at the same time. If you still want me to continue helping you, I will lose my life!"

Speaking up to here, Suo Jia pushed away the girl that was helping him. He said with a sigh, "It's not that I don't want to help you guys, I really tried. However, if even God does not want to help out, then I can only apologize." Finishing what he wanted to say, Suo Jia turned around and walked towards the main gate of the school, swaying from side to side.

Blankly looking at Suo Jia's retreating form, each of the female warriors were completely stuck in a daze. Seeing Suo Jia gradually leave, they could not even gather enough energy to call after him. Could it be....that God really did not desire for them to recover their former beauty?

"Creak... Creak.... Creak.... " While watching Suo Jia disappearing from

their field of vision, all the fire wind warriors got so angry that they nearly ground their teeth to pieces. Their eyes had fires burning within them!

Perhaps they wouldn't be able to fight against God or punish God. But they could at least punish the guy who caused trouble for them. They could punish the trash who dared to make a move on Suo Jia!

After staying silent for a while, one of the red robes complained, "The one who hit Suo Jia must be that red clad warrior earlier. Just now, did anyone took note of his appearance?"

Faced with this question, all the fire wind warriors were silent. After a while, a soft voice sinisterly said, "Although I did not see his face, I have already taken note of his figure!"

"Very good!" Hearing this, the girl who had initially spoken nodded, and said evilly, "In that case, even if we have to put our lives on the line, we must find this guy tomorrow morning. If we don't beat him into eight pieces, how can we take out the resentment within our hearts! Perhaps he did not understand just how terrifying of a mistake he just committed. In that case, let us teach him a lesson!"

All of the fire wind warriors nodded in agreement. They all clearly knew that this was the only way to make Suo Jia calm down and change his mind. If, for example, the red clad warrior really was a messenger of the God, then he definitely would not die. If he did die, then he definitely wasn't a messenger of God. Either way, that red clad warrior had to die!

Chapter 52: Storm in Holy Light

In order to avoid making his mother worried, Suo Jia did not go home directly. He hid in a corner and cast dozens of Moisture Technique on himself until his appearance returned to normal. Then he finally came out from behind the corner, and went to the market to buy new clothes, and walked home.

After he returned home, Suo Jia tried to maintain a calm appearance, and acted as if nothing unusual had happened. Not only did he not want his family to worry about him, he wanted to save face, as that was the most important thing to a man. It was not a glorious thing to be beaten by someone else out in the open.

Suo Jia had firmly engraved the image of the red clad warriors' hideous face in his heart. Suo Jia knew that currently, he was not capable of defeating him. But one day, he would eventually catch up. All the pain and humiliation he received today, would one day be repaid several times over!

After eating his meal, Suo Jia ignored everyone and immediately secluded himself in the underground training room. Suo Jia vented all his pent up anger on the magic target he was facing. That was the only thing he could do at this moment.

Of course, Suo Jia had thought of seeking help. If he could receive support from other people, then Suo Jia could easily get revenge. But if others helped him get his revenge, Suo Jia wouldn't be able to truly vent his anger. Only by using his own hand to completely destroy and humiliate his opponent would the anger in his heart be completely dissolved!

The next morning, Suo Jia picked up the magic book as he normally did, and headed towards the direction of Holy Light Academy. Just when he had arrived at the front gate of the academy, Suo Jia noticed that there was a lot of people at the front gate. He doubtfully glanced at the time, it was nearly time for classes to begin, but why were they still there? Were

they not afraid of being late?

Harboring some doubts, Suo Jia approached the crowds and struggled to make his way through. Suo Jia finally got through the crowds and observed his surroundings. The spacious Holy Light Academy's big gate was being blocked by a group of people wearing red robes, and they were exerting killing intent. They left a gap only big enough for a single person to pass through at a time.

Towards the side of the gate entrance, there were several dozens of red clad warriors that were groaning in pain from serious injuries to their faces. Several gruesome red robed individuals were responsible for keeping watch over them. Whoever dared to move around randomly would definitely receive more painful blows.

Suo Jia was slightly surprised, but he soon began to realize that these red robed individuals were naturally the group of poor fire wind warriors. The reason they blocked the path there was definitely because they wanted to find the person who had hit Suo Jia yesterday, and vent their resentments on him. At the same time, they hoped that getting revenge for Suo Jia would cause him to change his mind.

Looking at the dozens of red clad warriors with swollen black eyes, Suo Jia smiled wryly. Getting beaten until they became like this, even Suo Jia would not be able to tell who was right or wrong anymore. These ladies were so fierce when they decided to take action. Compared to them, that guy from yesterday seemed as docile as a kitten.

Suo Jia shook his head. Although he felt very moved by the girls' actions, he also understood that these actions were too brazen. Even though they were clever enough not to cause trouble within Holy Light Academy and only blocked the path leading to the entrance, it was still difficult to guess the attitudes of the higher ups at the Holy Light Academy.

There were a few reasons why Suo Jia had treated those fire wind warriors like that yesterday. Firstly, it was because he didn't want these girls to get hit. Secondly, it was because he had been hit for no reason, so

he was very angry. Since he was completely helpless against the guy who had hit him, he vented his anger on those fire wind warriors instead.

In fact, Suo Jia never believed in God's will since the beginning. As it stood, even if he really believed in God's will, he had no say in the matter. Especially after listening to Eldest Sister's explanation, Suo Jia began to understand the importance of having the support of these fire wind warriors. It was absolutely impossible to let them go!

Since they were very important to him, then Suo Jia naturally couldn't allow them to get into trouble. In addition... Suo Jia had been persevering all along. Since this was his own business, he needed to resolve it by himself. If he had relied on these fire wind warriors, then the fire warrior yesterday would definitely have received a beating.

While thinking, Suo Jia managed to squeeze through the crowd, and began to walk towards the fire wind warriors. Seeing that Suo Jia had appeared, all the girls body suddenly trembled. After the feeling had subsided, they easily pushed away the few students who tried to sneak through the gap, and finally met Suo Jia face to face.

Helplessly sighing, Suo Jia whispered in a low voice, "Ok, that's enough; there's no need to continue any further. Immediately return to your classes. Also....this Sunday at 9am, bring all of your sisters to the white villa." While he said this, Suo Jia's footsteps had not stopped once, and just like that, he had passed through the group of red cloaked sisters, and headed straight for his own classroom.

During the next few days, Suo Jia had attended school as if everything was normal. Everything seemed ordinary. However....when nobody was around, Suo Jia would gnash his teeth in anger and train diligently in the white villa's underwater training area.

Suo Jia hadn't really sustained much harm from the beating this time. After a few Moisture Techniques, the injuries had completely healed on the spot. In reality, it was only a slap; it wasn't a big deal.

However, to Suo Jia, this was an extraordinary shame and humiliation. People were just like that; no matter what it was, the first time something

happened was always unforgettable. This applied to joyous events, sorrowful events, but especially to humiliating events. Even though he had only suffered a slap in the face, this type of vexed and powerless feeling had etched the experience deeply into Suo Jia's memory.

Suo Jia had witnessed others fighting before. However, it lacked that realistic feeling. This time, when he was the one that had been hit, Suo Jia was finally able to comprehend that such disgrace could be so unbearable. He could not help but recall what his teacher had said before: if you don't want to be bullied, then you must have the power to fight back.

The purpose of learning magic was not to start fires, murder people, and commit crimes. The purpose was actually to allow you to grasp a certain ability that could be used, whether it was when you wanted to protect something, or when you wanted to oppress your bullies. Either way, having magic granted the ability to resist.

This whole time, for the sake of going on the greater trade routes and to search for his father, Suo Jia had always paid attention to cultivating his powers. However, after this incident Suo Jia had realized the importance of power even more. Without power, he couldn't even maintain his pride.

Although Suo Jia had trained so diligently, magic training was never something easy to do. At the very least, it was impossible to break through the Ice Sphere Technique, and reach the level of Ice Armor in so few days.

While Suo Jia trained, time had unknowingly flown past. In the blink of an eye, Sunday had already arrived. All the water mage girls had also received the reply letters in their homes. Inside the letters, as per Suo Jia's orders, none of the parents had received any kind of instructions. All the letters said was that from now on, everything their children did would follow Suo Jia's plans.

Eight year old children did not need to understand much; they simply held the same opinions and decisions as their parents. Although they didn't know anything, if their parents had told them to do something,

then the children did not have any thoughts besides doing as they were told.

To all the water mage girls, Suo Jia was a special existence. He excelled in his studies, had strength that was above average, and he also treated people very warmly. The most important thing was that every Sunday, Suo Jia would bring the girls out to play. In their hearts, Suo Jia was already both their classmate and their playmate.

At daybreak, Suo Jia had ordered the kitchen staff to prepare breakfast, and then rushed to school. Once he had picked up all the girls in his class, they all ate breakfast together.

Once all of the girls had been satisfied with their meal, Suo Jia went to the villa's entrance and escorted the 36 fire wind warriors inside. He directly brought them to the underwater training area. Before they began receiving treatments, there were many things that Suo Jia needed to discuss with them in detail.

Within the enormous underground training area, under Suo Jia's gesture, the 36 fire wind warriors sat cross-legged in front of Suo Jia in a neat 6×6 formation.

Seeing the girls shrouded in red capes, Suo Jia slightly muttered to himself for a bit, before he said with a heavy tone, "Everyone, even though these past few days, some extremely unpleasant things have occurred..... after thinking it over for a long time, I still can't bear to watch you girls be destroyed like this. Therefore, I ultimately decided that I would still help you girls."

Even though they had long since guessed that Suo Jia had called them to the villa for this reason, once everyone heard the words leave Suo Jia's lips they could not help but tremble with excitement. If Suo Jia was not present, all of them might have even shouted out loud in excitement.

Seeing the fire wind warriors get excited, Suo Jia heavily continued, "I've already said this before, that in exchange for your second lives, you would need to pay a sufficient price. Right now....I will ask you all once again: are you girls really willing to pay such an expensive price for the sake of

your appearance?”

Chapter 53: Genuine Freedom

Without any hesitation, all the girls quickly nodded without saying a single word. Clearly, they had already completely thought about this matter beforehand. For them, any price was worth it, as long as they could keep their appearances.

“Very well!” Suo Jia shouted loudly and said in a deep voice, “In that case, I will restore your originally beautiful appearances today. In addition, I can lend a hand and help transform you girls into your most perfect and beautiful forms! However...”

Halfway through his words, Suo Jia smiled and narrowed his eyes, “Before I do this, I will talk about my request first. If you all feel like you cannot accept it, then we will just think that this matter never happened before. What do you girls think?”

After hearing Suo Jia’s words, all the girls nodded simultaneously. At the same time, Suo Jia continued, “Even though I can restore your previous appearances, I don’t want anyone else to know about this matter. I hope that none of you will take off your cloaks even after your beautiful appearances have been recovered, after all... these are symbols of your identities, and... I need your mysterious atmospheres!”

“This... this is impossible!” One red cloak shook her head, “Even if we can keep the others in the dark, we can’t conceal it from the school and teacher. After all... we need to meet up everyday. This kind of secret, how can we conceal it!”

Smiling weakly, Suo Jia picked up a small package beside him and tossed it in front of the group of fire wind warriors. At the same time he said, “After you open that package, you will understand everything.”

A few girls were skeptical after they heard Suo Jia but they still acted according to his instructions, and opened up that small package. The next moment... a stack of strange objects appeared in front of all the girls.

He noticed the girls had realized and said calmly, “These are the masks I specifically ordered for you all. They are extremely firm and exhibit

good ventilation systems. Not only can they help you conceal your appearances, they can also help block the direct impacts of the fire and wind. Most importantly, if you girls are the ones wearing it, nobody would dare to take them off, including your mentor.”

Listening to Suo Jia, all the girls finally came to an understanding. As long as they wore the masks, their real appearances wouldn't be completely exposed even after their cloaks got destroyed. Suo Jia was wanted to utilize the new faces he was about to grant them.

Smiling eerily, Suo Jia said, “As you all know, your lives do not belong to yourselves, but to the entire country. So after you all graduate, you will be recruited by the country and become soldiers. However, this is not what I want to see.”

Suo Jia's words made all the girls jolt from their heads to their feet. Suo Jia was right: if they had the rights to choose, they would rather not learn fire and wind combat skills. But in reality, once they were discovered to have the constitutions for fire and wind, they no longer had a choice. In fact, they were forced to learn and practice. If they did not practice hard enough and were unable to reach the set objectives, they would be punished severely.

As the country's executioners and weapons, they were deemed to be free on the surface. However in reality, their freedoms were fake. They didn't even have the final say in regards to their own lives; could freedom even still be discussed?

They had thought about resisting a long time ago, but... no matter how powerful they became, they were still just some thirty plus people; how could they hope to confront an entire country? What's more, they had parents, relatives and friends, and couldn't bring disaster to their families.

It wasn't that they didn't want to resist, it was just that they couldn't resist. They didn't feel any gratitude for the country that trained them as weapons. On the contrary, they hated that country!

Looking at the girls' trembling bodies, Suo Jia laughed, “To my knowledge, there are a few among you who are about to graduate this

year. Am I correct?"

One of the girls nodded, "That's right, six of our sisters who enrolled in the academy earlier can graduate already. In fact, our lodgings have already been prepared. But... why are you asking us this? What do you want to do?"

Taking a deep breath, Suo Jia heavily said, "I hope that you girls can find opportunities to let the world know that you are all dead. Then... change your appearances, and return to me. You should know, once you become the country's weapons, it will be difficult for me to help you. Not to mention, you girls won't be able to repay me."

Suo Jia's words deeply pierced their hearts, all the girls trembled more violently. After a while, a trembling voice resounded, "You mean to say, you can restore our freedoms?!"

Firmly nodding his head, Suo Jia said confidently, "That's right, this is the best solution. Only in this way will you girls be able to repay me."

"No problem!" Just as Suo Jia's voice had faded, all the girls started to shout one after another.

Maybe it was a little impulsive, but Suo Jia's idea really made it too hard for people to refuse. Not only could they keep their beauty, but they could also regain their freedoms without their loved ones getting involved. On the contrary, because they were thought to be dead, the country would issue a lot of money to their parents.

Imagine that! They could have the strongest military might and still keep their appearances at the same time. They could also fall in love and enjoy the warmth of a family. Moreover, they could have genuine freedom! They would no longer be at the country's mercy!

All the girls knew that even if they broke away from the country's restraints, they still wouldn't be completely free. They were bound to serve Suo Jia whole-heartedly, but it went without saying that there was no true freedom in this secular world. Moreover... they were equals of Suo Jia, like two locust plugged on top of a thread; it was impossible for Suo Jia to treat them shabbily. Rather than higher or lower ranks, it could be

said that they had more of a relationship like cooperative partners. It was unlike a country, which had absolute dominion!

While gasping, one of the red cloaked girl said excitedly, “Three weeks from now, we are going to the Magical Beast Forest for our first trial. I think... this is the best opportunity to fake our deaths. We just need to fix up a good plan in advance, and I promise we will mysteriously disappear to a place that neither heavens nor ghosts will know of!”

“En...” Suo Jia agreed while nodding his head, “Very well, you girls go back and think about it carefully. Set it up properly, and once your fake deaths succeed, you girls should change your appearances and sneak to Glory City. Afterwards, contact me with letters!”

“Okay, we will settle it this way!” The red cloaked girl said in a hurry.

Nodding his head, Suo Jia frowned and said, “But you girls also cannot neglect the opportunity to strengthen yourself. The few of you who are graduating should pass on everything you have learned to the others. You girls should know this as a team: the greater the power of each individual, the higher the probability of survival. Regarding this point, there’s no need for me to say more right?”

Listening to Suo Jia’s words, all the red cloaked girls quickly nodded. At the same time, Suo Jia stood up and stretched his body, before he smiled and said, “Alright, next, there are people waiting upon you girls to change your clothes. After you have finished changing, wait for me here. I will call my classmates over here. We will continue the talk after we have restored your appearances.”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, all the girls followed Suo Jia’s instruction ecstatically. Rushing towards one of the rooms at the side. At the same time, Suo Jia turned around and headed towards the exit.

Being led by Suo Jia, hundreds of water mage apprentices entered the underwater training ground. Looking at this mysterious and magical gigantic space, all the girls were astonished and full of admiration.

In order to keep the secret of those fire wind warriors, Suo Jia could not let these girls know what kind of people had come here to receive

moisture. In order to achieve this goal, they naturally had to prepare a trick.

First, the maids were ordered to cover the pillars of the underwater training ground with white fabrics, surrounding approximately 40 square meters of space. Then... the 36 fire wind warriors were allowed to enter the space surrounded by the white fabrics. As a result, even though the girls outside could vaguely see the people inside, they couldn't tell who the people inside were.

Chapter 54: Opening For Business

Under Suo Jia's command, the hundred girls simultaneously waved the blue staffs in their hands. Immediately, blue lights glowed and rippled through the large cloth, continuously casting a moisturizing rain. Gradually, the rain moved towards the fire wind warriors within the fabric and fell onto their heads.

Suo Jia leisurely laughed as he waited in excited anticipation. During every afternoon for the past six months, everyone would gather and go to the training area to practice the Moisture Technique with the little pet as their target. Currently, although it was unaware of what was going on, the little pet quickly matured much faster than what was written in records. Although its general size hadn't changed, its body's color began to gradually darken. According to the records in the book, once the little pet turned deep blue, it would reach the end of its newborn body. What followed next was its adolescent stage.

However, the little guy's growth was actually not the largest benefit it had gained. During the past year, after nearly 200 days of working together, the girls were all shocked to discover that when everyone simultaneously activated the Moisture Technique at the same frequency and speed, the Moisture Techniques would all combine into one, forming a large moisturizing mist.

This enormous discovery made everyone feel wild with joy. Some girls who enjoyed showing off showed the teacher were anticipating some compliments from the teacher. However, they had never imagined that this was not some new discovery.

In reality, the mist that the hundred girls had activated together was actually a high ranked water elemental healing magic – Hydration Technique. This group magic was originally a high ranked large-scale magic, and required the combined efforts of 100 mages to activate.

The Hydration Technique was really just a bigger version of the Moisture Technique, and it had the special characteristics that water

elements had. Since it was an automatically combined magic with a hundred water mages, based on the Moisture Technique's normal activation process, this technique could be used. This magic, if activated by a group of high leveled water mages, the range that the Hydration Technique enshrouded was really too frightening. It could even heal over 10,000 warriors at the same time.

Based on the girls' current abilities, simultaneously healing over 10,000 people was still too early of a task for them. However, simultaneously healing 100 people was already no longer a difficult task. It was precisely because of this that Suo Jia had accepted the fire wind warriors' invitation. After all... this was not that time-consuming, and the rewards that Suo Jia would gain remained to be unseen.

A dense fog enshrouded the insides of the white fabric. All the fire wind warriors only felt their bodies feel cool and refreshed. The cracks all over their body were throbbing from the spell, and they could clearly feel those cracks getting healed.

They lowered their heads and looked at all the cuts on their body gradually becoming smaller within the white mist, until they completely disappeared. All the girls did not want to cry, but the tears just wouldn't listen to them, and flowed down their cheeks...

Finally, after the hundred plus girls casted 20 Moisture Techniques continuously, their magic powers ran out at the same time. Fortunately, this place was originally a training ground so the floor was covered with soft animal skin. All the girls could sit down without any regards and slowly recover their magic and spirit powers.

The girls spent their entire day like this. Other than stopping to eat, they continuously cast the Hydration Technique for the fire wind warriors 8 times. After the eighth Hydration Technique, all the girls were already beyond exhausted. In their whole lives, they had never been this tired before!

Fortunately, after a day of hard work, the luxurious dinner made all the girls forget their exhaustions. Everyone ate until they were full. Then,

they were escorted back to the academy by specifically assigned bodyguards.

Within the underwater training ground, Suo Jia was looking at the fire wind warriors in front of him with admiration. The effect of the Hydration Technique was obviously a lot better than that of the Moisture Technique. Even the eight year old Suo Jia felt envious looking at the fire wind warriors' rosy, sparkly, and tender skin. Their skins were really too tender and glossy.

After the whole day, the fire wind warriors had finally recovered their former beauty. They were even more beautiful than they had been previously. Their tender and moist skins especially, really made one drool with desire. As for the fire wind warriors themselves, there's no need to say more, since their skins had never been this amazing before.

That night, none of the fire wind warriors went back to the dorms. Everyone stayed behind and discussed the plan with Suo Jia carefully. Everyone was well aware that the plan this time only allowed success. Failure was not an option. Otherwise, the consequences would be severe beyond imagination!

At dawn the next morning, Suo Jia sent the fire wind warriors back from the White Villa. After finishing a simple meal, Suo Jia went to class as he normally did. Everything was the same as usual.

One week's time quickly passed, and Sunday arrived again. For Suo Jia, this was a very important day. This was because today was Sunday, and also the day that Suo Jia's beautician center opened for business.

After repeatedly discussing with everyone, everyone had finally agreed in the end that this place was not suited to be known as a beautician center. The name, White Villa, was already good enough. When the White Villa was mentioned, everyone in Holy Light City knew where it was. Now, the only thing everyone had to do was bestow a function to the White Villa, leave a mark, and turn it into a resort!

In regards to the publicity of the White Villa, not much was done, but that wouldn't affect the White Villa's reputation or its function. After

all... Wen Ya was a living proof of its success, and the best advertisement.

Everyone knew how fat Wen Ya used to be, and that the owner of this White Villa had transformed her into the most beautiful woman in Holy Light City within a single day! With just this, it was already plenty enough to attract people.

The opening time was set at night fall. The reason that they chose this time was because this was the period where people felt most relaxed. This allowed more high ranking aristocrats to spare the time to come here.

In order to avoid an awkwardly silent situation, and for the sake of a good start, neither Wen Ya or the Fourth Prince held back, especially Wen Ya. She brought the White Villa's invitations to a few aristocrats' homes to invite them personally. With Wen Ya's reputation, even if they didn't have the time, they had to squeeze out some time to go. After all, even without her relationship with the Fourth Prince, her father, Duke Wen Sha, had the status of the Duke of Holy Light City. Nobody would dare to refuse her.

Wen Ya was very confident; once they went to the White Villa, experienced the reception there and personally perceived Suo Jia's miracle, people would definitely strive to get there first, even without her invitations. Women have always been like this; who wouldn't care about her appearance? This was especially true for those women from rich households; their greatest fear was losing their beauty. Once they lost their beauty, what else would they be able to rely on to capture their husband's heart?

As night fell, dazzling carriages appeared in front of the White Villa's front gate, one after another. The maids verified their invitation letters, and allowed the carriages to enter the White Villa. The people only got out of the carriage after they had arrived in front of the White Villa. Then the entourages would pull the carts to the parking area.

Everything in the White Villa was designed by Duke Wen Sha for his one and only darling daughter. It could even be said the White Villa was

invested by Duke Wen Sha. Although the level of luxury was not very outstanding there, it possessed the refreshing air of the nature. After getting used to living in the big city, everyone who saw the scenery of the utopia here would be absolutely mindblown. It was simply incomparable.

This was only the first of the surprises. Once those aristocrats who had arrived unwillingly after they had received Wen Ya's invitation heard that they could drink good wine, which was delivered from across the Greater Trade Routes, they were dumbstruck. Just who was it that backed up this White Villa! Could it be... Duke Wen Sha? Or could it possibly be Wen Ya herself?

Just when everyone was secretly guessing, Wen Ya, who was in charge of organizing this evening party, revealed one more surprise to the 100 guests who had shown up today. They were very fortunate to be able to receive the baptism of Hydration Technique!

Following Wen Ya's hand gesture, one after another, cute girls wearing light blue gowns emerged from the corridor of the 2nd floor. A hundred plus girls joined together and launched Moisture Techniques. The Moisture Techniques slowly combined into one above everyone's head. Soon after, the mist came down and shrouded everyone. At the same time, the Hydration Technique's unique, cool, and refreshing aura, distinctly fell on the bodies of all the guests who present.

"Such power!" That's right, this Hydration Technique represented the White Villa's strength. To be able to summon a hundred plus water mages and perform a Hydration Technique for everyone, was the embodiment of strength. It was impossible for ordinary people to accomplish this. All the guests were pleasantly surprised, especially after Wen Ya announced that during every Sunday evening after this, they would have the opportunity to enjoy this Hydration Technique.

Chapter 55: How Much Is Considered Enough?

The banquet was currently ongoing, and the event was reaching its climax. Taking advantage of the timing, Wen Ya took the opportunity to make a grand announcement. During tonight's celebration, Honored Guest VIP cards would be available. This VIP card was invaluable, because with it, one could become one of Lord Suo Jia's seven esteemed clients.

The reason that this item was considered priceless, was because Lord Suo Jia would only personally provide long-term service for seven members. As for others, although they could enjoy service in the White Villa, they would not receive personal service from Lord Suo Jia himself!

What kind of person was Suo Jia? Among all of the people sitting here currently, his reputation was like 'thunder piercing the ears'. Wasn't he that mysterious mage who miraculously helped Wen Ya lose weight? To become one of his esteemed clients, wasn't that something that any woman would dream of?

Seeing the distinguished households' spouses, Wen Ya could not help but laugh. These invitations were not randomly distributed. Wen Ya had a decent understanding of aristocracy, and she only invited those with power and authority. Also, the distinguished guests who desperately needed Suo Jia's help were pretty enough as they were. As for the ones that did not desperately need Suo Jia's help, even if they wanted invitations, they would not get any.

Looking around, Wen Ya smiled, "Right now, would everyone kindly draw a card from the boxes that the maids are currently holding? The lady who ends up pulling a golden card will become one of Suo Jia's esteemed clients. Of course... if you do not require the services of Lord Suo Jia, then we will offer you one million gold to buy back the card as a consolation prize."

"Woo!" Hearing Wen Ya's words, although the people within the

courtyard were extinguished and venerable guests, they still cried out in shock. After all... the figure that Wen Ya listed, although it wasn't astronomical, it was definitely an amount that could not be looked down upon.

Looking at everyone's startled expressions, Wen Ya secretly sneered. Although on the surface, this seemed like a fair lottery, in reality, the results had already been predetermined. The person who would ultimately draw the golden card had already been planned out. No matter what, others wouldn't be able to draw the golden card. And those who were destined to draw this golden card wouldn't sell it even if they were to die, because they didn't care about money, but were very concerned about their appearance.

Very quickly, Wen Ya threw the golden cards with the pile of other cards into ten boxes and jumbled it under the gazes of the public. Everyone was looking forward to it. The maids carried the boxes with both hands and walked towards the direction of the guests. On the surface, those golden cards were obviously in the ten boxes. Everyone had seen Wen Ya put the cards into the boxes with their own eyes. How could they be mistaken?

But in reality, although those golden cards that were thrown into the boxes were not fakes, there was a transparent string on the cards. When Wen Ya had jumbled up the cards, she had lightly pulled the other end of the string. Those golden cards were thus secretly hidden in Wen Ya's sleeves. So in these ten boxes, there were only white cards and no golden cards at all.

Very soon, the lottery began. Ten maids were carrying the boxes filled with cards continuously went from one guest to another. Everyone went beside the maids in succession and reached their hands into the box to pick out a card. But no matter who, all they drew were the white cards.

Around this time, a tall maid carrying a box with both hands walked towards a woman, who was not only fat, but also had wrinkles from head to toes. Looking at this woman whose skin were drooping, the maid almost laughed out loud.

This maid wasn't just anyone, it was Eldest Sister. Seeing the woman in front of her, Eldest Sister secretly thought, "This woman is just as Miss Wen Ya had said; at first glance, nobody can resist thinking of a Shar Pei (TL note: a species of dog). It would be a different story if her whole body was just fat, but what is so frightening is that her fat droops over itself, layer by layer. With one quick glance, it's obvious that she looks remarkably like a Shar Pei."

What struck out even more vividly were her fat and lax cheeks. Fat was fat, but was it really necessary to have cheeks that drooped over itself like a Shar Pei? It really made it difficult to differentiate between human and dog.

However, even though Eldest Sister really wanted to laugh, she definitely could not really do so aloud. Although this woman looked like a Shar Pei, just like her father did, her father was Holy Light Empire's famous Economic Master, the minister responsible for the Holy Light City's financial affairs. He had high power and influence, second only to Duke Wen Sha. If it weren't for his bad image, which made it impossible for him to rise to a higher noble position, than his status would definitely not be below Duke Wen Sha's.

Moreover, although this fellow looked like a Shar Pei, he was an unrivalled genius in the field of economy. At the age of 18, he had already established an enormous amount of family assets. Although he wasn't the richest individual in Holy Light Empire, he was definitely one of the top 3 richest individuals in Holy Light City.

As for why he wasn't number one, the reason was obvious; it was because Duke Wen Sha was number one. Holy Light City's value could not be weighed in money, however even if this was true, Duke Wen Sha was always worried that he would be surpassed by this Shar Pei. That was why Duke Wen Sha had invited the man to help manage his finances, essentially ending all his concerns.

With the aid of this Shar Pei, Holy Light City had smoothly progressed in the most recent 10 years. During this period, Holy Light expanded from being one of the largest cities in the empire, to becoming one of the

largest cities in the entire world. Its scale, wealth, and power, were all increased by more than ten times.

That's right, this female Shar Pei was Wen Ya's chosen target. Even though her appearance wasn't anything much, her family was one that was so rich that money wasn't used for spending. The old Shar Pei had publicly announced before that he had so much money that even if he spend every day lazing around, eating, sitting, and chatting, he would not finish spending all of his wealth even after 100 lifetimes. Therefore, his family did not need to be frugal. In fact, it was exactly the opposite; he wished for his family members to help him spend more of his wealth. Otherwise, he would monopolize all those money, and the outside [world] would have no money remaining.

Of course, he wasn't completely serious. However, this confirmed the fact that this fellow really did have a ton of money, and if his daughter drew that card, she definitely would not desire gold. Perhaps she would use the card to exchange for a bun to eat, but she would not use it to exchange for a million gold, since to her, such an amount of money was not worth anything. It was precisely because of this point that Wen Ya dared to venture into this lion's mouth.

This lion's mouth could not be underestimated. If the Shar Pei woman did not return the card and decided to accept Suo Jia's treatment, that would mean the card's value was already above a million gold. In other words, Wen Ya was borrowing the Shar Pei woman's identity to raise Suo Jia's status. Moreover, with Suo Jia's abilities, the Shar Pei woman would definitely end up shouting out loud that it was worth it. This way, it would be impossible not to notice Suo Jia's name.

In reality, it could be said that Wen Ya and the Shar Pei woman were acquainted with each other, and had even exchanged words before. However, that was the extent of their relationship. Even though Wen Ya was also fat before, Wen Ya wasn't able to accept it, so she naturally did not want to interact and become friends with people like the Shar Pei woman. Even looking at her made Wen Ya feel disgusted; how could they possibly keep in contact?

Earlier, Wen Ya had only some hired people to send the invitation. She had not personally communicated with the Shar Pei woman at all, so up until now, the Shar Pei woman was still kept completely in the dark. She had no clue that in reality, she had long since been fated to be the one to draw the gold card. Aside from her, there was no way anyone else could draw it.

Lightly carrying the box, the maid smiled and asked the Shar Pei woman, "Miss, I see that you haven't drawn yet. Do you want to try drawing a card?" While talking, the maid secretly pulled the string on the box.

This box was specifically designed so that the outside was larger than the inside. Once the mechanism was activated, the bottom would be extended from the box's halfway point. At the moment....that layer was filled with golden cards. No matter which cards the Shar Pei woman picked, she would definitely draw a golden Honored Guest VIP card.

"Yes yes yes...of course I want to draw!" Hearing the maid's words, the fat on the Shar Pei woman's face shook as she impatiently replied.

"Ok then, the box is here. Please draw a card!" Facing the Shar Pei woman, the maid smiled.

Hearing the maid's words, the Shar Pei woman piously clapped her hands together, and closed her eyes, muttering some type of prayer. Seeing this scene, all of the people could not help but want to laugh. However, they also did not dare to laugh, and instead restrained themselves with difficulty. Everyone knew that within this room, the one that needed the most help, was that woman.

Finally, the Shar Pei woman finished her prayers. Taking a deep break, she stretched out her chubby hands, and reached into the box with difficulty, and randomly fished through the cards. Even though she did not care for a million gold, she very much needed that golden card. If Wen Ya could succeed in losing weight, then it wouldn't be a problem for her, since her current state was not that "heavy" compared to Wen Ya before. After rummaging around in the box, the Shar Pei woman finally gritted

her teeth, grasped a card, and pulled it out.

“Ya!” At the same instant the Shar Pei woman pulled out her large hand...a golden light shot out in all directions within the large hall. Seeing the card in the Shar Pei woman’s hands, everyone could not help but exclaim in shock. They hadn’t imagined that the card would really be chosen by her. Does that mean that there really exists a God of Light that blesses living beings?

Chapter 56: Provoking Emma

There were many ladies that needed Suo Jia's help within Holy Light City. However, because this Shar Pei woman needed help urgently and had enough expenses to pay for his services as well, this put her at the top of the priority list.

Looking at the sparkling golden card in her hand, the Shar Pei woman's entire body began to tremble. While her body was still shaking, the inside of her throat began to emit a gurgling sound, as if a mother hen was being choked at the neck.

Seeing the Shar Pei woman's excited expression, Wen Ya felt reassured, and said with a smile to her, "Miss Emma, congratulations for pulling the respectable golden card. May I ask whether you wish to keep this card or convert it into gold?"

"Sou!" Hearing Wen Ya's words, the Shar Pei woman let out a cry, and suddenly retracted her hands. She tightly buried the card in her bosom, and urgently said, "Yes! Of course I wish to keep it. This is Heaven's decree, you guys cannot renege!"

"Eh!" Hearing the Shar Pei woman's words, everyone could not help but stare at her blankly, thinking: this woman had actually thought that they would back out? Did she not think about it for a bit? If they backed out, then what was the point of holding this campaign?

Smiling at the Shar Pei woman, Wen Ya warmly replied, "How could we back out? This card has to be given away eventually, I just want to confirm it for a second."

Eagerly looking at Wen Ya, the Shar Pei woman trembled as she said, "Quickly tell me, where is Lord Suo Jia? I want to meet him right now; I can't wait a second longer."

Just as the Shar Pei woman's words fell, Wen Ya laughed, "Since you have chosen to be Lord Suo Jia's customer, then you will naturally be able to meet him whenever you want. Someone come, bring Miss Emma to Lord Suo Jia's workplace!" Following Wen Ya's voice, a maid quickly

walked next to the Shar Pei woman, and made an inviting gesture.

Under everyone's gazes, the Shar Pei woman shifted her fat body, and walked up the staircase. At the same time, Wen Ya knit her brows and smiled at the other guests, "Ok, everyone please enjoy yourselves with the music and good wine as much as you'd like. Except for today, everything here requires fees. Moreover, I will secretly tell everyone that the prices of everything are scarily expensive. Everyone should seize the opportunity and properly enjoy it now."

Hearing Wen Ya's words, all the guests' mouths twitched. There were so many priceless things that they had never seen or enjoyed. The more Wen Ya talked about it, the more they wanted to come back a few times. Otherwise, wouldn't they be looked down on by their peers?

Seeing the guests' expressions, Wen Ya warmly smiled. She knew that her objective had already been achieved. While increasing the White Villa's quality, she was also attracting more customers to the White Villa. If none of the high ranking nobles came to the White Villa to spend their money, then how could they not resign themselves to wretched frustration? Even if they just wanted to show off their ostentatiousness, they needed to come at least once. In addition, they had to spend their wealth in a presentable manner.

Leaving aside Wen Ya going all out dealing with the others downstairs, the maids on the other hand led the excited Emma to the third floor. Due to having fat all over her body and her excited mood, Emma's body and face were covered by a layer of sticky sweat. It couldn't be helped... all fat people perspired more easily just by moving a little.

In front of a pair of door embedded with gold and gems, the maid respectfully bowed at the Shar Pei woman, "Lady Emma, this is Lord Suo Jia's office. Please enter on your own. During the working hours, the servants do not have the rights to enter." During the speech, the maid turned around and gently pulled the door. Immediately... everything in the room was presented in front of the Shar Pei woman.

Even though she had seen enough of the luxurious and extravagant

decorations, she had to admit that even if this place couldn't compare to her home, all the decorations here were top-notch. Although it couldn't be said that everything was priceless, they were still luxurious.

Luxurious and cozy sofa, a bed with unusual shape, European style window, gorgeous fireplace, huge and luxurious office desk, and soft bright-colored carpet. Everything in this room made one feel an alluring noble air attracting them.

The door gently closed behind Emma. Standing within a huge space which was around a hundred square meters, Emma looked around suspiciously. Soon... Emma saw a cute boy who was about of age, smiling and looking at her.

"Hey!" Looking at Suo Jia without restraint, Emma shook the fat on her face as she said, "Are you Lord Suo Jia's apprentice? I ask you, where did Lord Suo Jia go? Quickly bring him to me."

"Eh!" Hearing Emma's words, Suo Jia could not help but stare blankly. This woman had actually mistaken him as an apprentice. However, now that he thought about it, that was not strange. How could an 8 year-old child earn a person's trust?

While thinking, Suo Jia quietly turned around, and walked to the large chair behind the desk. Leisurely sitting down, he calmly looked at Emma, who was wearing an impatient expression, and said in a low voice, "I am Lord Suo Jia, and am also the person you are looking for. If I haven't guessed wrong, then you are my first assigned customer, right?"

"What!" A shrill sound resembling that of a dying chicken came out of Emma's mouth. "What did you say! You are Lord Suo Jia? What joke are you trying to pull, you're just a little brat. What could you possibly do?"

Suo Jia was depressed and knitted his brows, he said in a displeased tone, "There's no need for you to verify my ability. If you do not need my help, you can leave now. I won't bother to see you out!" While speaking, Suo Jia exerted strength into both feet and stomped on the ground. The swivel chair rapidly started to turn around, and the Shar Pei woman's line of sight was blocked by the huge chair.

Even though Suo Jia acted this way, he actually felt quite nervous. However, Wen Ya had told him if someone was very capable, he must learn how to be callous. If he was too amiable, it would give people the feeling that he didn't have any skill. Actually, when a specialized field is involved, one absolutely must not yield even if the the emperor himself arrived. Otherwise, it wouldn't be possible to earn people's trust.

Right now, the Shar Pei woman questioned his ability simply because of his age. This was absolutely not tolerated. Although he could explain politely and confirm the truth with his own actions, if he did this, Suo Jia's image in front of the Shar Pei woman's eyes would not be very good. Regardless of his ability, he was still merely a wimpy brat who would think everything is okay if she simply bought a jelly bean for him. He had fundamentally no value to her.

Facing Suo Jia's indifferent and arrogant attitude, the Shar Pei woman could not hold in her anger anymore. Even though her sorry appearance was a disgrace to her country and people, her status and position were still clearly evident. She was being flattered everyday by the people around her. When would she ever experienced this disrespectful feeling?

Looking at the back of the big chair which blocked her sight of Suo Jia, Emma stomped the ground fiercely and turned around. One of the reasons she acted in such a way was because she couldn't take this anymore. Most importantly, she doesn't that think an 8 year-old child had the ability to help her.

Behind the chair, Suo Jia smiled gloomily. He hadn't expected that everything the Eldest Sister had ordered him to do would be accomplished by him so easily. Thinking back to the weird tactics employed by Eldest Sister, Suo Jia sighed and shook his head. He was still too young and could not have possibly thought of such a sinister scheme.

"Wait a moment!" Seeing that the Shar Pei woman was about to leave, Suo Jia finally said in a deep tone.

Hearing Suo Jia's word, the Shar Pei woman stopped in doubt. Impatiently looking back and facing Suo Jia, she said, "It was you who

asked me to leave. Now you ask me to wait. What do you want now?"

Slowly turning the chair, Suo Jia's body slowly faced the Shar Pei woman, "Since you do not need me, please return the golden card. I cannot tolerate allowing the golden card to wander around everywhere as one wishes. For the people who need it, this golden card is more valuable than life!"

Her mouth twitched. Since the Shar Pei woman had no plans to exchange the card for 1 million gold, he directly took the golden card from her pocket and threw it on top of the table before saying, "Fine, fine! You can have the golden card back! I can leave now right?!"

Casually receiving the golden card, Suo Jia calmly said, "Originally, you wouldn't be able to receive my service since you are not my customer. But... today is a special day. Today is the day the White Villa open for business. Since you drew the golden card, I must serve you at least one time."

Speaking until here, Suo Jia came to a stop and his complexion turned ashen, "Furthermore, I cannot allow you to go out and tell everything that I do not have the capability. That's why... before you leave, I will perform the Weight Loss Technique for you once. I will show you whether I have the capability or not."

Originally, the Shar Pei woman had been very angry. She had been prepared to leave and never return here anymore. But Suo Jia mentioning Weight Loss Technique, was equivalent to pointing out her achilles' heel. Even if she couldn't trust Suo Jia, who was only 8 years old, she wasn't willing to give up on the opportunity to try it.

Chapter 57: Crafty Plots

According to Suo Jia's instruction, Emma strenuously lied down on the luxurious couch. While Suo Jia continuously casted a few Moisture Techniques, Emma moved her body cozily, allowing herself to lie down a little more comfortably.

In reality, the Moisture Technique was not some extraordinary event for Emma. She alone already had two personal moisturizing masters helping her moisturize her skin everyday. Since she was able to enjoy the fresh and cool feelings from the Moisture Technique daily, she had already gotten used to it.

Looking at the comfortable expression on the Shar Pei woman's face. Suo Jia lowered his voice, "Alright, even though you will only get one chance, you still have a choice. Which part do you want me to perform the Weight Loss Technique on?"

Faced with Suo Jia's problem, the Shar Pei woman became hesitant and pointed towards her own face. Seeing the Shar Pei woman's actions, Suo Jia chuckled. Truthfully, in regards to an individual's appearance, the face was the most important, since it was the part that people paid the most attention to.

As for live advertising, there was already Wen Ya, but Suo Jia wouldn't mind having one too many live advertisements like these. If this Shar Pei woman could also become a live advertisement, then wouldn't his persuasiveness become stronger?

Moreover, once the Shar Pei woman received his treatment, she would be able to see the face remodeled by Suo Jia's miraculous skills every day. How would she not come to beg Suo Jia to help her? If this were to happen, then she would certainly have fallen into Eldest Sister's plan completely.

In fact, each and every one of those golden cards were very valuable. It was impossible to present them to others as prizes for no reason. But in reality, Suo Jia wouldn't just simply perform a Weight Loss Technique for

her directly. That was too cheap!

Actually, the quarrel earlier had been inevitable. Even if the Shar Pei woman's temper was better, Suo Jia would have still gotten into a quarrel with her, and seized the opportunity to let her feel his skill. After waiting for her to return and plead for him to continue, Suo Jia would reject her again and again. This would make her become the most suitable live advertisement.

Even though she had gotten the golden card, it was still too early for her to get help from Suo Jia. What defines the most precious thing? Is it the best thing? Or the rarest thing? No... That is definitely not the case. In reality, the most precious things are the things that everyone desires. For example, panda feces are few in numbers, but nobody treats it as a treasure.

If Suo Jia took the initiative to help others lose weight, the results would definitely not be good. Only when you refused to agree after someone comes pleading at your door with a smile and money in hand, would that be considered good results. In addition, for these types of people, the higher their social status and positions were, the better the results would be. Just like how Liu Bei from the three kingdoms ended up asking Zhuge Liang, only that could be considered status and identity.

While thinking, Suo Jia gently reached out with his two hands and quietly closed his eyes. Concentrating his attention entirely on the woman's skin and flesh, he began to skillfully control the water within her fat cells.

Ever since he had successfully helped Wen Ya with her weight-loss, Suo Jia had never stopped his experimentation and practicing of the Weight Loss Technique. He still practiced a frightening amount, helping a Quack Chicken lose weight every day. This has already become a normal practice routine.

Following Suo Jia's movements, the Shar Pei woman could only feel her face becoming numb and itchy. When she reached out her hands to scratch the itch, she would be stopped by Suo Jia. Helpless, she could only

endure.

After about half an hour's worth of non-stop modifying and perfecting, Suo Jia finally retracted his two hands in satisfaction. After looking through the details one last time, Suo Jia silently turned around and walked towards a different room. At the same time, Suo Jia said in a loud voice, "Alright, I've already finished. You can leave now!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the Shar Pei woman slowly opened both her eyes. When she brought her hands to her face, she could only feel a pile of grease. When she looked at her hands, she saw that they were covered in a yellow and muddy liquid. What in the world was this?

Right when the Shar Pei woman was having her doubts, the door opened and a maid walked in and led Emma to the washroom. After cleansing her face, the Shar Pei woman really wanted to see what her face looked like. However, the situation was prepared in such a way that no matter how hard she looked, she could not find a mirror!

After washing her face, the Shar Pei woman gloomily followed the maid and walked downstairs. Compared to before, she really did not feel that she had undergone any sort of change at all. Instead, she felt a belly full of dissatisfaction. At this moment, the Shar Pei woman secretly vowed to never return to this place. Other than being extremely unsatisfied, what else did she gain from this visit?

"Woo!" Quickly, under the guidance of the maid, the Shar Pei woman walked down the stairs. At once, all the guests all turned to glance in the Shar Pei woman's direction. Everyone who saw this scene cried out in alarm.

Seeing the previously obese Shar Pei woman slowly walk down the stairs, Wen Ya hurriedly welcomed her and asked in a loud voice, "Wow, Sister Emma, Suo Jia does indeed have ability right?"

"Heng!" With a cold snort, the Shar Pei woman replied sullenly, "I can't see any ability at all, he's simply a seven or eight year old child. He doesn't have any sort of ability, and his temper is short as well. I'll never come back again." After saying these words, the furious Shar Pei woman

did not pay attention to anyone. She dodged the crowd and left the lobby.

Looking at the Shar Pei woman who walked past, if it were not for her figure and voice staying the same, everyone would highly doubt if this was the same Shar Pei woman as before.

Undergoing Suo Jia's modifications, the Shar Pei woman's eyes, that were originally only barely visible after being obscured by the layers of fatty skin, were now large and bright. This was especially evident in the currently enraged Shar Pei woman's eyes that were now shooting out a starry bright coldness.

Her eyes weren't the only things that had been altered by Suo Jia. The layers of skin on the Shar Pei woman's face had already receded, and the currently ruffled Emma had a blushing face like that of an apple. There was absolutely not a hint of resemblance to a Shar Pei anymore.

Although because of her figure and her bone structure, Emma would never become a beauty like Wen Ya, after Suo Jia's miraculous hands, her face alone was already that of a delicate and adorable girl. Her face was flush red, chubby, and round, with a small mouth and large eyes. Her whole face was rosy and glossy. Even though she could not be called a beauty, she was lovely enough to want people to kiss her.

Unfortunately, everything below the face remained unchanged. Starting from the neck down, her body was still layers of skin like that of a Shar Pei's, and her swelling fats were like that of an old pig. Comparing these two extremes, everyone could only stare blankly. Deep inside, they all recognized exactly how far the extent of Lord Suo Jia's abilities could reach!

However, what made everyone beyond confused was that despite achieving such a result, Miss Emma was still not satisfied. She had even said that Lord Suo Jia had no skill, and was only a 7-8 years old brat. Heavens! If this still counted as having no skill, then could there be anyone that dared to say a person with skill in this world existed?

Leaving aside everyone's shock, on the other side, the Shar Pei woman had returned home, panting with rage. However, she had not imagined

that as soon as she entered the grounds, she was met with interception from 4-5 robust guards. With serious faces, they blocked her path, and bellowed, "Stop! This is Ellison's mansion, people who are not employed here cannot enter!"

Stunned, Emma stared at the few guards blocking her path. Originally, she had felt melancholy, but now that she couldn't even return to her own home, she became angry. She yelled out indignantly at the top of her lungs, "Your useless eyes have all become blind, you can't even recognize me anymore? Hurry up and get out of my way, otherwise, I'll accidentally cut off your heads and use them for soccer!"

Even though her face had changed, her figure, voice, and temper, were originally Emma's. After hearing the the young mistress' voice, and giving another glance at her figure, the few guards immediately realized who she was, and they gave way one by one, each person scared witless. Despite her new face, this was still the young mistress.

Impatient throughout the whole trip, Emma quickly returned to her own room, and sat down on the chair. In a loud voice, she yelled, "Did everyone die off? Didn't you see me return? Quickly fetch me a cup of tea, I'm dying of thirst" Because of Suo Jia, Emma was severely dehydrated, and was naturally thirsty. The worst part was that Suo Jia had not even been willing to let her drink water.

Sitting on the chair, Emma gasped for breath. Just now, she had been walking a bit too quickly. Looking towards the door, Emma could not help but secretly get angry; that brat maid, how long could it possibly take to bring over a cup of tea? If she didn't punish her properly, the brat wouldn't know what...

While thinking, Emma had started to turn around. However just at that moment, she suddenly froze, and then quickly completed her turn to look towards her reflection in the mirror. From the glowing mirror, the appearance that Emma saw made her shout out soundlessly.

Chapter 58: Money Cannot Buy Everything

In the quiet mansion, Emma cried out in fright, as if she was a chicken about to be slaughtered. “Ghost!”

Hearing Emma’s cry, all the servant girls rushed to the young lady’s room. Pushing the door open, everyone suddenly realized Emma had covered her face with both hands, and stared at the mirror with a blank face, as if she had seen a ghost.

“Miss!” Emma finally regained herself after hearing one of the servant girls’ urgent voice. Her whole body trembled, then Emma exclaimed while repeatedly waving her hand, “Get out, get out! Everyone get out this instance! Without my order, no one is permitted to enter!”

Even though they didn’t know what exactly had happened, all the servant girls still retreated from the room quickly. Miss Emma’s temper was always known to be short, and anything could happen once you provoked her.

After all the servant girls had withdrawn from the room, Emma stood up excitedly and walked in front of the mirror. She stared in disbelief at her own graceful and extremely adorable face in the mirror. Emma had finally realized that the kid who only seemed to be about 7 to 8 years old really had an ability that rivals the gods, even though he looks so small and had such a big temper!

As Emma gently stroked her face, it fully dawned on her that she never thought the day would come where she could be so beautiful and cute! Even though she was not as beautiful as Wen Ya, her face still possessed a certain beauty and cuteness that wouldn’t lose when compared to hers. This Suo Jia was practically a God!

While she pondered, Emma couldn’t help but breathe feverishly. With Suo Jia’s help, she would be able to be like Wen Ya. Transformed from an ugly and bloated woman into one of the most beautiful women in Holy Light City. Look at Wen Ya; after she possessed that kind of beauty, even the most confident and handsome Fourth Prince couldn’t resist her

radiance. If she also possessed that kind of beauty, then...

While pondering, Emma almost started drooling. As she looked outside the window she noticed that the color of the sky had already darkened. Surely, even if she went to the White Villa now, it should be closed. Judging from Suo Jia's attitude towards her today, even if she went to the front door to find him, he probably wouldn't promise to help her.

While pondering, Emma suddenly clenched her fists. In that case, she should just patiently wait for one night and then go to the White Villa tomorrow morning. No matter what, she must quickly request Suo Jia to make herself as beautiful as Wen Ya!

In Emma's opinion, wasn't Suo Jia just running a business for the sake of money? As long as she handed over a large amount of money, she wasn't afraid that Suo Jia would not help her. If 10,000 wasn't enough, then 20,000. If 20,000 wasn't enough, then 100,000. She had nothing else but money!

For the rest of the night, Emma was intoxicated by the beautiful dreams of her future, and was unable to sleep for an entire night. After tossing and turning relentlessly in bed for a long time, she finally managed to last until daybreak. Unable to wait any longer, Emma urged the coachman to rush to the White Villa.

In the early morning, when most people were still very drunk on their dreams, Emma had already arrived at the White Villa. After ringing the doorbell quite a few times, a still drowsy-eyed maid rushed over and pulled the door open.

Since her mood was good, Emma was not actually angry. She urgently said to the maid that had opened the door, "Hurry, notify Lord Suo Jia for me that Emma wants to meet him!"

Originally, the maids were supposed to be extremely respectful and sincere towards customers. However, because Eldest Sister had already anticipated everything that would happen, they had already been told how to respond. Thus, the maid furrowed their brows, and replied, "I apologize Miss Emma. The White Villa does not accept any customers in

the mornings. If you want to meet Lord Suo Jia, come back in the afternoon. That is when the White Villa formally welcomes customers.”

“Ah!” Hearing the maid’s words, Emma could not help but shout out in a bewildered tone, “You lowly maid, on what basis can you speak for your master? Go tell your Lord that Emma wants to meet him. He will definitely come.”

Smiling, the maid shook her head, “Lord Suo Jia said that during this period, he needs to train. Even if the Duke came to visit him, he wouldn’t come out to meet him. Moreover, even if we wanted to pass the message for you, I cannot. This is because the place that the Young Master trains in is somewhere I cannot even approach, let alone enter.”

At this point, the maid politely replied, “Miss Emma, this lowly maid doesn’t dare trouble you. I really have no intention of making you suffer, but as a lowly maid, how can I dare to disobey any orders that Lord Suo Jia makes?”

Hearing the servant’s words, Emma could not help but grow fretful. She also knew that an insignificant, lowly maid would not dare to treat a noble guest like her without orders from Suo Jia. It seemed that it wasn’t the maid making trouble for her, it really was that Suo Jia simply couldn’t meet with anyone at this time.

After muttering to herself for a while, Emma suddenly replied, “Ok, if he isn’t free to meet me right now, that’s fine. I’ll enter now and wait for him there until he has time to meet with me. At least this should be okay!”

“This...” After a bit of hesitation, the maid finally helplessly responded, “Although the White Villa does not accept customers before noon, Miss Emma is different. I will make the decision of letting Miss Emma enter the lounge to wait without permission. I hope that if Master blames me, Miss Emma will help support this lowly maid with a few words.”

“Certainly, certainly...” Hearing the maid’s words, Emma thought that the maid was afraid of her. She smiled and nodded her head in agreement, and with gradual steps, she followed the girl into the White Villa.

In Emma’s opinion, as long as she waited here for a little bit, Suo Jia

would end his excessive airs, and would appear to meet with her. After all, she was one of the richest customers in Holy Light City. For someone who ran a business, how could he squabble with money?

As time flowed on, Suo Jia's figure still did not appear. Emma urged the maids 5-6 times, but was not able to prompt Suo Jia out. Finally, Emma was no longer able to endure it, and exploded in anger, shouting, "You, you, you, and you, immediately find Suo Jia for me. Tell him that if he doesn't come, I'm going to leave, and will never return here."

As soon as Emma's voice dropped, a figure flashed outside the entrance, and Eldest Sister, clad in purple clothes, walked inside with a calm expression. She smiled at Emma and said, "Miss Emma, why are you so angry? White Villa is only a place of service. We have never forced anyone to do anything. Young Master Suo Jia frequently instructs us that we should never dare to obstruct a customer's way, no matter whether the customer desires to stay or leave."

At this point, Eldest Sister's expression grew solemn, and she loudly said, "You stupid servants, why are you still standing there blankly? Didn't you hear that Miss Emma wanted to leave? Hurry up and arrange for it!"

"You you you..." Hearing Eldest Sister's voice, Emma urgently pointed at Eldest Sister in a degrading way, and in her anger, she could not even say a single sentence.

Seeing Emma's furious expression, even Eldest Sister did not dare to play with fire. Helplessly, she said, "I'm really very sorry Miss Emma, just now I notified Young Master about your situation, but Young Master did not pay any heed to it. He said without a golden card, he refuses to meet anyone, even if it was the emperor himself. Right now, all seven golden cards are in his possession, so he will not meet with you."

Hearing Eldest Sister's words, Emma indignantly shouted, "So what if it's a golden card; isn't it just money? You go tell your Young Master that I will buy that card for 10,000 gold!"

"Haha..." Laughing, Eldest Sister politely said, "You must be joking Miss Emma. 10,000 gold might be able to satisfy some of the maids here, but if

you want to buy the golden card, oh sorry....I should say, if you even want to touch that golden card, such a price is too little.”

“What did you say! How could that single stupid card, even if it was made of pure gold, be worth so much money?” Emma shouted in disbelief.

Seeing Emma’s incredulous expression, Eldest Sister calmly continued, “In reality, if it was not worth so much money, then why would Miss Wen Ya offer a million gold to get back the card? You should know that there are only 7 of these types of golden cards in the entire world. Most likely... Miss Emma has not yet realized the implication of this golden card yet!”

Speaking up to this point, Eldest Sister revealed an expression of envy, and muttered, “Using this card means that you can get Young Master’s help. Having his aid also means that you can become a beauty that would receive worldwide attention. Miss Wen Ya is the best example of this. With the Young Master’s help, she was able to gain the chance of becoming a country’s queen. How could this be measured in money?”

“Ok ok, it’s just money, isn’t it? I’ll pay a million gold to buy the golden card back. That should be ok right? You should understand that I had originally returned that card for free.” Emma said in disdain.

Hearing Emma’s words, Eldest Sister bitterly laughed, “Miss Emma, perhaps you don’t completely understand. Miss Wen Ya offered a million as the purchase price for your card as a personal decision. It does not represent the golden card’s original value. In reality, besides from opportunities like yesterday’s. Otherwise, even if you paid 100 million, you still wouldn’t be able to buy that golden card.”

Chapter 59: Begging is Also Useless

“You! This is extortion!” After she heard Eldest Sister’s words, Emma couldn’t help but feel flabbergasted; even with all her riches this was still considered an exorbitant cost.

Eldest Sister was displeased and furrowed her brows after listening to Emma’s words. In a low voice, she said, “Miss Emma, please pay attention to your words. We will not extort you; you can decide whether or not you wish to come to the White Villa on your own . You were not forced to come!”

After she paused for a second, Eldest Sister said in a disdainful tone, “Yesterday, you had already received the heavens’ help and pulled out the golden card, but you were the one who willingly gave it up. Otherwise, your beauty right now would be comparable to Wen Ya’s. Since it’s like this, how can you claim that we have blackmailed you?”

Taking in a deep breath, Eldest Sister pretended to be upset and said, “To be honest, Miss Emma, that first card you received was only available as a gift from that evening’s raffle. The Young Master is a devout believer, and decided for his first customer to be left for the heavens to choose. However, Miss Emma, you received the God’s blessing but didn’t cherish that opportunity, and now the opportunity is lost. Now you come here and dare to accuse us of extortion, does such reasoning exist in this world?”

The more Eldest Sister spoke, the angrier she got, until she began to shake. “Miss Emma, I hope that you can understand that right now, no one is extorting you. In fact, even if you managed to save up a hundred million gold, no one can help you get back your golden card. Although the card was initially valued at a hundred million gold, the Young Master would never exchange a golden card for gold.”

Hearing Eldest Sister’s words, Emma finally realized the hundred million gold was brought up not because they wanted her to buy back the card, but rather to tell her that no amount of gold could purchase another golden card. She originally had the opportunity to finally obtain beauty,

but because she did not appreciate this chance, she instead completely lost it.

Recalling everything that happened yesterday, Emma could not help but feel like punching herself a few times. Originally, the other party received her with a smiling face, but because she simply had a problem with his age and looked down on him. She even went as far as to call him a child and question his ability. Naturally, no one would willingly accept this type of humiliation.

The heavens had definitely given her a chance. Amongst the 200 cards, she had managed to draw that one priceless golden card, yet she had ignored God's generosity. Who else could she blame but herself? Perhaps it was for this precise reason that the devout Lord Suo Jia refused to meet with her again no matter what, let alone help her lose weight. After all....she had blasphemed God's gift!

Weakly looking at Eldest Sister, Emma bitterly pondered; if money was capable of solving the problem, then she would definitely not be stingy with it. However, the truth was that the opposing party wasn't even discussing money. The only reason they had said the number of 100 million was simply to prevent any notions of being able to use money to solve the problem. If even 100 million could not force the golden card out, then no matter how wealthy Emma was, she had no way of getting it. Although her family was rich, even she was unable to randomly throw away 100 million gold just like that.

Although she was at a loss, Emma still had not resigned to leaving. She waited the whole time until sunset, and still refused to leave. For the sake of persuading the servant girls, she gave them quite a large number of tips, and also did not hold back on enjoying the White Villa's food and services. Unfortunately, even after the entire day had passed, Lord Suo Jia did not appear.

As evening fell, finally....waves of guests began to arrive at the White Villa one after another by carriage. Among these, it was admittedly true that some of these people had been from yesterday. However, majority of the people were rich and powerful merchants coming to observe;

everyone wanted to witness exactly how luxurious the White Villa was.

Since it was currently dinnertime, the villa had round tables and chairs set up around the lounge. All the guests that entered sat themselves at a table, and ordered dishes that were terrifyingly expensive to flaunt their wealthy statuses.

Emma sat in a corner and played with a glass of wine in her hand. After seeing the deep red liquid in the glass, Emma understood that this was a fine liquor that had successfully passed through the Greater Trade Routes. Despite this, Emma was still completely unable to taste what was so good about it; it was both sour and tart. Aside from the fact that its value was scarily high, it had no other special characteristics.

Looking at the staircase for the Nth time and still not seeing Suo Jia's figure, Emma drained her glass in one gulp in distress. Right now, she was regretting her decision more and more; she shouldn't have carelessly given up the opportunity offered to her that day. No matter how much she regretted it now, what use would just thinking about it be? Sometimes, money was not omnipotent.

Just as she was deep in thought, a clamor could be heard outside. Three fat men walked inside with large strides. After loftily glancing around, one of the men led their group and walked up to the seat next to Emma. The fat man patted the table hard to attract the servants' attention, and then shouted, "Come here, come here!"

Seeing the few fattys' vulgar appearances, Emma could not help but wrinkle her brows. These people's appearances were too ugly. What kind of place was this? This was the luxurious White Villa! How could people like these enter so easily?

While she furrowed her brows in thought, that fat man proudly said to his two companions, "Everyone says the food here is expensive; we should experience it for ourselves today. Isn't it just money? That's something we have!"

Hearing the fat man bragging, his two companions hastily began to flatter him. They were so noisy that all the surrounding people furrowed

their brows. After all, this place was not some adventure guild's pub, making such a large racket was really too impolite.

This was especially true for people like these who thought of themselves as being so amazing, and used their money to symbolize it. Putting aside others, even Emma could not stand to watch such a spectacle. Even though money was amazing, it was not supposed to be used to show off.

While Emma was pondering this, a servant respectfully walked up to the table, and asked in a low voice, "Gentlemen, what would you like to order?"

"Hn...." After muttering to himself for a while, the fat man loudly said, "I've heard that the dishes here are all extremely expensive. Today, I want to try them out for myself; it's just money, isn't it? Even if I have nothing else, I definitely have money. I want you to serve me a dish worth 1000 gold!"

Hearing the fat man's words, the servant calmly replied, "I apologize, Sir. We only sell dishes by whole servings, not by half servings."

"You don't sell half servings? What are you talking about? What can't I really..." Hearing the server's words, the fat man mumbled in confusion. However, before he had even finished speaking, he was dragged out by his two companions; this embarrassment was too much.

Seeing the three men run out the building with their tails between their legs, the whole lounge was first quiet for a while. However soon after, all the guests could not help but chuckle. These few fellows had actually wanted to clash with the wealthy. However, they had not known that within the White Villa's main courses, the cheapest dish was at least 1000 gold!

Emma was also laughing; she was even happy. However, after laughing for a while, Emma's face changed color. The fellows just now were definitely beyond vulgar. Just because they had some stupid money, they had acted arrogant and despotic; it was really too tasteless. They were in no way like Emma, who was so wealthy....who was so wealthy....

After pondering for a while, Emma's expression finally changed. The smile on her face gradually froze, and her face had also begun to slowly pale. After thinking about it harder, she realized that besides from the different amounts of money, how was she any different from those vulgar men? Hadn't they both shown off simply because of some stupid money?

In Emma's opinion, anything could be solved with money. Once a pile of money was thrown away, anything could be achieved. This had always been how Emma understood things. However, now that she thought about it, wasn't her relationship with Lord Suo Jia exactly the same as the relationship between those vulgar men and the White Villa? After all, she had vainly attempted to use money to force her way to get that golden card. However, she hadn't realized that by doing so, everyone else would laugh at her, just as everyone had laughed at those three idiots.

With this realization, Emma could no longer sit still. Although she had never noticed before, now that her mentality had changed, Emma could feel that the way everyone perceived her had changed. It seemed like everyone was looking at her with looks of contempt and disdain. Throughout her whole life, this was the first time that Emma was conscious of the fact that showing off wealth was the most frivolous and foolish thing to do.

Although she really wanted to wait for Suo Jia to appear, Emma could no longer continue staying in this place. As she hurriedly stood up, Emma could only feel that her previous self was just like a clown that everyone would laugh at. However, she had still felt immeasurably self-satisfied; how humiliating!

Chapter 60: Learning From Wen Ya

Despite her exceptional longing for Suo Jia's help, Emma was too ashamed to return to the White Villa during the following three days. After what had happened that day, she finally realized her appearance and position in everyone else's eyes, and felt that her previous actions had been foolish.

On the fourth day, Emma was finally unable to endure any longer. Even though she felt that her deeds had been foolish and idiotic, she couldn't keep hiding and refusing to meet others just because of this. No matter how embarrassed she was, she still had to leave her house at some point.

With a profound expression on her face, Emma once again returned to the White Villa and requested to meet with Lord Suo Jia. Faced with Emma's request, Eldest Sister helplessly told her that Lord Suo Jia had already said he couldn't possibly help her anymore. Since the heavens had given her an opportunity, and she had still let the heavens down, Suo Jia could not do something that opposed the heavens so much.

Faced with Suo Jia's rejection, Emma did not shrink back. The next few days, she had exhausted various methods to try to receive help, however in the end, no changes in the result had occurred. Helplessly, Emma could only plead to meet Wen Ya. Perhaps, if Wen Ya was willing to help Emma ask Suo Jia, he would agree.

What Emma didn't know was that in reality, the three vulgar men that day had been planned by Eldest Sister. They had been specifically acting like that in front of Emma. At the same time, they had drawn support from this joke to help the White Villa's name increase by another level.

Without a doubt, Eldest Sister's plans had succeeded. People were just like that, they would never see the bad things about themselves. However, once Emma was able to witness how ugly her own ideologies and ways appeared to others, the amount of emotions that stirred from within her was immeasurable. The next few days, although Emma wasn't conscious of it, she had already changed a lot.

The reason Suo Jia had done it this way was because he also did not want any regrets. Suo Jia knew that, ultimately, he would end up helping Emma. Just as Emma had thought, as someone running a business, he could not squabble with money. The only thing was, while earning money, Suo Jia still acted based on his own goals and ideals.

Simply changing appearances was easy to do, however Suo Jia was not satisfied with just doing this. He did not want to personally alter beauty if the owner was destroying it with vulgar actions and mannerisms. At the same time Emma was getting her appearance altered, Suo Jia wished for Emma's personality to also become more beautiful.

Although this was difficult to achieve, this was still Suo Jia's hope. Moreover, it now seemed like he had already succeeded in doing so. Emma had already changed a lot. Even though she was still very far from Suo Jia's objective, there was still a lot of time, and it could be reached gradually.

The other reason behind this arrangement was to use the very amusing joke to make everyone advertise the White Villa without spending any money. By now, everyone in Holy Light City, regardless of age or gender, knew of the joke. It had already become a symbol of wealth and privilege; average people could only buy a single dish in the White Villa after earning more than a year's worth of wages.

Wen Ya felt that something was amiss when she received Emma's request to meet. However, she soon realized that Emma had definitely done so to ask for Wen Ya to help speak for her. However the current problem was that Suo Jia had already told her everything ages ago. Under the current situation, was she supposed to actually help speak up for Emma? After all... this was a good thing to both Suo Jia and Emma.

Regardless of whether or not Wen Ya would help Emma, the two of them still had to meet. The relations between their families were extremely good. Even if Wen Ya did not actually help, she still had to find an appropriate excuse. Otherwise, it would ruin their relationship.

Soon, Emma's ballooning face appeared in Wen Ya's room. Seeing Wen

Ya's face that could rival a goddess', and her figure that was as delicate as a willow's, Emma was envious to death. Emma clearly knew Wen Ya's original appearance had definitely been uglier and fatter than hers, but her current appearance couldn't even be described with the word 'beautiful' alone!

"Sister Wen Ya, you have to help me; help me ask Lord Suo Jia for a favor to help me. That day was my fault for not holding onto the opportunity. I will never do such a thing again!" Emma sincerely pleaded.

"Ay..." Sighing, Wen Ya shook her head and said, "Foolish sister, I had already been so thorough about it that day. How were you still unable to understand that opportunity's value? Now that you plead me to help you, how could I possibly do so? Did you think that me pleading to Suo Jia would be of any use?"

Hearing Wen Ya's words, Emma doubtfully replied, "You two share such a close relationship. Otherwise, why would he be willing to help you lose weight? I feel like as long as you speak for me, he will definitely agree."

Hearing Emma's words, Wen Ya finally realized what the problem was. Sternly looking at Emma, Wen Ya said seriously, "Emma, you shouldn't think that I was able to gain his help so easily. Do you know what I had to pay as a price?"

Speaking up to this point, Wen Ya slowly said, "I gave him the White Villa, and even allowed him to borrow the Fourth Prince's power, directly raising him to an eighth-ranked lord. I also gave up to him my favorite and most appreciated six maids. Are you able to see exactly how much value this alone has?"

"This..." Emma hesitated for a long time. The White Villa's value was really difficult to measure. Not including its size, the construction and its decorations, and even its location, were priceless. There was no way it could be measured in gold.

Especially that eighth-ranked lord status; to have been raised by four ranks in an instant was something that only royalty had the power to do. Strictly speaking, one aristocratic status was priceless, let alone rising up

four levels. If this kind of opportunity was offered to Emma's father, he would most likely be willing spend more than 100 million gold for it.

Seeing Emma's shocked expression, Wen Ya continued, "Emma, you definitely cannot assume that just this alone was enough to get Suo Jia to help me. If it was so simple, then why wouldn't I just help you plead him?"

"Ah!" Hearing Wen Ya's words, Emma asked in disbelief, "If even this wasn't enough, then exactly what did you do to get him to agree to help you?"

With a serious expression, Wen Ya said heavily, "In reality, the reason he was willing to help me was because I coincidentally helped save his whole family. Otherwise, even if I had offered tons of money, he still might not have been willing to help me."

Hearing Wen Ya's words, Emma was completely dazed. The grace from saving lives, added on to all the wealth and privileges that had been exchanged for a single opportunity... it seemed that what everyone had said about the card was right. Simply wanting to purchase the golden card with money alone was a complete joke. Emma was currently painfully hating herself to death for being so ignorant and naive. She hadn't cherished such a rare opportunity, and had casually thrown it away. Heavens...

It was obvious that Wen Ya was lying. However, seeing the extremely disappointed Emma, Wen Ya still did not feel ashamed, because she knew that a white lie like this was necessary for Emma and Suo Jia to form a better relationship. There was no other meaning behind it. Moreover... not everything she had said was a lie; although Suo Jia's power was miraculous, Suo Jia was not someone who would be willing to help others so easily. Wanting to gain help from others was fine, but to do so, it's necessary to pay the appropriate price for it.

Perhaps Suo Jia was being too forceful, however he was also very straightforward. If you had done a favor for him, then he would definitely use any means to return the favor. Similarly, if you owed him something,

then he would find a way to recollect it. Even then, he wouldn't really ever give the opportunity for you to owe him anything.

However, Wen Ya was still unable to resist giving Emma some suggestions. If she wanted to ask another person for a favor, then she must be on the person's good side. She had to be more observant of, more aware of, and more familiar with what the person enjoyed. If she was able to get the other person to like her, appreciate her, then there was no need for her to beg for the other person to be willing to help her.

Although Wen Ya had said it was a suggestion, she was actually using this to teach Emma and let her understand exactly how to interact with others. It was necessary for her to learn how to accommodate for others, and how to be considerate, as well as how to show tolerance. With her previous personality, no matter how beautiful her appearance was, it would be difficult for her to make genuine friends. The only people that would be willing to stay by her side were those that were seeking to gain benefits from her.

After receiving Wen Ya's advice, Emma realized that her current situation was not completely hopeless. The only way that she could get Suo Jia to agree was if she changed his opinion of her. Everything required Emma to observe and learn exactly what Suo Jia enjoyed and the ideals he pursued. That way, she would naturally be able to stir Suo Jia's emotions.

Chapter 61: The Importance of Equipment

For several days, Suo Jia had the strangest feeling that someone was constantly watching him. Whenever he inspected his surroundings carefully, however, he could not find anything out of the ordinary. He failed to find a single trace of his stalker. Helpless, Suo Jia could only assume that it was a misconception and continue on his way to do what he had to do.

It had already been a week since he learned meditation, and through the benefits of the Meditation Technique, his spirit and magic powers were enhanced at very fast speeds. However, although this was the case, there was still a significant gap from the levels Suo Jia hoped they would be.

Without choice, Suo Jia once again turned to the library for further studying. However, despite searching for an entire day, all of the books were in consensus that the Meditation Technique was the best way to increase magic and spirit power. In addition, there were no shortcuts around meditation; one had to cultivate step by step. By practicing longer and slowly accumulating more magic and spirit power, sooner or later, one would become a formidable mage.

An hour had already passed after school ended, yet Suo Jia was still isolated within the library. He looked through book after book hoping to find a single clue, hoping to find a way out of his current predicament and rapidly increase his overall strength.

Within the last two weeks, the White Villa's business was surprisingly good, as it constantly bustled with people. The high level of service that was kept meant that the White Villa could at most host 100 people. If guests arrived too late, then they could only apologize and ask them to either wait, or come at a different time.

During these past few days especially, if they wanted to have a guaranteed seat, then they would have to make reservations. Although only two weeks had passed since its opening, the White Lobby had already become a location known for its high level of quality. As for high

ranking nobles and officials, they would all unknowingly end up at this place. Gradually, this place was becoming one of Holy Light City's high level distinguished locations.

With his business booming, Suo Jia's assets increased exponentially. He could now be considered to have a fortune and since even regular dishes could be sold for a hundred times its normal price, it was difficult to not earn money.

However, as his money increased, Suo Jia gradually realized that once his wealth rose to a certain point, it didn't have much use anymore. Currently... Suo Jia had already accumulated 200,000 gold, yet he had no clue how to spend any of it.

Helplessly returning the books in his hand back to the bookshelf, Suo Jia left the library. It seemed... that recently, he had pretty much searched through all the relevant books. Suo Jia knew that in terms of learning, there were no longer any types of shortcuts available.

While thinking, Suo Jia quietly walked along the small path on the school grounds. After walking for a bit, a shadow flashed in front of him, and a beautiful figure turned onto the small path that Suo Jia was walking on, directly heading towards him.

"Suo Jia! It's so late, why haven't you gone home yet?" The owner of the shadow asked warmly.

When he lifted his head, Suo Jia discovered that it was actually the female lecturer. From his observation, it seemed like she had just finished eating, and was currently on her way back to the dorm.

Just as Suo Jia was about to open his mouth to explain, the lecturer seemed to have thought of something. Wrinkling her brows, she said, "Ah, Suo Jia, recently you've gotten quite famous. No matter where I go, I always hear rumors about you. You're pretty good, youngster, you must have earned quite a bit of money!"

"Hehe..." Awkwardly laughing, Suo Jia rubbed his head, "It's ok, I've earned a bit of extra fees. However, it still doesn't count as much. When compared to wealthy families, it can only qualify as a drop in an ocean."

“Please!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the female lecturer abruptly waved her hand, “You don’t have to pretend to be poor. Don’t worry, Teacher won’t ask to borrow money from you. There’s just something that I needed to talk to you about.”你

Speaking up to here, the female lecturer grew serious, and stressed, “Before you were poor, and had no money, so you had no other options. However now that you have money, why haven’t you quickly bought a magic staff to take advantage of? You have to know that although casting magic bare-handed is possible, you’re losing the boosts that a magic staff can provide. This seriously decreases the strength of your magic!”

“Boost?” Suo Jia wrinkled his brows in doubt.

Seeing Suo Jia’s lost expression, the lecturer suddenly said, “Of course. Even a normal magic staff can boost magic strength by 10%. If it’s middle-level or high-level, it’s even more powerful. It can easily boost strength by 40-50%. If it’s a legendary staff, then it can even boost magic by more than 100%!”

Speaking up to here, the lecturer became excited, and said enviously, “In this world, the best staff known to exist is the Holy Light Empire’s emperor’s Light Scepter. It qualifies as an epic-level staff, and can boost light elemental magic by 200%. Now tell me, how useful do you think a staff is?”

Hearing the lecturer’s words, Suo Jia’s eyes widened. What kind of joke was this, to increase magic by 200%! This was too extreme; after receiving a staff like that, a mage’s power would be upgraded by two times in a flash. This was too unreal!

Seeing Suo Jia so clueless and naive, the lecturer helplessly said, “Have you ever heard the saying ‘Good tools are the prerequisite to the successful execution of a job’? This actually doesn’t just apply to weapons. To a veteran, although equipment isn’t very trustworthy, it is without a question that the current you, once you wear a set of epic-level equipment, you would immediately become Holy Light’s number one mage. No one would be able to defeat you!”

“That can’t be! Then doesn’t that mean that nobody needs to train? Wouldn’t it be fine if each person just acquired a set of epic-level magic equipment?” Hearing the lecturer’s words, Suo Jia cried out in shock.

“One set per person” Hearing Suo Jia’s naive words, the lecturer didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. “Do you think epic-level equipment is just a radish? One set per person, even if you spent your whole lifetime trying, receiving a single piece of epic-level equipment can already qualify as surpassing your ancestors. For each person to get a whole set, you must be dreaming.”

Speaking up to here, the lecturer said in reverence, “To be able to receive a single magic equipment within your lifetime is already miraculous. Wanting to collect an entire set is just wishful thinking. If you could really achieve this, then without a doubt, you would become the world’s strongest existence. That’s because up until today, anyone who has gathered a whole set has been an epic-level elite!”

“Then that means that it’s still possible to combine them together as a whole?” Suo Jia asked with shining eyes.

“You!” Faced with the clueless Suo Jia, the lecturer was practically about to explode. Gritting her teeth, she looked at Suo Jia and said, “That’s right, theoretically, it can be combined to make a whole. In addition, there have actually been people that have done so. Up until today, there have been a total of seven people who have used the complete epic-level equipment set!”

“Who are these people!” Suo Jia said in excitement.

Faced with Suo Jia’s question, the lecturer shook her head and said, “No one knows their names. Actually, it’s more like no one dares to say their names out loud. They are the powerful and most celebrated individuals from the Greater Trade Routes - the Seven Martial Apex!”

“Seven Martial Apex!” Hearing his instructor’s words, Suo Jia’s eyes became brighter and brighter. He had previously heard these words from his mother countless times before. The so-called Seven Martial Apex represented seven different individuals, and these individuals were at the

martial pinnacle in this world! To these select people, the Greater Trade Routes might as well be a casual playground.

Seeing the excited Suo Jia, the lecturer finally let out her breath. She believed that she had already helped Suo Jia understand the importance of equipment. However, as a teacher, she had the obligation to further explain to Suo Jia its characteristics. To be a qualified mage, it is extremely important for one to have a clear understanding of weapons and equipment for application.

While thinking, the lecturer sternly said, “Suo Jia, weapons are not the only important things. Other magic items also have irreplaceable uses. For example, a magic robe can prevent damage from elements, and can also counter the absorption of magic power. Magic necklaces can recuperate and facilitate magic power, and increase its recovery speed. Helmets can help maintain a clear head, which improves the effects of meditation, and speeds up the improvement of magic and spirit powers. Magic rings assist the launching and manipulation of magic, and magic boots boost speed, raising evasion...”

After this long string of words, the lecturer finally paused to take a deep breath. She looked at the already completely dazed Suo Jia, and warmly patted Suo Jia’s shoulders, “In general, although magic equipment cannot be depended on, it has endless benefits to training and fighting. This is especially true for epic-level magic items, which result in power that rivals gods. Consider it carefully; if you’ve thoroughly thought it through, then I hope you quickly go purchase a staff. Otherwise, how could you count as a mage?”

Speaking up to here, the lecturer did not continue to babble. She patted Suo Jia’s shoulder, “Ok Suo Jia, it’s already quite late, hurry up and go home. Otherwise, your mother will worry!” Saying this, the lecturer smiled at Suo Jia and gestured for him to go. Then she turned around to walk back to the school dorm, leaving Suo Jia stand there alone in a daze.

Chapter 62: The Uses of Money

Suo Jia had never imagined that he would struggle for so long over a difficult problem, only to have it completely analyzed by a few sentences from the lecturer. Although training with the Meditation Technique didn't have any shortcuts, some things could boost the effects of the meditation, such as the helmet that the lecturer had mentioned.

This wasn't all. A high-level mage robe could resist elemental attacks, and most importantly, the material that the mage robes were tailored from had the ability to attract the elements. This allowed the surrounding magical elements to be gathered faster than the person would be able to do so without aid, which could then be used to convert the gathered elements into the user's magical power.

As for the magic necklace, since it was worn on the neck, it could bridge the mind and the body, and thus restored magic power by allowing it to flow freely throughout the body. It used a different method to increase the circulation of magic power, which meant that it could increase the rate at which it was replenished, and thus improved the growth rate of magic power as well.

There was also the magic ring; its biggest use was that it could assist the spells that one casted. Spells that were originally difficult to cast, or even uncontrollable magic might work once the ring was worn. Especially with Suo Jia's control over magic, with the additional assistance of the magic ring, his magic will most likely double. It was extremely useful, and would allow Suo Jia's water control abilities to easily be doubled!

Other than these, there were also magic bracelets, magic earrings, magic pendants, magic gauntlets, magic gloves, etc. There were numerous types of magical equipment, more than twenty types in total, and all of them had immeasurable magical effects.

In order to improve his training speed, Suo Jia needed a high-rank magical helmet to improve his meditation results, and a magical necklace to adjust the magical power within his body, as well as improve the

growth and recovery rate of his magical power.

On top of all of this, Suo Jia also needed a magic ring to improve his water control, as well as a high-rank magical robe to increase the speed at which he could gather elemental essences around him.

While walking home, Suo Jia pushed lightly with his right finger, and decided in the end that he needed all of these things. Currently, Suo Jia could only pray that these things wouldn't be too expensive.

On the second day, the anxious Suo Jia did not attend school, and once again asked for an excused absence. Now that he had learned about the importance of magical equipments, he no longer wanted to delay any longer. He was worried that he would have no place to spend his money, and this was a perfect solution for him.

Under the guidance of Sixth Sister, Suo Jia arrived at Holy Light Empire's Magic Equipment Shop. Here, there were many different magical items on sale, including magic books, scrolls, staffs and many other magical items. These items had mainly been discovered by adventurers and treasure hunters from around the world, and were then sold to this place.

As soon as he entered the store, Suo Jia was immediately attracted to the various arranged magical equipment within. As his instructor explained, the magical items here were all crazy and bizarre. There was everything from rings, earrings, hats, robes... whatever you could think of, as well as what you couldn't think of, it was all here.

Seeing Suo Jia enter, the storekeeper simply gave him a glance and did not pay attention to him any longer. From his perspective, it was simply a seven or eight year old child with a maid; they probably could not afford to buy much anyway.

While Suo Jia was looking around the store, within the Ellison mansion, an ordinarily dressed youth was standing respectfully in front of Emma. He whispered, "Mistress, Lord Suo Jia left early this morning for the Magical Equipment Shop, he is currently inside looking around. It seems like he has a great interest towards magical goods, if I am not mistaken,

most likely he will end up buying quite a few items.”

“En?” Hearing the youth’s words, Emma frowned, she carefully recalled that although Suo Jia was a mage, he was not covered in magical equipment. She used to think that it was because he was special and did not require such items, but it seemed like that was not the case.

After thinking for a while, she realized that since ancient times, there weren’t any mages that felt completely indifferent towards magical items. To bribe a mage, there weren’t many things that were better than magical goods!

Smack! Fiercely slapping her fat thighs, Emma could not help but curse at her own stupidity. How could she forget such a simple thing? A magician, in any case, would most likely not refuse magical equipment, especially those that were fascinating and dream-like they would even more so crazily seek and snatch away.

Standing up in excitement, Emma shouted, “Immediately fetch my butler, I have something I need to tell him!”

Since it was a summon from Emma, the subject naturally appeared in front of Emma immediately. He looked to be senile, but he was actually an extremely lively and hearty old fellow. Emma urgently said, “Butler, in our household’s treasury, do we have any good magic items? Or perhaps magic equipment?”

“This....” Hesitantly looking at Emma, the butler thought back a bit, and then firmly replied, “You should know of Master’s mannerisms. He personally cannot use magic, so he doesn’t gather these types of magic items.”

Hearing the butler’s words, Emma sat back down in disappointment. At this moment, the butler continued, “However, despite this, Master did in fact collect a magic item.”

Doubtfully looking at the butler, Emma asked, “If Father doesn’t gather magic items, then why did he collect that one item? Can it be....”

With a smile, the butler nodded, and rubbed his white beard, “That’s

right, Mistress. He doesn't like magic items, and yet he still collected one. This is only because it is an epic-level magic equipment -- Atlantis' Wisdom."

"Atlantis!" Hearing this name, Emma involuntarily cried out in astonishment.

Quietly nodding, the old butler seriously replied, "That's right, Mistress. This Atlantis' Wisdom is exactly one of the equipments from the series of equipment that Atlantis had used!"

"Heavens...." Emma faintly sat back down. She knew of this Atlantis' Wisdom; it was actually the Atlantis Heavenly Emperor's helmet. It wasn't only an epic-level magic item, it also symbolized the limits of wisdom. Not mentioning other things, just its historical value alone couldn't be described in words, and its price was already completely immeasurable!

Atlantis was an empire that existed only in epics. It was said that....Atlantis' people all had boundless wisdom, and utilized powerful magic. They had even been able to build an underwater city. In regards to this piece of Atlantis equipment set, it was exactly the equipment used back then by the Atlantis Heavenly Emperor. And among this set, the most important part was exactly the Atlantis' Wisdom, since it was the Atlantis Heavenly Emperor's helmet!

In regards to this crown, Emma did not actually desire it. She wasn't a mage, so obtaining it would be of no use to her. The reason she was wild with joy was because she knew that if she gifted Suo Jia with this crown, he would definitely not be able to reject her!

However, Wen Ya had already given away a house, nobility, and even saved his family's lives to exchange for Suo Jia's help. Although she had Atlantis' Wisdom, which was equivalent to saving a life, she was still missing two other gifts, that couldn't just be randomly chosen.

Emma didn't have the power to help Suo Jia rise to the fourth rank. As for a large house, he already had one. In addition....since she now already knew Suo Jia's preferences, things naturally wouldn't go as he had

planned.

While thinking this, Emma turned around to tell the butler, “How many days until the next auction? I remember....that it should be during the next few days right?”

Respectfully nodding his head, the butler replied, “That’s right, Mistress. Your memory is quite excellent. Actually, the auction event will be held tomorrow night.”

“Excellent!” Standing in excitement, Emma’s eyes shone as she said, “In that case, tomorrow evening, I will just gather two more treasures. Now it only depends on Lord Suo Jia’s luck; with Atlantis’ Wisdom, whether or not the other two items are compatible with it or not isn’t that important.”

Emma already thought it through. As long as any magic items appeared in tomorrow night’s auction, she would definitely choose two of them to purchase. Whether they were good or bad would depend on Suo Jia’s luck. Just as Suo Jia had previously done to her, she wanted to personally witness God’s intention!

Chapter 63: The Dispute Over The Robe

“Hey, Boss...how much does this magic robe cost?” Suo Jia yelled at the boss while stroking a sapphire blue robe.

Hearing Suo Jia’s voice, the boss indifferently turned his head. Just as he was about to reply, his expression suddenly changed, and he jumped up as if his butt had been lit on fire. In a loud voice, he shouted, “Stop, you brat, how can you be so ignorant? If you aren’t going to buy it, then don’t randomly touch it. If you got it dirty, would you be able to compensate for it?”

While speaking, the boss took large strides, and leapt up to Suo Jia, and slapped Suo Jia’s small hands. Tightly furrowing his brows, he closely inspected the light magic robe over and over for nonexistent dirt.

After a long time, the boss straightened his back, and impatiently glanced at Suo Jia, rudely saying, “Young boy, this isn’t somewhere you should be. If you want to play around, go play on the streets.”

Seeing the boss’s actions, Suo Jia almost erupted in anger. However, the robe belonged to the boss; if he didn’t want anyone to touch it, then Suo Jia had no choice.

Although Suo Jia didn’t say anything, the eccentric Sixth Sister couldn’t hold back. Knitting her brows, Sixth Sister angrily shouted, “How can you speak in such a tone? How can you possibly run a business like this? We’ve entered as customers; does anyone really treat their customers in this manner?”

As she continued to scold him, Sixth Sister pointed at the magic robe and said, “Isn’t it just some stupid piece of clothing? So what if it got ruined? Do you think we can’t afford it? I tell you, you shouldn’t act so snobbish!”

Since Sixth Sister was used to meeting nobles and other high class individuals, her temperament was usually good, however, she saw that the Suo Jia next to her was thoroughly enjoying his time here. It could be said that with Suo Jia’s current identity and status, he was absolutely

fearless, and there weren't many people who were willing to cause trouble for him. How could she allow Suo Jia to be looked down upon by a simple shop owner?

"Hmph!" Just as the Sixth Sister stopped speaking, the boss replied with a rigid face, "If you want to buy it, then buy it. If you don't want to buy it, then don't touch it so carelessly. I don't know if you can actually afford this magic robe or not, but I will still stick to my words. If you don't want to buy it, don't touch it. If you touch it, then you'd better purchase it!"

Coldly looking at the store's boss, Sixth Sister sharply replied, "You are really amusing. If we didn't want to buy it, then why would we ask you about the price? You not only failed to answer our question, you even randomly started spouting nonsense. Even if you're bored, don't just fool around with us for your own amusement!"

"Fine fine fine..." Unable to nag any further with Sixth Sister, the store boss helplessly said, "Is it ok if I say I'm scared of you then? If you want to buy it, then I'll just tell you. The price for this magic robe is 280,000 gold!"

"What!" Hearing the store boss's words, Suo Jia cried out in shock. In disbelief, he said, "What kind of materials is this made of? How could it be so expensive? Even if it was made of pure gold, its value wouldn't be so high!"

"Chi..." With a sneer, the store boss curled his lip and replied, "Just by hearing your words, I can tell that you are a village bumpkin. Did you think that mage robes were made of cloth? I'll have you know that the materials for this mage robe, although they aren't gold, have values that are many times higher than that of gold. Otherwise, how would it have magic effects?"

Hearing the boss's words, Suo Jia could not help but break out into sweat. Originally, he had thought that he had quite a bit of money. However, he hadn't imagined that casually entering a shop and asking about the price of a mage robe would end up being worth far more than all his assets.

Seeing Suo Jia blush with shame, the store boss smugly replied, "Now do you understand why I didn't allow you to touch it? If you soiled such an expensive thing, then who would be willing to buy it? Let me tell you that the fact that I haven't punished you for doing this is already quite merciful of me."

As the store boss loudly replied, although Suo Jia felt extremely stuffy from his words, he still didn't interrupt him. If he currently pulled out that much money for the sake of changing his tone, then he would definitely buy it. However, he currently was only carrying 200,000 gold; it was nowhere near enough!

Seeing Suo Jia's miserable expression, Sixth Sister panicked. This was the first time she had gone out with the young master, and yet she had somehow managed to force him to endure this anger. She had been way too incompetent in her job. No matter what, she had to find face for him.

While thinking this, Sixth Sister indignantly replied, "This is definitely extortion. How could there possibly be something so expensive? In my opinion...this mage robe is very normal, and at most could only be worth 10,000 to 20,000 gold. There's no way the price can be as shocking as you claim it to be.

Extortion? Hearing Sixth Sister's words, the boss also became angry. Trembling, he pointed at that sapphire blue mage robe and said, "To think you would accuse me of extortion! Go out and inquire if this magic robe made from mermaids is really worth 280,0000. If anyone dares to say it isn't, then I will give my whole store to you!"

"Inquire? Who would we go ask? It seems obvious to me that you know there is nobody knowledgeable around to ask, so you spout a random excuse. You must be purposely trying to anger us!" Sixth Sister smiled fakely at the boss. Seeing this scene, Suo Jia was almost laughing out loud from the atmosphere. He knew that Sixth Sister was purposely baiting the boss into giving him some face.

However, he hadn't imagined that the boss would bring up the day he first opened the business, and what types of people he had never met.

Soon, he had seen through Sixth Sister's intentions, disdainfully curling his lips, the boss replied, "Stop saying such useless words. If you have the money to buy it, then I will naturally welcome you. But if you don't have enough money, then don't laze around here. I don't have the time to pointlessly blather with you."

Hearing the boss' words, Sixth Sister grew angry beyond words. Having reached his limit, seeing that Sixth Sister was completely riled up and yet could not retort, the boss was prepared to strike a deadly blow, hoping for an ultimate victory. The boss shook his head, "However, I still look down on you guys. This was originally not someplace that poor people could just wantonly enter. Not mentioning 280,000, how about this....as long as you take out even 180,000, then I will sell this mage robe to you. If you can't bring the money out, then I want you to immediately leave my store, and save me from wasting any more breath with you annoying guys."

Hearing the boss's words, Suo Jia slowly lifted his head, and with a sweet smile, he grabbed the sapphire blue mage robe, and opened his mouth to say indifferently, "You've been had." After finishing his words, Suo Jia turned to leave.

"Hey!" Seeing Suo Jia actually leave while holding the robe, the boss began to worry, thinking that Suo Jia had stolen it. In a panicked tone, the boss shouted, "Don't be reckless, theft in Holy Light is a crime that you can be hanged for!"

Seeing the young master's actions, Sixth Sister immediately realized his intention. Stretching out her arm, Sixth Sister blocked the boss from advancing, "Boss, my young master has bought this robe. You were the one who said that you would sell it for 180,000, so we won't bother thanking you." While saying this, Sixth Sister pulled out two crystal cards that were each worth 100,000 gold, and handed them to the boss.

"What! This..." In confusion, the boss took the two crystal cards, and was at a loss on what he should do. He had purchased that mage robe for 250,000 gold. Based on the selling price of 180,000, he not only didn't earn money, he even had incurred a loss of 70,000!

Outside the door, Suo Jia stopped walking, and smiled back, "Sixth Sister, don't bother waiting for him to find change. Such a small amount can be given away as lunch money." After saying these words that were enough to make the boss blow up from anger, Suo Jia skipped out of the store.

After looking back and forth between the two crystal cards in his hands, and the retreating figures of Suo Jia and Sixth Sister for a while, the boss suddenly tilted his head and angrily slapped his own mouth. "I let them trick me! I let them trick me...."

Humanity is not actually a race that is agreeable with nature. Take fire for example, a person cannot resist fire as well as a lizard can. In terms of water, humans aren't as compatible and intimate with water as fish are. As for earth, humans aren't as comfortable with it as anteaters are....

As for that mage robe, it was made from a material that accumulated various elements and condensed them together within a certain type of magical beast leather. This type of leather could attract elements far more powerfully than a human would be able to. The higher level the mage robe, the more elements it could draw in and gather them. This also made it more expensive.

Wearing this mage robe made from mermaid's skin, Suo Jia immediately felt the difference. The magical elements strived to be the first to gather around his body. With the magical elements densely surrounding him, Suo Jia's magic power recovery and growth rates increased exponentially. This was only a single mage robe; if he managed to wear a complete set of magic equipment, what would the results be?

Chapter 64: The Auction

TL note: The term 平 [ping] is a common measure word for land throughout this series. It was previously assumed as a short form of square meter, but now that the series has progressed, we have decided to leave it as “ping” (ie. 30 pings of land)

*

Under the help of the magic robe, Suo Jia discovered that although not much had changed in terms of his spirit power, he discovered that he could clearly feel that his magic power had increased by 10% even though in reality it wasn't that big of a difference.

The problem now is that although the elemental density around Suo Jia was definitely no longer a problem, his power to absorb these elements was too lacking. If he had a magical necklace to help adjust his magical power as well as a magical helmet to improve the effects of meditation, then his improvement would be even clearer.

Currently, Suo Jia did not need magical items like rings or bracelets. Within this short period of time, he did not need to fight. What he needed most were the items that could improve his training speed, since this was the foundation to everything.

The night passed without any incidents, and Suo Jia left the next morning to attend school. Due to having excellent results while cultivating, Suo Jia left a bit late. Only when class was about to start did he leave the White Villa.

While walking towards school, Suo Jia could not help but jump with joy. With the help of the robe, his training speed could finally be considered to have made a breakthrough. Only... he didn't know how long it would take before he could collect the other pieces.

While contemplating, a group of youths wearing embroidered garments passed by. At the same time, what they said next stood out to Suo Jia, “Hey! I heard that the Holy Light Auction House will auction off a few legendary-class magical items. Is that true or false?”

“Xi!” Hearing this, Suo Jia could not help but stop walking. Legendary-ranked items! This was way too extraordinary; it should be pointed out that the robe that Suo Jia currently could afford was only a High-ranked robe. Compared to Legendary-ranked items, there were still four or five grades in between.

Magical items were split into grades too. From low to high, the ranks were Low-ranked magical items, Middle-ranked magical items, High-ranked magical items, Practical-ranked magical items, Power-ranked magical items, Precious-ranked magical items, Excellent-ranked magical items, Ideal-ranked magical items, Legendary-ranked magical items, and Epic-ranked magical items; a total of ten grades.

The only rank surpassing the Legendary-ranked magical items were Epic-ranked magical items. Anything above these were divine artifacts titled the Laws of God. These things only existed in legends, as they did not actually exist. In other words, a complete Epic-ranked magical equipment set was precisely a divine artifact. Although this knowledge existed, there weren't many supporters of this.

While pondering this, Suo Jia blended in with the group of youths. Last night, Suo Jia had already reaped the benefits of the High-ranked magical equipment's effects. As for legendary-ranked magical items, between that and High-ranked magical items, there were still the Practical-rank, Power-rank, Precious-rank, Excellent-rank, and Ideal-rank. He could only begin to imagine this five rank difference; how much better would the effects be if he wore one of those?

Nodding his head in praise, Suo Jia knew that the Legendary-ranked mage robe increased his limits by a certain amount. These effects far surpassed his previous robe, which had increased his limits by 10%. Unfortunately, the Legendary-ranked magical items had values that were beyond imaginable!

Suo Jia helplessly shook his head. Although he knew that he couldn't afford them, he still wanted to glance through them. Even if he couldn't actually use them, being able to personally witness a Legendary magical item was still good.

While thinking this, Suo Jia's movements stopped. After some hesitation, he turned around to walk back home. He first asked Eldest Sister to help excuse him from a day of school, and then he sat on a carriage to rush towards Duke Wen Sha's mansion. Currently...the only person who could help him enter the auction venue was Wen Ya.

An hour later, as Suo Jia's carriage entered Duke Wen Sha's mansion, the youth in magnificent clothes that Suo Jia had met this morning coincidentally just entered Emma's room. Having closely inspected all of Suo Jia's actions, he reported them back to Emma. It was obvious that this fellow had been dispatched by Emma.

"Hehe...." Laughing in glee, Emma knew that Suo Jia had already taken the bait. After so many years, Emma had learned quite a few skills from her father. If one wants to gift someone with something, then the receiver must know the gift's high value. Otherwise, how would the receiver be touched?

Hearing of Suo Jia's intentions, Wen Ya happily agreed. Such a minor thing was actually something that Suo Jia himself could do; his eighth ranked lord status was enough to carry out many tasks. However, Suo Jia attached too much importance to depending on his own heart.

Skiping over the minor details, that evening at 8pm, Suo Jia held the entry notice and directly entered the auction VIP room. The so-called VIP room was really just a box that anyone with distinguished enough status could enter. As for other people, no matter how much money they had, they had to stand in the large hall underneath.

Suo Jia's box was Box #1 together with Wen Ya. Aside from Wen Ya and Duke Wen Sha, the average person had no rights to enter Box #1. Even Emma and her father couldn't do so.

Although Emma's father held a position of great power and wealth, in reality, his power within Holy Light City's hierarchy was not high at all. Emma's box number wasn't even within the first 10 boxes: Box #18.

Sitting within her box, Emma was stuffing herself with large, red grapes. While she was enjoying her food, a low sound came from outside

her door, “Miss Emma, Lord Suo Jia has already arrived. He’s currently in Box #1 with Miss Wen Ya.”

“Oh!” Hearing the news, Emma’s eyes lit up, and she began to shovel down the grapes at a faster speed.

In terms of power, titles, and status, perhaps Emma’s family was not within the top 10. However in terms of money, if her family said they were second; even Duke Wen Sha could not dare be called first!

Although the amount of money Duke Wen Sha had could not be considered little, it really couldn’t be compared to Emma’s household. 80% of Duke Wen Sha’s property belonged to the Holy Light City, so the amount of money actually in Duke Wen Sha’s hands was not much. While Emma’s household did not own as much property as the Duke, she had mountains of gold within her warehouse!

Strictly speaking in terms of money, Emma’s household has never lost in any comparison. Even though they were extremely rich, it’s not a good idea to play tricks on them, as they generally only bought items at good prices. If someone randomly raised the price beyond the normal price of that item, then Emma’s household would not pay attention to that idiot.

After time flowed for some time, the auction finally began to start. Initially the auction revealed some other treasures, such as real estate and other goods, and there was not much that aroused Suo Jia’s interest. However, although those items did not arouse Suo Jia’s interest, he was still greatly shocked at the prices of those items!

Generally speaking, for a piece of Holy Light real estate, as long as the location was good, a single ping of land could sell for 10,000 gold! Suo Jia was convinced that the amount of gold the land was worth could completely cover the surface area of the land.

In a daze, Suo Jia watched as each of the auction goods were sold one by one. With difficulty, he turned around and looked at Wen Ya. Before, he knew that the White Villa was worth a high value, however, only now could he clearly determine its exact price.

The White Villa’s location was Holy Light’s most flourishing area.

Compared to the properties sold today, its location was far better. Not mentioning the real estate and the gardens included with the White Villa, simply selling the White Villa alone would already be worth an astronomical price.

The White Villa's area of land was ten thousand pings. If one ping was worth 10,000 gold, then according to the most basic calculations, 10,000 ping was worth a hundred million gold. All of Holy Light City counted as Duke Wen Sha's property, and thus represented Wen Ya, so she hadn't spent any money on this property. However, despite this, this area of land's value was only so high; its value would never change for any reason.

Suo Jia knew that if he demolished the White Villa and re-constructed a supermarket there, the profits he'd gain would be immeasurable. Having such a good location and such a large area of land, was something most people couldn't gain even if they begged their families. However, Suo Jia could use it as his residence; it was really too extravagant. Aside from Suo Jia, the only person who could afford to be as luxurious would only be Holy Light City's Lord, Duke Wen Sha.

While thinking this, the auction gradually reached its climax. Goods like property had already finished being dealt out; next was the auction of various battle equipment and magical items. This was this auction event's greatest selling point. Seeing the maids carry over all different types of battle equipment and magical items over, Suo Jia excitedly straightened his back, and concentrated all his attention on the stage.

Chapter 65: Faerie's Soul

The first items put up for auction were weapons and other equipment designed for warriors. There were multiple warrior armors with strange designs, and each were sold at jaw-dropping prices due to the fierce competition of the auction house. Suo Jia knew that these were not even the most precious items the auction had; generally speaking, the more precious the item, the later it would be put up for auction. The last item auctioned was usually the main attraction of the auction.

“To our distinguished guests, we are about to auction off the last two items of this auction. The first of the two is an Ideal-ranked fire elemental staff, Vulcan's Roar. It can raise the power of fire magic by 100%. The starting bid is 60,000,000 gold; honored guests, please begin your bids now!” The auctioneer's voice rang out from above the platform.

Seeing the flame red staff on display next to the auctioneer, Suo Jia had found it difficult to breath. There were many strange patterns engraved upon the staff, and it was about two meters long. It had a crude grip, and on the tip there was a fist-sized red crystal. The crystal shone with a fiery red radiance, and it gave off the feeling as if it would suddenly ignite and combust.

60,000,000... 70,000,000... 75,000,000...

Together with the shouts within the auction, the staff's price continued to soar until it reached a staggering 120,000,000 gold before the final hammer sounded. Although he could not use this staff, when they removed the fiery staff from the display, Suo Jia could not help but want to run down and snatch it away.

Seeing the staff finally being removed from the display, Suo Jia finally realized that he was still very far from being considered “wealthy”. How could anyone possibly say he was rich, when he couldn't even gather the money required to afford an admired staff's original price? It was still very early before he would reach the point of being truly wealthy.

Although Suo Jia could be called rich when compared to the average

citizen, he was still at the level of being in poverty when compared to the truly wealthy, and he was part of the group of people that still required the material assistance of others.

In his disappointment, the auctioneer's voice suddenly rose from the auction platform, "To our distinguished guests, the next item being auctioned is the final auction good!"

While speaking, the auctioneer picked up a small embroidered case, and gently opened it. The next moment....a bright glow shone out from within the case, which illuminated the entire auction platform.

Sighing in admiration at the good within the case, the auctioneer shook his head, "The distinguished guests who have attended today's auction are really quite lucky. Our humble auction has managed to collect a Legendary-ranked magical item, and it is exactly this item that is stored within this case."

As he spoke, the auctioneer turned the case towards the audience. At the same time, he continued, "This is a magic necklace; it's name is Faerie's Soul. I believe that everyone sitting in the audience has heard of this name before. Although.....it is not an Epic-ranked magical item, it still has certain abilities that can be considered better than those of an Epic-ranked item's!"

"Huh?" Hearing the auctioneer's words, Suo Jia wrinkled his brows in doubt. In confusion, he asked Wen Ya, "His words are so strange. Could it be....that a Legendary-ranked magical item could actually be stronger than an Epic-ranked magical item?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, Wen Ya showed an expression of astonishment. In confusion, she looked at Suo Jia and asked in a strange tone, "Your words are the strange ones. Who ever dictated that a Legendary-ranked item had to be weaker than an Epic-ranked item?"

Suo Jia grew even more confused after Wen Ya's words, "If a Legendary-ranked item is even stronger than an Epic-ranked item, then how come Legendary-ranked items are always graded behind Epic-ranked items?"

Hearing Suo Jia's question, Wen Ya finally realized that even though

Suo Jia was a mage, he knew even less than the average person when it came to magical items.

Wen Ya whispered into Suo Jia's ears, "The greatest difference between Legendary-ranked and Epic-ranked magical items are that Legendary-ranked magical items are singular, but Epic-ranked magical items come in sets!"

For example, normally, a Legendary-ranked item's power is higher than an Epic-ranked magical item's, unless the Epic-ranked equipment are combined into a set. Otherwise, its true power cannot be utilized. Moreover.....Epic-level magical items have larger historical value, and are thus ranked above Legendary-ranked magical items.

Legendary-ranked magical items had generally originated from rulers from ancient times. They borrow the power of the item, and run amok with it, thus creating so many legends. That's why these magical items have been deemed as "Legendary".

On the other hand, Epic-ranked magical items are normally created by undefeatable monarchs, whose magical equipment were always combined into sets. In addition....compared to Legendary-ranked items, Epic-level magical items can form a set that addresses all aspects, making its wearer invincible.

In summary, Legendary-ranked items are individual, while Epic-ranked items come in sets. When comparing singular items, Legendary-ranked items are stronger. However, their largest downside is that they cannot be combined as a set. They can only exist alone.

A set of Epic-ranked magical items are all-around: attack, defense, recovery, and improvement aspects are all covered. It doesn't have any particular strengths or weaknesses. However, Legendary-ranked items only boost one aspect. Any other aspect will obviously have holes and defects in them, so those that use Legendary-ranked items have never been unrivaled.

"This...." Hesitantly looking at Wen Ya, Suo Jia asked in confusion, "I don't understand that though. If this was true, then wouldn't a set of

Legendary-ranked equipment make up for their respective defects?”

Helplessly looking at Suo Jia, Wen Ya patiently explained, “I’ll give an example. If the Vulcan’s Roar from before was a Legendary-ranked magical items, it could improve the user by 120%. However, an Epic-ranked magical item could only boost by 100%.”

At this point, Wen Ya ran some mental calculations, then continued, “If we exclude the effects of being in a set, an entire set of Legendary-ranked equipment would be stronger than a set of Epic-ranked equipment by 20 - 50%. However, once the Epic-ranked equipment are combined as a set, its overall effects and power are raised by 100%. This makes it two times more effective than a set of Legendary-ranked equipment.”

Generally, Epic-ranked equipment can interconnect, and make up for their individual weaknesses. It could also boost these defects. This means that one can utilize two times more of each equipment’s power and effects in the set. Thus, when including the factor of a set, Epic-ranked equipment are far stronger than Legendary-ranked sets; they are practically incomparable.

Suo Jia finally understood after hearing Wen Ya’s explanation. This was the exact same as comparing teams at sporting events. The five most powerful individuals was not necessarily the most formidable team. Another group of five that had weaker individuals, if they were experts in teamwork and cooperation, could easily defeat those 5 powerful individuals.

The so-called “five and five being greater than one” was based off of this reasoning. No matter how powerful Legendary-ranked items were, they could not interconnect with each other. Even though they complement each other’s deficiencies, they could not boost each other’s effects. This was why in terms of power, a set of Legendary-ranked items were nowhere close to the formidability of a set of Epic-ranked items.

Thinking up to this point, Suo Jia finally completely understood the situation. He once again glanced back at the platform; after such a long time, the auctioneer was still chattering away about its abilities, “This

Faerie's Soul, besides being able to adjust your inner magic power, it can also help boost your magic recovery rate by 100%, and increase your magic growth rate by 100%!"

"Motherfucker! Are you kidding? There's no way it can be so extreme!" Hearing the auctioneer's words, Suo Jia shouted strangely as he jumped up.

Seeing Suo Jia's frantic appearance, Wen Ya giggled, "Look at yourself, what have you become? Did you think that the people qualified to come here were ordinary people? No matter how daring the auctioneer is, he would not risk tricking people. After all...this Faerie's Soul is also a very famous Legendary-ranked magical item, so everyone knows about its effects. Nobody would be stupid enough to lie in a situation like this."

Speaking up to this point, Wen Ya's eyes reflected a sentimental light as she looked at the magic necklace on the platform. Sorrowfully, she said, "That Faerie's Soul has a very sad and beautiful legend behind it."

While speaking, Wen Ya's eyes looked off into the distance, as she murmured, "Legend says that a prince fell in love with a faerie princess. However, their families were enemies, and their love was not accepted by the faerie king or the human king. Thus, for the sake of thwarting their affair, the two kings simultaneously dispatched assassins to kill the prince and the faerie princess."

At this point, Suo Jia was already completely engrossed in Wen Ya's story. She continued, "After being on the run for a very long time, finally....the prince and the princess were no longer able to escape their fates. At the Faerie's Spring, they simultaneously encountered both of their pursuing assassins, and a major battle eventually began."

Chapter 66: The Miraculous Effects

Both the prince and the princess were very powerful mages. However, their assassins were all elites, and far outnumbered the pair of lovers. The assassins the human king dispatched were determined to kill the faerie princess, while the assassins the faerie king dispatched were determined to kill the prince. The pair of lovers became trapped in an extremely dangerous situation.

In the end, as a mage, the prince was not a match for the faerie assassins. In the blink of an eye, he was caught in a life-threatening attack. However, at the last moment, the faerie princess used her own body to defend the prince, and in place of the prince, was killed by the fatal attack.

The sight of his son's precious lover covered in fresh blood lying in the prince's embrace broke the human king's heart, and he desperately activated a life magic that would kill all the pursuers at once. However... after activating the life magic, the prince's life had also come to an end.

Hearing up to this point, Suo Jia's eyes were already covered in tears, and he brokenly said, "Then in the end, they both died?"

"Yes...." Nodding her head, Wen Ya continued in a melancholic voice, "That's right, they both died. The legends say that the two of them died next to the Faerie's Spring. Right before their deaths, for the sake of preventing his beloved's soul from scattering, the prince exchanged his life for the blessings of multiple gods to protect his lover's soul. This became a glittering gem!"

Hearing Wen Ya's words, Suo Jia quickly turned around and looked at the magic necklace on the platform. Amidst the glow, the magic necklace really did have a sparkling and translucent gem. As Suo Jia gazed at it, the large gem flashed again and again.

Wen Ya continued, "If you look at it more closely, it's said that you can see a dark green colored light ceaselessly flowing within the gem. Everyone says that it is the faerie princess' soul, and the gem itself is said

to have been created by the multiple gods' blessings that the prince had traded his life for."

Suo Jia looked at the necklace within the case with an infatuated look. An uncontrollable feeling flickered within his heart. Suo Jia had never desired for something like this before, but Suo Jia also knew that this item was too precious, and it definitely could not become his. There was absolutely no chance of it happening.

While thinking this, Suo Jia regretfully looked at the glittering necklace. At the same time, Wen Ya continued, "Suo Jia, you may not know this, but there are differences even between Legendary-ranked magical items."

Generally, same ranked magical items have sub-classifications: low grade, middle grade, and upper grade. And this Legendary-ranked Faerie's Soul was also an existence that far surpassed the upper grade. Strictly speaking, this Faerie's Soul should be a legendary magic equipment amongst all grades: a high grade. The special characteristic it has can grant the wearer a faerie's form.

"A faerie's form?" Suo Jia asked in confusion.

"Yes..." Seriously nodding, Wen Ya stressed, "In reality, the effects of this necklace allow a normal human to raise their magic recovery to the exact same level as a faerie's. You should know that a faerie has an elemental body; their magic recovery and growth rates are the first in the world. Once you wear this necklace, in terms of magic, you are at the same level as a faerie!"

"High grade! This is definitely high grade!" Suo Jia was almost drooling at Wen Ya's words. If he obtained this necklace, his magic recovery growth rates would improve to the extreme limits. To be able to be on the same level as a faerie was really too overpowered; training like that for a few years would make him unrivaled.

Each race had its own strengths and weaknesses. Faeries had absolute advantages in gathering elements and recovery. However, a faerie's spirit powers were much lower than a human's. Although they could utilize a vast amount of magic power, their strength was not much different from

humans’.

On the other hand, humans had great spirit powers, however they never had enough magic power. Although they had enough spirit power to activate magic, they did not have enough magic power to complete it. From an overall standpoint, faeries and humans had about the same level of strength.

However, once one was in possession of the Faerie’s Soul, then one could use the human’s great spirit power and simultaneously utilize massive amounts of magic power. To Suo Jia, this was really a Legendary-ranked magical item that far surpassed an Epic-ranked one.

However, wearing this necklace did not mean Suo Jia’s strength would change. However, Suo Jia’s magic recovery and growth rates would increase like crazy by 100%. After a year of training, once he had completed a total of two years’ worth of training, his degree of activation could even be said to be on the level of the Laws of God!

Unfortunately, Suo Jia could only look at it right now with envy. That was because the auctioneer just now, had announced that the Legendary-ranked magical item’s starting price would be 100 million gold!

The auction started after the auctioneer’s announcement. The entire venue immediately grew lively. Although nobody had offered a price, if one closely paid attention, one would discover a strange phenomenon. For a majority of the people, they were simply enjoying the scene. Such a price was not something they could purse. However, some of the people had the qualifications to fight over it with others, and had intriguing expressions on their faces.

Some had ambitious looks, some were gritting their teeth, some were panicking and didn’t know what to do.....overall, there were various types of expressions that could be seen if one was watching. It was clear to see how attractive this Faerie’s Soul was to people.

In this world, the most precious things are not properties, but Legendary or Epic-level items. This included magical items, as well as the weaponry and equipment that warriors and other professions used.

Although a price of 100 million was extreme, to the people who needed it, it was definitely a worthy price. However, the Faerie's Soul's final price would definitely end up being higher than 100 million. However, the exact value was unknown; that would depend on how many wealthy people there were in the audience.

Although the original price and the public advertising of a magical item were important, its final selling price mostly depended on luck. If the ten wealthiest families were attracted, then it would definitely end up being sold for a sky-high price. However, if there were no extremely wealthy people present, then the price would be hard to sell.

After contemplating for a while, finally....someone attempted to offer a price. Starting from 110 million, shouts went up to 140 million. However, after that, no other prices were offered.

Seeing this situation, the auctioneer could not help but furrow his brows. He understood clearly that the auction hadn't had such a precious item appear in a while, so not many wealthy people decided to attend today. If this magical item was only sold for 140 million, it would be too unfortunate. Based on previous estimates, the price of the Faerie's Soul should have been above 200 million; prices of 300 million or 400 million were what would be considered to be normal.

Gritting his teeth, the auctioneer shouted, "Alright, this gentleman has already offered 140 million. Going once? Going twice?" While speaking, the auctioneer slowly lifted his mallet. If after he asked the third time, and still nobody responded, any other price offered after his mallet hit the podium would not count.

Soon, the mallet had been raised high up in the air. At that moment, the auctioneer asked a third time. Seeing that nobody else offered a price, he helplessly gritted his teeth, and the mallet began to whistle through the air as it fell.

"Stop!" Just as the mallet was about to fall, a haughty voice rang out, "Really, how could such an amazing thing be sold for so little money? I'll make it a bit more interesting: I offer 200 million."

Hearing this voice, the auctioneer finally used his practiced skills to stop the mallet at the last second. He lifted his head towards the VIP rooms above. When he saw the source of the voice, the auctioneer's eyes lit up in excitement. Box #18 had an extremely wealthy owner.

Happily looking around, the auctioneer shouted hoarsely, "Right now, Box #18 has already offered 200 million. Going once? Going twice?"

Hearing the auctioneer's words, everybody present could not help but show expressions of disdain. If they could still offer prices, why would they have waited until now? Besides...even if one could afford it, nobody wanted to go against Emma. How could they possibly beat her? Unless they were willing to buy the magical artifact for a price even higher than its maximum value, there was otherwise no way they could defeat Emma. Plus, they would end up committing an offense against Emma's family. Unless they didn't want to live in Holy Light anymore, nobody was that stupid.

"Dong!" Finally, the auctioneer's mallet fell onto the podium. Although the auctioneer regretted that the Legendary-ranked magical item had not been sold for its maximum price of 400 million, he still shouted, "Alright, this Faerie's Soul is now under VIP Box #18's ownership. The auction has now officially drawn to a close."

Chapter 67: The Importance of Friendship

With seemingly endless regret, Suo Jia returned home. Suo Jia could not manage to get any shut-eye that entire night. His mind was completely occupied by the silhouette of that Faerie's Soul, and his mood was so restless that he couldn't even meditate.

The next day, the red-eyed Suo Jia ate an early breakfast. Although his breakfast today was abnormally exquisite, Suo Jia was simply 'eating without tasting'. Deep down, although he knew that it was impossible for him to obtain that Faerie's Soul, he still could not help but feel great regret.

After eating breakfast, Suo Jia left the White Villa like usual, and headed towards his school. After walking a few steps out of his house, a figure that could be considered fat appeared in front of him.

"Xi!" Briefly glancing at the figure in front of him, the next moment Suo Jia's eyes grew wide. He looked at the individual with a look of disbelief, and did not know what to do in this situation.

The person standing in front of Suo Jia was Emma, and she currently had the Faerie's Soul necklace that deprived Suo Jia an entire night of sleep. In one of her hands was the Vulcan's Roar, and she was completely using this Ideal-rank equipment as a crutch to lean on.

Seeing Suo Jia appear, Emma said while grinning, "Oh, if it isn't Lord Suo Jia? Where is the Lord heading to?"

Regretfully looking at the necklace around Emma's neck as well as the staff in her hands, although Suo Jia really wanted those things, he was not willing to toss aside his dignity simply for the sake of obtaining these items. If he were to toss aside his dignity and obtain these items, wouldn't that simply be "putting the cart before the horse"?

While thinking this, Suo Jia coldly looked at Emma and nodded towards her, "I'm going to school. Classes are about to begin, so I won't accompany you. Bye..." Saying this, Suo Jia ignored Emma and turned around to leave. To Suo Jia, the fact that the Faerie's Soul had fallen into

Emma's hands was a great source of grief. Every time he glanced at it, he would feel heartbroken.

In a shocked daze, Emma watched Suo Jia gradually leave. She had thought that once Suo Jia had seen the Faerie's Soul and the Vulcan's Roar, he would immediately switch to a smile and think of all possible ways to gain the two items currently in her possession. Afterwards, by pushing and pulling, she would give the items to him and request Suo Jia to help her lose weight. Until she was left with no other choice, Emma was not willing to give away the Epic-ranked Atlantis' Wisdom as its value was simply so high that it was priceless.

However, she had not imagined that Suo Jia's attitude would be completely different from what she had imagined it to be. As soon as he swept a glance over the Faerie's Soul and Vulcan's Roar, he coldly excused himself, making it impossible for Emma to continue. Could that mean....Suo Jia did not actually desire these items?

"Pata...pata...." Just as water began to fall on Emma's face, a clear sound of a horse's hooves could be heard, as a luxurious carriage slowly stopped at Emma's side.

Hearing the carriage, Emma turned around in confusion. In front of Emma's gaze, Wen Ya's absolutely beautiful face appeared from within the window's curtains. She lightly gestured at Emma to enter the carriage.

Faced with Wen Ya's invitation, Emma obviously could not refuse. She immediately got into the luxurious carriage, and it gradually began to move again, heading towards the outside.

Within the carriage, Wen Ya smiled at Emma, "Sister Emma, although you have learned how to observe and be considerate of others, your methods were still wrong. If you have an overbearing and arrogant attitude, you will not be accepted by others. I don't understand, why do you need someone to beg you? Why do you have to begin by putting yourself at a higher position than the receiver? You'll never make real friendships that way."

"I...." Emma couldn't help but blush in shame at Wen Ya's words. She

also understood that although she had successfully hid her little scheme from Suo Jia, she was unable to hide it from Wen Ya.

Seeing Emma's embarrassment, Wen Ya shook her head, "You...you should really learn how to treat people with sincerity. The relationships between friends cannot be played around with. Otherwise, once the opposing side finds out, the friendship between you two will immediately pull to a stop. Do you want to watch that happen?"

"This..." Emma's expression suddenly changed after hearing Wen Ya's words. That's right....just as Wen Ya had said, Emma had personally gone through similar scenarios already. Before, she could never understand why her everyday friends would gradually leave her. She had thought that it was because of her appearance. However now, with Wen Ya's hint, Emma finally realized where she had gone wrong.

Seeing that Emma seemed to have come to a realization, Wen Ya continued, "I believe that if you discovered that your friend had secretly been scheming against you behind your back, you would also leave him/her right?"

Emma nodded in response to Wen Ya's words, and said with longing, "Yes, yes, yes, it was all my fault. But...if that was wrong, then exactly how am I supposed to go about it?"

Wen Ya smiled at Emma's modest expression. "It's very simple, just sincerely face everything. Making friends is a natural process. Believe me, as long as you show your true self in front of Suo Jia, he will definitely accept you as his friend. After all...you're not truly a bad person. Otherwise, I wouldn't have bothered helping you."

At this point, Wen Ya paused for a bit, then leaned into Emma's ear, "Sister Emma, there are some things that I must remind you of. Other people may be fine, but in regards with Suo Jia, you must become his eternal friend. Otherwise, even if Suo Jia successfully helps you lose weight this time, does that mean you won't get fat again? Does that mean you won't age?"

"Xi!" Emma could not help but suck in a cold breath at Wen Ya's words.

She had never considered this question before. Previously, her mind was occupied by thoughts of how to get Suo Jia to help her lose weight; she had never imagined that even if she managed to successfully lose her weight this time, she would still need Suo Jia's continuous help to maintain her beauty.

Seeing Emma finally understanding, Wen Ya smiled. "Currently, Suo Jia regards me as his blood-related sister. Every week, he helps refresh my appearance, which allowed me to maintain my beauty from start to finish. If it was any other person, not mentioning how much Suo Jia would request as fees, but if he refuses to waste the effort on helping you achieve what you want, that becomes a problem."

Speaking up to here, Wen Ya looked at Emma, "If you use the Faerie's Soul and the Vulcan's Roar, then if you can find an appropriate method to use them, you'll have enough to get Suo Jia to help you. However, you have to be careful; that will only be for one time. Unless you can constantly use Faerie's Soul and Vulcan's Roar to bribe him, it's otherwise useless. Based on the previous events, Suo Jia was only willing to help you once. There's no way he would help you again, no matter if you have a golden card or a silver card, it's not worth Suo Jia's friendship card."

Hearing Wen Ya's words, Emma was already drenched in sweat. Only now did she finally realize how excessively wrong her thoughts had been. Even if she managed to successfully lose weight this time and was restored to her former beauty, how long would she be able to maintain it? A month? Or maybe a year? Once a period of time passed, she would return to her current form again.

Emma rubbed her own face with her hands. These last few days, her face had gotten fatter by quite a lot, and was showing hints of creases again. In at most a month, the Shar Pei-like layers of skin on her face would definitely re-appear. If she wanted to maintain her beauty for a long term, she would not be able to buy it with money and gifts. According to Wen Ya, the only way to maintain her beauty was to become friends with Suo Jia.

While Emma was considering this, Wen Ya lightly rubbed her own face,

and dreamily said, “Suo Jia has already agreed to renew my appearance at least once a year for the rest of our lives. I can look for him whenever, as long as the time permits. In other words, even when I turn 70-80 years old, I can still maintain my current beauty. Don’t you want the same?”

“Gulp...” Emma swallowed with difficulty. Right now, she felt like she was practically in a life or death situation. When she thought about it, a woman’s beauty really only lasted for a few dozen years; being able to keep her beauty for the rest of her life is the most perfect scenario for a woman. If Emma’s objective was to make this a reality, then she had to become friends with Suo Jia. There were no other alternatives.

Chapter 68: Gifting in Such a Way

Suo Jia's emotions finally calmed down later that evening. Although he still felt regret, he didn't bother dwelling on it any longer. In this world, many beautiful things existed, and it wasn't like he could obtain all of them. Treasuring what he currently had was what was most important.

Just as he was preparing to head over to the underground training room, a maid came with a message, saying that Wen Ya had brought Emma with her, and was requesting to meet with him. Hearing this news, Suo Jia had no choice but to go to them; it was possible for him to refuse meeting with Emma, but there was no way he could refuse meeting with Wen Ya.

Soon after, Wen Ya and Emma entered Suo Jia's office one by one. Calmly looking at both of them, Suo Jia asked, "Sister Wen Ya, it's so late already. Do you have something urgent to tell me?"

"Haha...." Laughing, Wen Ya shook her head and said, "Of course I have something to tell you. Otherwise, who would run over here in the dead of the night?"

While speaking, Wen Ya stretched her hand back and pulled Emma forwards. Smiling, Wen Ya said, "The reason I'm looking for you today is because on behalf of your sister, you will have a good talk with Emma. Emma and I are close sisters, and since you and Emma don't share any type of deep hatred for each other, then the two of you should properly discuss things. Alright?"

Suo Jia looked back and forth between Wen Ya and Emma, then helplessly nodded, "Ok, if Sister Wen Ya says so, then how can I refuse? If it's just discussing, we'll discuss. It's not like I'll lose anything from it."

Hearing Suo Jia's reply, Wen Ya patted Emma's shoulders, and then said to Suo Jia, "Ok, the Fourth Prince is still waiting for me outside, so I won't stick around. However, Suo Jia, I'll warn you to be careful not to throw a childish tantrum; Emma is the friend that your sister introduced."

Bitterly laughing as he shook his head, Suo Jia helplessly raised his hand to promise, "Ok, ok, ok....I promise that I won't throw a tantrum

tonight. That should be enough, right?"

Sweetly smiling, Wen Ya pinched Suo Jia's cheeks and said in a doting voice, "You little fellow.....alright. I'm not going to stick around any longer; I'm leaving now."

After Wen Ya left, the entire office became quiet for a long time. It was a peculiar silence that made both Suo Jia and Emma feel extremely awkward. Helplessly, Suo Jia personally prepared two cups of tea, and placed one in front of Emma, and one in front of himself. He lightly sipped a mouthful of tea, and calmly said, "Alright. Since you've come to look for me, you must have something to say. You can say it now."

"This...." Emma had not imagined that Suo Jia would be so straightforward, and paused for a while. After carefully thinking it through, Emma finally ground her teeth, and pulled out the embroidered case containing the Faerie's Soul. Then, she pulled out Vulcan's Roar, and piled both of them on the table.

Seeing Emma's actions, Suo Jia was first shocked, but then he broke out in laughter. Emma gathered the courage to speak after he laughed, and trembling, she said, "These are the gifts I bought for you. I hope....I hope that you...." The normally audacious Emma was currently so nervous that she her tongue was locked, and she was unable to finish her sentence.

Seeing Emma's nervous appearance, Suo Jia could not help but chuckle. He casually opened the case to look at the Faerie's Soul lying within, and then indifferently said, "I've pretty much understood your intentions. Are you bribing me?"

Faced with Suo Jia's question, Emma began to panic. The Emma that had always been unafraid of both the heavens and the earth since she was young, had never imagined that there would one day be a time where she would be so nervous. Moreover, the one that would make her so anxious was a mere 8 year old child. This was too ridiculous!

Seeing Emma trembling, Suo Jia helplessly shook his head. Emma shaking in fear successfully gave Suo Jia a better opinion of her. Lightly closing the case, Suo Jia sighed, "Alright, I must admit, I have no way of

turning away from this bribe. I cannot make myself push these two things away.”

“No!” Emma recalled Wen Ya’s words, and fiercely shook her head, “These are only presents. I don’t want to use them as an exchange for anything. I just want to become friends with you, best of friends!”

Hearing Emma’s words, Suo Jia’s hand could not help but shake. His face also grew serious, and he slowly retracted his hand. Shaking his head, Suo Jia said, “Miss Emma, there are some things that I don’t think you’ve understood. Friendship is not something that can be bought with gifts. If you wanted to use these two items to bribe me to help you lose weight, then I can agree. However, if you want to use these things to exchange for my friendship, then I apologize; I refuse to exchange it, and I have no way of doing so either.”

Speaking up to here, Suo Jia looked at the Faerie’s Soul in regret, then bitterly laughed, “Friendship is not an item. It’s something that cannot be seen or touched. It cannot be exchanged for anything. It is precisely because of these reasons that friendship is such a precious thing; friendship is priceless!”

Faced with Suo Jia’s rejection, Emma panicked. Urgently looking at Suo Jia, Emma questioned, “Then how do I make friends? What do I have to do to gain friendship?”

“Friendship?” Suo Jia was bewildered by the question for a bit, and then he murmured, “I also cannot clearly say what friendship is. Based on my understanding, the so-called friend is willing to selflessly sacrifice themselves for the other, will worry when their friend worries, will consider their friend’s problems as their own, and will not ask for fame nor privileges; it is because of their friendship that a friend is willing to make any sort of sacrifice for it. This is what friendship is!”

Speaking up here, Suo Jia smiled, “It’s like me and Sister Wen Ya. Knowing that my mother needed to live in a better environment, Wen Ya gave a house to me. Knowing that I needed a noble status, she gave the eighth lord rank to me, all without requesting any reciprocations. Real

friendship does not have a material form, but it can be clearly felt.”

“But....” Doubtfully looking at Suo Jia, Emma asked in confusion, “But, I’m also doing the same. Because you needed these magical equipments, I gave them away to you. Isn’t this the same as Wen Ya?”

Smiling, Suo Jia shook his head, and plainly said, “No, of course it’s not the same. When Wen Ya was doing this, she did not at all consider what she would gain from it. She was only giving me these gifts out of concern; she never expected any repayments. When she saved me that time, she wouldn’t even leave behind her name.”

At this point, Suo Jia looked at Emma profoundly, “However, you’re different. The reason you have these gifts for me was because you wanted me to help you. Strictly speaking, your actions are bribing me, and are not presents for the same of friendship!”

“Fine!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Emma ground her teeth, and suddenly pulled out a glorious box covered in gold and jade. With a serious expression, she looked at Suo Jia, “If that is so, then I will give this item to you out of gratitude only. I only wish for you to try becoming friends with me. Do you think that’s good enough?”

Seeing Emma pull the item out, Suo Jia’s eyes widened in curiosity. Putting aside the object within the box, the box alone could qualify as a treasure itself. Could the item inside be any less precious?

While pondering, Suo Jia lightly opened the precious box. Suddenly...a crown giving off a blue light shone from within. It was both simple and dignified, and the entire crown gave off a mysterious air.

“This is!” In shock, he stared at the crown’s elegant pose. Although he didn’t know exactly what it was, Suo Jia could feel that it was extraordinary. It was definitely an amazing magical item. But...exactly what was it?

Seeing Suo Jia’s concentration on it, Emma heavily replied, “This is an Epic-ranked magical item that can shake the entire world. I’m sure you’ve heard of its name before—it’s name is Atlantis’ Wisdom!”

“What!” Hearing Emma’s words, Suo Jia shouted as he jumped up in shock. In disbelief, he stared at the crown in front of him. He couldn’t believe what he had just heard. This....this was actually part of the Atlantis set: Atlantis’ Wisdom! Everyone knew that the Atlantis equipment set was a high grade Epic-ranked set!

Trembling, Suo Jia touched the mysterious crown, and closed his eyes in excitement. As a water mage, putting aside using this item, even personally seeing it and being able to touch it was an honor. To a water mage, the Atlantis equipment set was definitely an existence superior to even a Divine artifact!

Chapter 69: Faerie's Form

Atlantis was a person's name, as well as a city's name. The Atlantis Emperor's water magic summons were at the god level; they were so powerful that he could create an entire city underwater!

The Atlantis equipment set was the Atlantis Emperor's equipment. It was at the top of all Epic-ranked equipment sets, although its exact formidability remained unknown, since nobody had ever completely gathered all the parts of an Epic-ranked set before. According to the epic records, as long as one gathered all of the Atlantis set, one could utilize Atlantis Emperor's power; the power that was able to create the mysterious underwater world!

However, the Atlantis set only appeared in parts. This crown was only one of them; the other parts had yet to appear. Naturally, there was nobody that could gather them all.

The crown in front of him seemed to be made of indigo sapphires. According to the legends, once one wore the crown, then he/she could use Atlantis' Wisdom, although without a complete set, its effects were halved. However even so, it was already plenty strong. It definitely was on par with a Legendary-ranked magical item; its powerful effects definitely weren't lower than the Faerie's Soul's.

Although the Faerie's Soul was already a high grade Legendary-ranked magical item, Atlantis' fame was much higher. The Atlantis Emperor's achievements were too miraculous, and even amongst other Epic-ranked sets, the Atlantis set still qualified as a high grade equipment set. Thus, any one of its pieces were no less formidable than a Legendary-ranked equipment.

Suo Jia weakly fell back into his chair. With an agonized expression, he said to Emma, "Alright, you win. I'll try to become friends with you. In addition...I'll work hard to help you lose weight, and even be willing to maintain your beautiful appearance at any time."

"Ya!" Emma exclaimed at Suo Jia's words, and she shook as she replied,

“What did you say? Do you mean.....”

Looking at the excited Emma, Suo Jia helplessly replied, “Don’t worry. Since you’ve already taken out Atlantis’ Wisdom, then I will definitely try my best to provide service for you. I will not only help you lose weight, but I will also help maintain your beauty, until you tell me to stop.”

“However, didn’t you say you’d only do it if we became friends?” Emma doubtfully asked.

Hearing Emma’s words, Suo Jia paused, then shook his head, “No, even if we weren’t friends, I would still do this. After all....there’s no way I can refuse the item you just took out. Since I accept your gift, I need to pay you back with service. Thus, even if you aren’t my friend, on behalf of the crown, I will try my best to help you. This is part of business ethics!”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Emma finally sighed in relief. However, what was strange was that although she didn’t gain his friendship, she had still reached her objective. Yet, for some unknown reason, she couldn’t help but feel disappointed.

Emma sighed as she looked at Suo Jia. She knew that Suo Jia was completely able to nonchalantly accept the crown and agree to try to become friends with her. After all, that was what Emma had requested.

However, Suo Jia had not done so. He plainly admitted that even if they weren’t friends, for the sake of this crown, he would be willing to do one’s utmost to provide service for her. The fact that he was so frank about it confused Emma. It was obvious that saying it in such a way was disadvantageous to Suo Jia, and yet, why did he still choose to do so without any hesitation? Could it be.....that Suo Jia was an idiot?

After profoundly looking at Suo Jia for a while, Emma finally recalled Wen Ya’s words. If she wanted to earn Suo Jia’s friendship, then she had to be her truest self in front of Suo Jia. And right now, Suo Jia was doing so to her; in other words, Suo Jia was willing to try to become friends with her. Without hiding anything, he had plainly admitted his thoughts to Emma.

Seeing an unlimited happiness shine from his eyes, Emma suddenly

discovered that seeing him so happy and excited also made her feel delight and satisfaction. Why was this? She wasn't the one that had gained the item, so why was she feeling so ecstatic and content about it?

After fiddling with the crown for a while, Suo Jia finally returned to his senses. He smiled at Emma, "Alright, I can help you lose weight at any time. You can choose the location and time!"

"Ok..." Emma muttered to herself for a bit, then excitedly said, "Then how about tomorrow, tomorrow night. I'll wait for you at my home. It's best if my mother and father watch from the sides. Otherwise, if the change is too great, I'm afraid my mother and father won't recognize me."

Smiling. Suo Jia nodded, "No problem, it's decided then. Tomorrow evening at 8, I will punctually arrive at your house and help you lose weight. However...although your parents can watch from the sidelines, it's best if you warn them that no matter what, they cannot make any sounds. Otherwise, if anything goes wrong, then it could lead to an irreparable damage, and you may lose all hopes of ever becoming beautiful again."

After planning everything out, Suo Jia escorted Emma out. Afterwards....Suo Jia brought the three treasures to the underwater training area, impatient to try them. Putting aside the Faerie's Soul, the Atlantis' Wisdom alone was too tempting for Suo Jia to resist. After all, it was an Epic-ranked magical equipment.

Sitting cross-legged in the largest room, Suo Jia first inspected the Vulcan's Roar. It was always best to look at things from the worst to the best. That way, the more one progressed, the happier one would become. If one started from the greatest object, then the excitement would gradually become disappointment.

Flipping the Vulcan's Roar over and over, Suo Jia couldn't help but feel regret. Even though it was an Ideal-ranked magic weapon, Suo Jia had absolutely no use for it. The reason he felt such great regret over the magic weapon in his hands was because among the 3 magical items, this was the only one that could boost a magic's strength. Even if Suo Jia wore

both the other two at the same time, it would not increase his magic's strength at all. And the one object that could was one that Suo Jia couldn't use, since he had an affinity for the water element, while the staff was for the fire element.

Regretfully setting the Vulcan's Roar next to him, Suo Jia picked up the case with the Faerie's Soul inside. He gently opened the case, and at that moment....the sparkling and translucent Faerie's Soul appeared before his eyes.

The so-called Faerie's Soul was really just a necklace with a chain of a secret type of silver, and attached to the chain was the legendary Faerie's Soul, which was the real treasure of the necklace.

The Faerie's Soul was a peanut-sized hexagonal gem that was entirely transparent. Within the crystal-like gem was a green light that constantly flashed from within the gem. Was that the faerie princess's soul?

Taking a deep breath, Suo Jia excitedly put the necklace on his neck. He loosened his collar so that the necklace rested against his bare skin. At that moment....a refreshing feeling entered from the skin on his neck. In the blink of an eye, it rushed through Suo Jia's entire body, and Suo Jia could clearly sense all the magical elements surrounding him begin to move towards him. In that instant, Suo Jia felt that....he and the magical elements within him had already become friends.

Closing his eyes, Suo Jia closely reached out at the magical elements moving in and out of his body. This Faerie's Soul really lived up to its reputation of a Legendary-ranked magical item. Before, although Suo Jia's body didn't reject magical elements from entering his body, the magic power that entered was at an extremely slow pace, and his recovery rate was also not high.

However now that Suo Jia had a body that didn't reject the magical elements as a base, his body had a strong, attractive force that drew the surrounding magical elements towards him. The magical elements continued to constantly flow through his body, sometimes flowing in, and sometimes flowing out. This definitely increased the effects of the magic

power's growth and recovery.

It could be said that after wearing the Faerie's Soul, no matter whether he was in his normal state or meditative state, his magic power recovery and growth were both boosted by 100%. This was the reason behind the Faerie's Soul's high value.

After quietly relishing in the Faerie's Soul's benefits, Suo jia slowly opened his eyes, and looked over at the case holding the Atlantis crown. As a top Epic-ranked magical equipment, what would the effects of the crown be like?

Chapter 70: Perpetual State

Gently lifting up the Atlantis' Wisdom, Suo Jia felt a surge of excitement from within his heart. Traditionally, magical helms were known to improve the effects of meditation. In addition... when a mage casted a spell, it could help him/her concentrate and reduce the chances of failure.

Taking a deep breath, Suo Jia carefully lifted up the Atlantis' Wisdom and placed it upon his head. Immediately... a feeling that was as refreshing as a clear stream flowed from the crown into Suo Jia's head.

For a brief period of time, Suo Jia felt a flash before his eyes, and he felt that not only did his brain contain an astonishing amount of clarity, his spirit was also unprecedentedly concentrated. Looking around at his surroundings, the plants and trees around him all seemed to come to life. What surprised Suo Jia the most was that although he was delightfully admiring this treasure, his mind had already entered a meditative state.

Curiously observing it for an entire night, Suo Jia finally understood a bit about the frightening mysteries of this Atlantis' Wisdom. Simply by wearing this Atlantis' Wisdom, one would immediately enter the meditative state! This effect was simply too extraordinary!

As everyone knew, in order to enter the state of meditation, one had to enter a state of nothingness. However, even if one entered the state where one had forgotten one's self, it's not like one's self would just magically disappear. It was merely forgotten by the person for the time being.

The miraculous aspect of the Atlantis' Wisdom was its ability to drag that self out. At the same time that "self" was thinking and moving, the body, the spirit and the magic power were able to maintain the state of meditation!

In the world of magic, there's one particular magic revered as the perpetual type magic. The so-called perpetual does not mean that one could go on forever without exhausting one's magic power, it just means that one would be able to go on for a really long time. But once Suo Jia

wore the Atlantis' Wisdom, he would truly enter the state of perpetual meditation. This meditative state would go on for eternity, unless Suo Jia took off the crown.

Suo Jia was dumbfoundedly standing at the same spot. He really couldn't understand how this Atlantis' Wisdom could separate his conscious mind and subconscious mind. Even though his subconscious mind had already entered the state of meditation, Suo Jia was still able to keep his consciousness. It didn't affect his speech or movements at all, that was simply too amazing!

It really was worthy to be deemed the crown of Atlantis. Suo Jia was stroking the crown above his head in admiration and unable to stop sighing in praise. This crown meant that Suo Jia would be able to maintain the state of meditation for 24 hours a day for eternity. Suo Jia's spiritual and magical powers would continue to increase in accordance with the rate of the meditation.

The effects of meditation depended on the state of meditation. With Suo Jia's current condition, his spiritual and magic powers increased twice as fast in the meditative state compared to his non-meditative state. In other words, Suo Jia's current growth rate after he wore the Atlantis' Wisdom was doubled!

In reality, if he took this to the auction, the distinguished feature of the Atlantis' Wisdom would be perpetual-type state magic - meditation, perpetual-type spiritual magic - concentration. At the same time, as the symbol of wisdom, the Atlantis' Wisdom could stimulate the spiritual power and caused the growth rate of the spiritual power to increase by 100%.

One Legendary-ranked necklace plus one Epic-ranked crown increased Suo Jia's growth by 4 times compared to before. Even though he had worn these two pieces of magical equipment, Suo Jia's strength at the moment didn't show too much of a change. But from the perspective of the future growth and development, these two equipment were simply priceless.

Suo Jia inspected the Vulcan's Roar in front of him. Even though this

staff could increase his magic power by 100%, that was all it could do. It was worthless when compared to Faerie's Soul and Atlantis' Wisdom.

Of course, this only applied to Suo Jia. For those older people who were already very powerful, the Faerie's Soul and Atlantis' Wisdom were not as important. On the contrary, for those older and stronger people, the Vulcan's Roar was more important since it could increase their magic power by 100%. Only this would be deemed as priceless!

Actually, this wasn't true only for older people, it was true for more powerful people as well. In reality, to the majority of the people, this Vulcan's Roar was more attractive than Faerie's Soul and even the Atlantis' Wisdom. It was because of this that the staff had been sold at a price of 120 million, even higher than the starting price of the high grade Legendary-ranked magical item Faerie's Soul. It could be said that if the number of wealthy people had not been so few that day, then it wouldn't have been strange if the Vulcan's Roar could have been sold for the exact same value of 200 million that the Faerie's Soul had been sold for.

Although Suo Jia couldn't use it, and at the moment he didn't desire to use it either, this Vulcan's Roar's value was precious to the extent that it was barely second to the high grade Legendary ranked magical equipment. It far outclassed most of the middle and lower grade Legendary-ranked magical items in terms of value.

Maybe some people do not understand this reasoning. Actually, the reason was very simple; the rarer it is, the greater its value was as well. Amongst the four elements, the number of fire mages was the highest, and their powers were also the most formidable. For these reasons, the prices of fire type magical items were particularly high. Even if the performances couldn't be compared to the Faerie's Soul, the objects could still fetch high prices.

In reality, to Suo Jia, both the Faerie's Soul and the Atlantis' Wisdom could be comparable to complete Divine artifacts. Although they didn't provide Suo Jia with an explosive boost in strength, with time, it could potentially be equivalent to fusing multiple Vulcan's Roars with his body. Raising his base strength was the most important. This was also the

reason why the lecturer had warned Suo Jia that magical equipment could not be depended on.

After all, magical equipment were all inanimate objects. Their original powers did not really represent themselves. Although it was impossible to see their true strengths, as soon as Suo Jia grew older and trained for a bit longer, these two magical equipment would show the enormous impacts their benefits would make, as it would not simply stop raising his magic strength by 100%. Their effects would be beyond anyone's calculations.

After his happiness passed, Suo Jia was at a loss. With the characteristics of the Atlantis' Wisdom, Suo Jia already no longer needed to meditate. Not wasting a single minute, he stayed in his meditation status. Since this was so, what was he supposed to do during his spare time?

After pondering this for a long time, finally....Suo Jia's eyes lit up. He pulled out the little pet deeply sleeping in his pocket. First, Suo Jia used a Moisture Technique to wake it up. Then, after giving a command, the little fellow helplessly flew up into the air.

Faced with the bat-sized pet flying in the air, Suo Jia broke out in laughter. He lifted his hand and activated an Ice Sphere. Before it could protect itself, the little pet that had just woken up was suddenly hit by the Ice Sphere, and was directly thrown backwards dozens of meters away, before it collided into a pillar.

This collision wasn't very strong, but the little pet's body was still tender, and after piteously crying for a long time, it still couldn't crawl back up. It looked pitifully at Suo Jia, hoping for its owner to feel sorry for it.

Of course Suo Jia could not refuse its requests for help. After casting a few Moisture Techniques in succession, the little pet was healed in an instant. The next moment....just as the little pet was prepared to lazily lie on the floor, Suo Jia activated the Swamp Technique. Suddenly....the little pet's small body was stuck fast in the swampy mud, and despite its struggles, it couldn't get back into the air.

Despite seeing the little guy's panicked actions, Suo Jia still refused to let him go. One bullet of ice that was emitting cold air, gradually formed on top of Suo Jia's right hand. Seeing this scene, the little pet sharply cried out in fear. While looking at the Ice Sphere forming on Suo Jia's palm, it flapped its wings with all its might, attempting to break away from the bindings of the swamp, and fly away.

Unfortunately, with Suo Jia's new magic activation sequence, the Ice Sphere Technique did not take any time at all to activate. The little pet had barely enough time to cry out before it was once again sent flying backwards by the Ice Sphere. Although it had successfully dodged the swampy mud, the little pet suffered from serious injuries once again.

As if purposely meant to abuse the little pet, the little Frost Wurm was once again hit by an Ice Sphere and sent flying into the pillar. Suo Jia activated the Moisture Technique again to heal its body in an instant. This time, the little Frost Wurm had learned its lesson, and as soon as it was healed, it tried to fly up into the air. However, despite this, his movements were still a bit too slow, and his chubby legs were caught by the swampy mud, and he did not successfully reach the air.

Just like that, Suo Jia used the small Frost Wurm as his target, and constantly cast Moisture Techniques, Ice Spheres, and even Swamp Techniques. Although the competition was still half a year away, Suo Jia knew that if he did not start focusing on training for it now, by the time the competition came around, he would be powerless to go against any strong opponents.

Chapter 71: Feigning Death to Escape

The 36 fire wind warriors were currently venturing deep within the forest of magical beasts, under the guidance of 10 instructors. Making sure that the instructors were not paying attention, six red clad girls quietly moved to the back of the team, exchanged a few words, and disappeared.

After walking for a short while, the instructors all stopped. The leader of the instructors heavily said, "Alright, there is only one requirement this time. All of you are to pass through this long and narrow jungle and annihilate any magical beasts in your path. Take note that no matter what, you should not deviate from the main path. If you deviate from the path, remember under no circumstances should you enter the red zone. If you do, your life will definitely be in danger!"

Faced with the guidance of the instructors, all of the girls nodded their heads, but none of them replied. The instructor was used to this type of situation and waved his hand, gesturing for the girls to move out at once, before loudly saying, "We will wait for you at the final mission destination. Everyone needs to try their hardest and make it past these jungle obstacles as quickly as possible."

With a last glance towards fire wind warriors, the ten or so instructors turned around and left this forest. They got onto the horse carriages waiting for them, and rode down towards the other end of the forest. The instructors did not want to undergo the same path as their students, as the environment within the forest was simply too harsh.

On the other end of forest, before the 36 fire wind warriors had walked very far, a shadow flashed past. A black clad individual with a delicate figure appeared before them, and quickly said, "Everything has already been arranged and time is short. Hurry up!"

All the fire wind warriors quickly nodded their head and swiftly followed that petite silhouette. After arriving at a specific location, they surveyed the area and found 36 unconscious women had been laid out on

an empty space of the forest.

Next, the 36 fire wind warriors quickly took off their own cloaks, and put them on the women unconscious on the ground.

One of the fire wind warriors was unable to contain her curiosity and asked, "Where did these women come from? Aren't they too pitiful? Because of our lives, we had to sacrifice theirs, this..."

Listening to the fire wind warrior's words, the black clad masked man dully said, "If we don't do it this way, how are we supposed to trick anyone? But rest assured, these women do not deserve your pity. They are disciples of an evil cult. These individuals wanted to consume an infant's brain to increase their spiritual powers. Killing one equals saving hundred lives, so you girls do not need to feel guilty."

"Pei!" After they heard the black clad man's words, a few fire wind warriors spat a mouthful of saliva towards the women on the ground with enmity. That was way too inhumane, even if it was for increasing one's strength, one shouldn't eat an infant's brain. They even dared to carry out this kind of inhumane act. They couldn't even be considered human anymore, and simply deserved to die.

Very soon, all the fire wind warriors exchanged their cloaks with the women on the ground, and under the guidance of the black clad man, they quickly left the crime scene.

Shortly after a few people left, sounds of people moving swiftly could be heard within the forest. Very soon... one black figure arrived at the scene, as quick as lightning. He glanced at the women on the ground with a ruthless smile on his face.

After waiting for a while, the black figure strained his ears to listen attentively and started moving at full speed again. The moment the black silhouette left, one bright red magical beast that was around 10 meters in height violently leapt out from the depths of the forest.

"Roar!" The magical beast seemed extremely angry, as it couldn't find the black figure. It looked up to the sky and started to roar.

Soon, the magical beast discovered the girls on the open sections of the ground. The furious magical beast had finally found a target to vent its anger out on. It shot out a surge of blazing flames, directly burning the closer girls to crisps before they could even cry out. This wasn't the end either. What followed was really not appropriate to describe, as the magical beast tore through and stomped on.....

On the other side, not long after the teachers had set off, they encountered a few warriors covered in blood, pleading for help. Out of curiosity, the teachers questioned them about their circumstances. Who knew that they would end up regretting their decision to ask? As soon as they had received answers, the teachers practically lost their souls. They found out from the unfortunate victims that a Flaming Misty Agate Beast had somehow managed to escape from the deep parts of the forest, and was currently running loose!

The Misty Agate Beast was a rank 8 magical beast. It had an explosive temperament, and would ruthlessly kill any forms of life in its vicinity. The reason that the teachers had warned the students to never enter the red zone of the forest was precisely because it was the Misty Agate Beast's territory!

Greatly shocked, the teachers ignored the messengers that had brought the news. They quickly jumped on carriages, and charged at full speed to the nearby forest, in the direction that the fire wind warriors had gone. Fortunately....it hadn't been that long since they had first set out. Perhaps they would still be able to catch up in time.

Finally, a group of teachers who had fervently rushed to the scene arrived "just in time". What they saw was the great Misty Agate Beast crazily wreaking havoc. It was surrounded by torn limbs and the entire scene was covered with fresh blood. The entire ground had already been completely dyed bright crimson.

It was too tragic to see their own students encounter such a dark end. Even if they returned to the school, they would definitely receive the cruelest punishment possible. In an instant, the dozen of teachers began to tear up, and recklessly charged at the Misty Agate Beast. Even if they

were unable to save the students' lives anymore, they still needed to get back at the girls' killer.

In reality, this plan still had some flaws. Although the torn red cloaks could be found on the scene, as well as a large amount of destroyed limbs, the scene still lacked traces of a fight. Although the fire wind warriors might not have been a match for the Misty Agate Beast, there was no way they would've simply stood there, waiting for their deaths to arrive. Together as a group, they would have tried to counter attack somehow.

However, by the time the teachers arrived, they would only see traces of the havoc the Misty Agate Beast had wrought, and there would be no signs of the girls struggling. This was the greatest flaw in the plan. However, it was clear that the teachers would simply rush over to the scene, disregarding everything else around them. Thus, this loophole had ceased to be a problem.

Even though it was a rank 8 magical beast, they still had the advantage in numbers. The Holy Light teachers all had extraordinary tyrannical powers, and with the dozen of them combined, they formed an overwhelming power!

Finally, the dozen of teachers managed to defeat the large Misty Agate Beast by attacking crazily with all their efforts. However, the teachers were not able to gain anything from this result, as only 6 of the 14 teachers had survived. Although they were covered in cuts and bruises and had a few broken limbs, they were still alive.

Heavily breathing hard, the few teachers exchanged looks with each other. They knew that if they returned like this, they would definitely be unable to escape death. Losing all of Holy Light Empire's newest generation of fire wind warriors was too great of a crime. After all....this had been the result of poor work ethics. Unless.....

After pondering for a while, the few teachers' eyes lit up. Everyone knew that there was only one possible circumstance where they would not only avoid punishment, they would even become heroes: if they had encountered the accident together with all the students, and then their

colleagues and all the students had died in battle, while they had barely managed to escape with their lives!

Soon, the few surviving teachers gathered together and quietly murmured amongst themselves for a while. Finally, they dragged the badly damaged bodies, as well as the Fiery Agate Beast's corpse, towards the forest.

A week later, the grievous news reached Holy Light City. The fire wind warriors group had encountered a mature Flaming Misty Agate Beast , causing the whole group to die. 14 military instructors tried their utmost to save them, and with the deaths of 8 instructors and 6 of the instructors seriously wounded and handicapped, they were finally able to eradicate the Flaming Misty Agate Beast.

Just as the six teachers had planned, they not only managed to avoid punishment, they had even become heroes: elites that were able to slaughter a rank 8 Flaming Misty Agate Beast. They were showered by an endless amount of invitation letters. If the teachers no longer wanted to instruct and directly resign from their duties, they could directly become bodyguards for the rich and powerful aristocrats.

Everyone believed that the group of fire wind warriors had already been completely decimated. However, in reality, the fire wind warrior sisters had secretly infiltrated a commerce metropolis as famous as Holy Light City – Glory City!

Chapter 72: Wild Rose Merchant Group

Although Holy Light City was a commercial metropolis as well as a financial district, Glory City was an entire zone in its own right within the Holy Light Empire, while Holy Light City was only one corner of the Empire. In terms of commercial locations, Holy Light City could not compare to Glory City.

Around a hundred thousand people entered and exited Glory City on a daily basis, which was much higher than the barely ten thousand people travelling in and out of Holy Light City. This was the largest difference between the two metropolises.

Although Glory City was not as luxurious or magnificent as Holy Light City, because of its unique location, all of the Empire's merchants had to cross through Glory City unless they were only doing business near Holy Light City. Thus, the merchants gradually made Glory City the hub of all trading.

Regardless of whether the southern merchants were heading north, or the northern merchants were heading south, or if they were going west to east, or east to west, they all needed to cross through Glory City, the de facto center of the Holy Light Empire. This unique location was exactly why Glory City had become Holy Light Empire's busiest and liveliest merchandise distribution center.

The reason why the fire wind warriors had arrived here was mainly because there were a lot of people. The number of people that went in and out the city reached a few million. The fire wind warriors would attain the best cover in this ever changing, large city. As long as they didn't do anything too shocking, no one would be able to recognize them.

The second reason why they chose this place as their destination was because this was the largest business city in the whole country. With the fire wind warriors' arrival, they could build a trading company. This would firstly give the fire wind warriors something to do, then secondly, they would allow them to nurture their abilities to be able to survive on

their own. Thirdly, it allowed them to successfully carry out tasks, and lastly, they could also earn some money. Money was something that one could never have too much of.

As soon as they arrived at Glory City, the fire wind warriors immediately sent a message detailing their situation to Suo Jia. A few days later, they received a letter in response. Within this letter, Suo Jia had ordered all the fire wind warriors to join the Wild Rose Merchant Group.

The Wild Rose Merchant Group was a newly formed fifth rank merchant group, with the leader being Suo Jia. However, this fact was only known by the fire wind warriors. To everyone else trying to peer in from the outside, the merchant group's leader was a mysterious figure whose name could not be found anywhere.

The reason why he had formed this merchant group was because Suo Jia had his own personal plans. There would eventually come a day where he would travel on the Greater Trade Routes. If that was so, then he needed to be more familiar with anything related to escape routes, risk taking, and bandits. Otherwise, how could he alone search for his father in the Greater Trade Routes that stretched continuously for thousands of miles?

Although fame and reputation seemed shallow, these things were actually quite useful. Suo Jia knew that if he wanted to find his father, he would have to build a reputation for himself on the Greater Trade Routes first. However, building a name for himself alone would be too difficult. Among the Greater Trade Routes, only groups were able to leave behind their names!

The Wild Rose Merchant Group's flag was a blazing red, and drawn on it was a sparkling, gold wild rose. It was both exquisite and elegant. The symbol was something that Suo Jia had personally drawn to secretly represent the fire wind warriors. If any observant people examined the golden wild rose closely, they would discover that it was actually formed from the shapes of golden flames!

The Wild Rose Merchant Group's task was to deliver a set of goods from Glory City back to Holy Light City every week. The merchandise being delivered were all excellent and exotic fine wines from various places within the Holy Light Empire. If these goods were not delivered every Sunday, then the girls would not be able to receive their moisturizing that week. After all...the water mage students only had time to come out on Sundays.

The distance between Glory City and Holy Light City was a distance of over 2000 kilometers. Unless they managed to advance at least 300 kilometers per day, the fire wind warriors would not be able to reach their time limit. Thus, if they wanted to punctually arrive at their destination, then they needed to carry the goods personally, and run at high speeds. There was no means of transportation that could advance them 300 kilometers every day.

Faced with Suo Jia's request, all the fire wind warriors understood that from the letter, Suo Jia's objective was not to earn money, but to foster their powers. While they delivered the goods, their strength would be quickly improved.

Just thinking about it; carrying heavy goods, and painstakingly travelling for more than 300 kilometers every day was a great trial. This was true no matter what was being considered, whether it was to the body, wind fire qi, endurance, or mental determination. If they could withstand it, there was no way their strength wouldn't improve!

Three weeks had passed without receiving a moisturizing treatment. All the girls' skins had formed red patches again. Because they did not dare to wait any longer, all of the fire wind warriors quickly changed into the heavy leather armors that Suo Jia had provided for them. Afterwards, they quickly purchased the set of goods, and hurried to Holy Light City at full speed.

A week later, 36 sorry figures that swayed about while they lugged the heavy bags of goods on their backs appeared in front of the White Villa. Each one of them was completely worn out, with their bodies covered in filth and grime. But when they gazed upon the familiar, graceful White

Villa, their eyes lit up in anticipation. Since they had managed to arrive at the White Villa before dawn on Sunday, they would finally be able to enjoy the moisturizing treatment.

On the surface, this group of people seemed like a group of old geezers. They wore square hats on their heads, and curtains made of silk hung down from the square hats to block off the dust. Along with the thick leather armors covering their bodies, they couldn't look any more like old geezers. No one would have imagined that they were the extremely well-known fire wind warriors!

With a ring of the doorbell, the White Villa's grand doors slowly opened. The group of people quickly rushed inside, each of them carrying a bag of heavy goods. Following the maids, the group of people quickly entered the underwater training ground.

Hearing the jumbled sounds of footsteps inside the training area, Suo Jia stopped his actions. Across from him was the small Frost Wurm, which had finally gotten the chance to catch its breath. It hid behind the nearby stone pillar out of fear, with only its head peeking out as it cautiously watched Suo Jia, afraid that he would once again shoot out an Ice Sphere to crush it.

After a short wait, the large doors opened, and the group of fire wind warriors entered in an impressive line. Seeing the girls completely covered in filth, Suo Jia felt slightly guilt-ridden. Was treating them this way a bit too merciless? However, if he wasn't strict with them now, then in the future, the fire wind warriors would be fated to tragically die on the Greater Trade Routes. This was not the time to be spoiling them.

While thinking this, Suo Jia gestured at all of the girls to drop their goods. He then sat down on a stool and began to organize his thoughts, before saying in a low voice, "Firstly, I must congratulate everyone for successfully gaining their freedom."

All the girls' eyes lit up in joy at Suo Jia's words. They often felt that their freedom was only a figment of their imagination. Since they had faked their deaths to escape, all the girls could clearly feel that the great

hand that was previously holding their fates had already disappeared. The joy of freedom was something that people who had never lost their freedom before could not imagine.

Seeing the girls' smiles brimming with happiness, Suo Jia continued, "I know that everyone definitely has their opinions about my arrangements. Perhaps you think that my plans are too tormenting. However, I hope that everyone understands that my actions are only like this because I want you girls to quickly improve. They aren't because I want to morbidly torment you."

Right after Suo Jia's words, a fire wind warrior smiled, "Rest assured, we aren't that naive. We are all adults around the age of 20; we understand Lord Suo Jia's painstaking efforts."

"Hehe....." Laughing with gratitude, Suo Jia continued, "It's great that you understand. Also... I need to clarify a point; I did not think of you girls as slave labor. Your work is all for your own sakes. The money that you obtain from each delivery will be for your own personal use. Every time you arrive, I will pay you according to the goods you deliver."

"Pa! Pa!....." As they spoke, Suo Jia heavily clapped. With the clear sound of claps, Eldest Sister walked in with a smiling face. Behind her were two maids, each holding a tray with both hands.

Smiling at all of the fire wind girls, Suo Jia calmly said, "This time, you guys delivered 36 bags of special products. According to the Commerce Union's conventions, I should pay each of you 10 gold coins, for each bag of goods. However.... I'm going to pay you ten times more."

"Ya!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, all the girls cried out in shock. What kind of joke was this, 10 times the profits? This was too absurd; this was even more than the value of the merchandise they were delivering!

Chapter 73: Prospering Business

Seeing the girls' bewildered expressions, Suo Jia smiled, "Since we're all going to work together from now on, there are many things I don't want to hide from you. The goods you all delivered are rare special products. They don't last long and so under normal circumstances, Holy Light City's people cannot enjoy these products."

Suo Jia's eyes lit up as he happily continued, "However, with your arduous efforts, these special products arrived here within a week's time so they are still considered fresh. Being able to eat such fresh special products in Holy Light City is something that the rich and powerful aristocrats are definitely willing to pay exorbitant prices for. Thus, the amount of money we earn is greater, and so are your individual portions."

The fire wind warriors sighed in admiration at Suo Jia's words. They all understood that these types of income information involved Suo Jia's business and the girls had absolutely did not need to be involved. The reason why Suo Jia acted like this was because he didn't regard them as his subjects, but rather as his colleagues!

While speaking, Suo Jia pointed to the trays being held by two of the maids, "There are a total of 36 money pouches here. Each pouch contains 100 gold. This is your earnings for this week. It may not be that much right now, but I can say that this is not your entire earnings either. It's only a portion of it paid in advance so that you girls can spend some now."

Suo Jia grew more excited, "Every time you girls deliver merchandise, no matter how much money I earn, I will always give half of it to you. I'll hand out some of the money after each delivery, and accumulate the rest for you girls. I'll create accounts for you girls to look over, so that you can check them yourselves. If I commit any type of fraud, you're welcome to break all ties from me!"

"This...." All of the girls were bewildered at Suo Jia's words; they could not understand what Suo Jia's purpose was.

Seeing the girls' confused expressions, Suo Jia inwardly smiled and sighed in praise at Elder Sister's foresight. Everything so far had been her idea. In reality, this plan was just for the sake of firmly tying all of the girls onto his own ship.

Amidst his thoughts, Suo Jia looked at the fire wind warriors in front of him and said, "This time, the goods that everyone delivered are separated into 4 things: agate grapes, wild yellow peaches, golden candied jujubes, and mountain mushrooms."

"Yea...." Hearing Suo Jia's words, all the girls nodded. They had purchased and delivered the goods, so they obviously knew what the goods they carried were.

Pausing for a bit, Suo Jia continued, "One bag of goods weighing 15kg can fit 30 trays. In other words, during the upcoming weeks, we'll have 1000+ trays of this special product to sell. This will be the White Villa's specialty. These things can only be eaten at the White Villa; no other shops in Holy Light City can even imagine enjoying these fruits and special products.""

Suo Jia said in a furtive voice, "Everyone, guess how much 1000 trays of fruit and special products can sell for."

"This..." All the girls blankly shook their heads. How could they possibly guess?

Seeing the confused expressions on the girls, Suo Jia laughed, "I'll just save everyone from expending their energies, and tell you. One tray of wild yellow peaches cannot be enjoyed unless one pays at least 1000 gold. In other words, every bag that each of you carried contains White Villa's pure profits, close to 30000 gold!"

"Wa!" All the girls cried out in shock from Suo Jia's words. Such large profits; it was practically stealing!

Suo Jia knew from the girls' shocked expressions that there were some things that the girls had not yet realized. He broke out in laughter and raised a finger, "Notice that amongst this 30000 gold, I'll be splitting 15000 of it to you girls. In other words, your actual weekly wages are not

the 100 gold in front of you, but 15000 gold!”

“Xi!” The girls could not help but sharply inhale at these words. 15000 gold! This was an astronomical value. 2-3 weeks ago, they only had 1 gold to spend on daily living expenses. Now, weeks later, they had unexpectedly earned 15000 gold!

Suo Jia nodded to himself in satisfaction after seeing all the girls’ taken aback expressions. The reason he had decided to do this was to keep the powerful warriors by his side. Unless they didn’t desire the huge amounts of money, there was no way they would be willing to leave Suo Jia. As time passes, the money under their names being held by Suo Jia would increase more and more. It was only 15000 now, but it would eventually become millions, ten millions. At that point, how could they possibly bring themselves to forsake this amount of money and betray Suo Jia?

Once this gold was split up amongst the girls. Suo Jia would not feel any regret. The main purpose of opening the White Villa was not to earn money. At least, it didn’t rely on selling dishes to earn money. These special fruits only served to raise the White Villa’s class and style. The actual source of income was still Suo Jia himself. With a wave of his hands, he had gained the position of an eighth ranked lord and the White Villa. He had even gained the few hundred millions in net worth with Faerie’s Soul and Vulcan’s Roar. Even the priceless Atlantis’ Wisdom was now in his hands.

Moreover, knowing that their work would earn tons of gold, the girls’ motivations would increase. In their hearts, the work was no longer for Suo Jia’s sake, but their own sakes. Their enthusiasm and initiative would definitely go up even without Suo Jia urging them. They would still deliver the goods as much and as quickly as possible.

Through their arduous work, they would not only earn large amounts of money, they’d also be able to exponentially improve their strength. This was exactly what Suo Jia was hoping for. Everything had been planned based on 2 main objectives: the first was to firmly tie the girls to his side, and the second was to allow their strengths to shoot up. Although this plan cost him a lot of money, even if he didn’t give these amounts of gold

to the girls, Suo Jia would still be paying for their equipment from his own pockets.

Although buying them equipment would make them feel slightly touched, who would vow loyalty and devotion to someone for a set of equipment? The reason Suo Jia had done this earlier was to temporarily earn their feelings of gratitude and accumulate a long-term emotional attachment over time. These types of feelings would eventually develop into loyalty. This was the recommendation that Eldest Sister had passed onto Suo Jia!

Suo Jia smiled at the spirited fire wind girls, “Ladies, although this money is in my hands, I’m only withholding it to prevent everyone from recklessly spending it. As long as you have a sensible reason, you girls can come here and retrieve the stored money. You can even overdraft. You girls must understand that I’m only temporarily safekeeping the money. After all....since you girls will constantly be outside, it’s not appropriate to carry so much money around.”

Suo Jia paused at this moment before sternly saying, “I understand that you girls do not just want money; you also desire statuses and positions. In regards to this, I can promise everyone that as long as you continue to work diligently and improve your tyrannical strengths, I can grant you noble statuses.”

At this point, Suo Jia glanced at Eldest Sister. Noticing his glance, Eldest Sister nodded, and pulled out the grants, handing them to the fire wind warriors.

All of the fire wind warriors were shocked by these documents. Normally speaking, only royalty had the power to confer noble statuses. However, Lord Suo Jia held these grants. Exactly what was going on?

Seeing the bewildered expressions on everyone’s faces, Suo Jia mysteriously smiled, “You girls don’t need to know how I got these grants. The only thing you do need to know is that as long as you continue to work hard and behave well, then you will have the chance to receive a grant.”

As he was speaking, footsteps could be heard from outside the door. Noticing this, Suo Jia said in a low voice, "Alright, I still have matters to attend to tonight, so I won't send you off tomorrow morning. Right now, we need to discuss what goods you girls want to deliver."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, Eldest Sister walked over and smiled, "The longer the routes and the shorter-lasting the fruits and special products are, the higher their selling prices. However, at the same time, you will also need to run longer distances. For example, if you deliver the southern lychees to Holy Light City, then you can each earn 300000 gold of pure profits within those little money pouches. However, completing the journey would require running for 4 weeks without stopping to rest!"

"Four weeks, 300000!" Hearing Eldest Sister's words, all the fire wind warriors inhaled sharply. The profits were so large that even when split with Suo Jia, they'd still gain 150000.

These calculations were something that all of them could do. If they continuously delivered the fruits and special products from the trip they had just completed, then they could run the journey twice in 4 weeks, only earning 30000 gold. However, if they ran with the lychees, then although they'd only be able to complete 1 journey in 4 weeks, they could earn 150000 gold, which was five times higher. The only thing was....if they chose this path, the girls would have to go for 4 weeks without receiving moisturizing treatments.

After hesitating for a long time, finally....all the fire wind warriors decided to deliver the lychees. There was absolutely no way they could reject such high profits.

Chapter 74: The Ice and Snow Pact

With the appearance of this new specialty, the prestige and status of the White Villa once again rose to a higher degree. Although the White Villa's prices were exorbitantly expensive, to be able to eat such specialties in Holy Light was worth it, regardless of how high the prices went. These delicacies in particular were not available in any of the other shops in the city. No matter how they were compared, no one would dare utter the word expensive.

On the evening of that same day, Suo Jia hurried to the Emma's household and successfully helped her with the Weight Loss Technique. As the night passed, the Shar Pei lady ceased to exist. Instead, a cute, blushing pink Emma was brought into this world.

She didn't possess Wen Ya's heart-stopping beauty, however Emma's current cuteness made all those around her feel the urge to embrace and cuddle her. Even her previously overbearing temper now simply appeared to be a cute tantrum, as no one would blame such a cute girl.

Looking at her completely new appearance, Emma's reaction was even worse than Wen Ya's had been, and she cried until her whole face was wet with tears. "This is too perfect, even when I cry I am so beautiful; so cute, this is simply too amazing!"

Slowly turning around, Emma spoke to Suo Jia with tears still in her eyes, "Thank you, thank you so much. Being able to receive so much, no matter how much I pay it's still not enough. No matter what, Emma still wants to thank you one more time. From now on, you are Emma's closest friend, and Emma will forever treat you well."

"This..." Suo Jia suddenly began to burst with sweat and started scratching his head. If this was the Emma from before who had spoken these words, he would have immediately felt nauseated and started vomiting. Looking at the extremely cute Emma now, however, he could not muster up a single ounce of disgust.

Emma's stature was not tall, similar to her father. They both had small

skeletal frames, and once she slimmed now, she immediately transformed from a Shar Pei lady into a loli. Although in reality, Emma already neared twenty years of age, from a height perspective, no matter how one looked, she appeared to be an innocent and cute thirteen year-old girl.

She had rosy and delicate cheeks, as well as a slim figure. She appeared so innocent that others could not help but want to embrace and take care of her, especially when she laughed. Even when she was angry, her faintly pouting rosy lips would cause people to hold their breaths and secretly be delighted.

If they weren't in the same room the whole time, Emma's father and mother would have found it impossible to believe that the cute and lovely girl in front of them was their daughter Emma. Seeing the intensely sobbing Emma in front of them, the two adults felt something stirring inside of them. They held Emma within their arms, and gently patted her while softly comforting her.

Feeling the love from her mother and father, Emma could not help but feel shocked. Why... She was already almost twenty; there was no need to be treated this way. Then again, this type of feeling was really comfortable! Seeing the kind expressions on her parent's faces, Emma's eyes became even more moist. She couldn't even remember how many years had passed since she had last received this type of kindness from them.

Seeing the family of three joyous and harmonious, Suo Jia did not disturb them and quietly left the room. At this moment, Suo Jia finally felt relieved. Although it might be impossible to completely fix Emma's temper, as the saying goes, it is easier to change mountains and rivers than to alter one's character. However, from the start, Emma was not a bad person; she was simply a bit too headstrong. Combined with her current looks, others would only think that she was cute and innocent, not hating her in the slightest.

Gently nodding his head, Suo Jia smiled and hurried back towards his home. By helping others, he received things that he needed as well; there really weren't many things better than this.

When he arrived home, Suo Jia once again entered the underground training area. Upon entering, he was greeted by Eldest Sister's smile. "I have already completed the tasks you requested of me. Would you like to take a look?"

Hearing Eldest Sister's words, Suo Jia's eyes lit up. He quickly took the objects from Eldest Sister's hands and closely examined them.

In his hands was a three finger thick sapphire flannel headband. On the outside, it simply appeared to be an ordinary blue flannel headband. In reality, however, within the blue flannel was the Atlantis' Wisdom.

Suo Jia clearly understood that if he simply walked out with such a precious crown outside, he would lose possession of it in just a few days. This piece of magical equipment was simply too eye-catching. Anyone with some insight could tell that this was no ordinary item, and once someone recognized it, there would definitely be desperate individuals who would kill him for the treasure.

But Suo Jia was not willing to own such a precious item and not use it all the time. This object could actually allow Suo Jia to constantly preserve a state of meditation, and quickly help him improve. Naturally, it was better to wear it on his head all the time, and after thinking about this for a long time, Suo Jia finally came up with this solution.

This Atlantis' Wisdom was only roughly three fingers thick, and with the blue flannel wrapped around, it now became a blue headband. Lifting up his hair, it fit just right on his forehead. For camouflaging purposes, Suo Jia had added some water element gems into the headband. On the surface, this headband only seemed to be something used by beginner mages. Even if it was robbed, it would not be a big deal. They would simply think that the Atlantis' Wisdom inside was some steel plate or something, and definitely would not think that an Epic-ranked magical item was hidden within.

As for the Faerie's Soul, Suo Jia was not too concerned. That item was something that he carried around with him personally. Unless Suo Jia revealed it openly, it was not possible for it to be seen, and so it was not

necessary for Suo Jia to act any further.

Wearing the Atlantis' Wisdom, Suo Jia once again entered that mystical state. On the surface, he could continue his normal thinking and activities, but within a hidden layer of his consciousness he already entered the meditative realm. As long as he wore this crown, then no matter what Suo Jia was doing, he was still rapidly improving. As for how frightening he would be in the future, it would become increasingly apparent.

However, ever since Suo Jia wore this Atlantis' Wisdom, he suddenly realized that he didn't know what to do with all the time on his hands. Every day, he only repetitively used the Ice Sphere, Swamp, and Moisture Techniques to harass the little pet, without knowing what else to do.

After several weeks, Suo Jia had already reached an extremely high realm regarding the Ice Sphere, Swamp, and Moisture Techniques' uses for fighting. However, Suo Jia understood that simply relying on this training was not enough.

After contemplating this for a long time, Suo Jia finally decided that he would still continue going to his classes, however... what he needed to learn was not merely how to use the Swamp and Ice Sphere Techniques. Even though he didn't have the ability to use these techniques yet, he wanted to begin studying the ice magic system.

Early the next day, Suo Jia hurried to his school. Once the bell rang, Suo Jia immediately opened his magic manual and began to study with unwavering focus. The reason he had come to school rather than staying at home was only because the school had a good studying environment, allowing him to study at ease. If he was at home, this atmosphere would be non-existent, as there were always things that needed his attention.

In terms of first-ranked ice magic, Suo Jia had already grasped the Ice Sphere Technique. He was on the verge of understanding the Glacial Armor. This same Glacial Armor used ice to make a set of sturdy armor. Encompassing the surface of the body, the armor's strength and sturdiness increased as the temperature of the armor decreased.

After only looking at it for a little bit, Suo Jia immediately noticed one line of description in particular. “Ice magic is simply using water in its solid form. When facing an enemy, in order to harm or even to impact them in some way, the ultimate obscure truth is that it reflects the ice’s temperature.”

Water is a really strange substance. Other substances all increase in power as heat increases, and decrease as temperature lowers. However, water is exactly the opposite, with heat reducing its formidability and coldness improving it. In addition... as temperature decreases, the ice’s strength and sturdiness all gradually inversely increase. Other substances, upon entering a cooler state, will immediately become weak and brittle. For example, metal; once it enters an ultra-low temperature, it will become fragile and can easily fragment.

The formidability of ice magic is directly correlated with the temperature of the ice. The lower the temperature, the firmer the ice will be. Once the temperature drops below a certain point, it becomes even harder than steel. Whether one uses ice to attack or defend, both are more reliable than steel.

Chapter 75: Cultivation Successful

It can be said that training in the ice arts is really just training in temperature. If, for example, the fire arts is training how to raise temperature, then the ice arts is training how to lower temperature.

With Suo Jia's Ice Sphere Technique, the lower the temperature, the harder the Ice Sphere would become, and more frigid air would be emitted. It should be pointed out that the Ice Sphere does not only rely on physical contact to inflict harm on others, rather, it relies on the frigid air within it to kill the enemy.

Once it made contact with the enemy, the Ice Sphere's inner frigid air will be released and cause the enemy to suffer from severe frostbites, to the point of even completely freezing the enemy temporarily. At the very least, it would slow down the enemy's speed as they enter a sluggish state due to the extreme cold. If the opposing party was too weak, then one Ice Sphere alone could completely kill the person.

The Glacial Armor was similar. Even if one learned the Glacial Armor, the most basic Glacial Armor was not hard enough to be of any use. Only by lowering the temperature could one fully make use of the Glacial Armor. Once the temperature is lowered to a certain point, the centimeters thick Glacial Armor can become even harder than metal; the defense it provides is beyond measurement.

In general, ice magic's power relies on temperature. The other aspects are just activation methods, so....all ice mages have to first learn the magic-- Ice and Snow Pact!

The Ice and Snow Pact is a rank-less magic, similar to water manipulation techniques. It does not require drawing out a magic diagram; it is only a type of interactive link with the water elements. By using this method to link with the water elements, a type of pact will gradually form. As the pact slowly becomes deeper, the ice magic's power will also gradually be increased.

If manipulating water was a type of interaction with water, then the Ice

and Snow Pact was a more in-depth type of interaction with the water elements. Unless one had already achieved meditation and could sense the water elements, then the activation method of ice magics cannot be learned or trained in.

However, this Ice and Snow Pact conflicts with meditation. The Meditation Technique requires the person to enter a state of emptiness and oblivion, while the Ice and Snow Pact requires a subjective awareness in order to manipulate the elements. Thus, the two techniques cannot be performed simultaneously.

If one wanted to increase magic or spirit powers to activate higher ranked ice magics, then long periods of meditation were necessary. If one wanted to increase the strength of the ice magics, then more interaction with the water elements by training the Ice and Snow Pact was unavoidable. These two were difficult choices to choose from.

Whether to choose to focus on the Ice and Snow Pact or the Meditation Technique had always been the most difficult choice for all ice mages. Choosing one of them meant giving up on the other.

Training in the Meditation Technique meant that one could activate higher ranked magics with greater power. On the other hand, although training in the Ice and Snow Pact meant that spirit and magic powers were limited in that they could only activate mid-ranked magics, the magics' power became much greater.

In general, no matter which training path was chosen, both were equally strong. The only thing was that the Meditation Technique was more appropriate for community large-scale battles, whereas the Ice and Snow Pact was more appropriate for individual mage duels. Thus, the choice simply depended upon the person's individual interests.

However, to Suo Jia, this problem didn't exist. He already no longer needed to enter the meditation state. Because of Atlantis' Wisdom, Suo Jia was constantly kept in the meditative realm. He had plenty of time to train in the Ice and Snow Pact.

"Hehe...." Seeing the Ice and Snow Pact's activation methods and the

inner methods, Suo Jia could not help but laugh. This was to be expected of Atlantis' Wisdom; its results were really amazing. With it, Suo Jia had the ability to activate high-ranked techniques as well as the ability to utilize the full strength of ice magics. He had managed to get ahold of both the fish and the bear; this was really too awesome!

The only thing was that the Ice and Snow Pact was not that easy to train in. It required painstaking efforts to train monotonously for long periods of time, as only then would the results gradually come into effect. Reaping the effects required just as much diligent work. Without working hard, nothing could be gained.

Now that he had a direction to work towards, Suo Jia was no longer at a loss. Since then, during the following month, Suo Jia uses all of his spare time to train in the Ice and Snow Pact. The results of the training gradually began to show.

Before he had began to train in the Ice and Snow Pact, Suo Jia's Ice Sphere would explode once in contact with the wall into pieces, as a typical ball of ice would do. However, after training in the Ice and Snow Pact for an entire month, although the Ice Sphere still couldn't be completely maintained, the wall no longer went off unscathed after coming into contact with the Ice Sphere. Now, the wall sported number small depressions and sunken cracks. This was the greatest gain Suo Jia had earned this past month!

A month later, the fire wind girls had rushed back, completely travel-worn. The 36 boxes of lychees were delivered to the White Villa, and seeing the well preserved appearances of the fresh lychees, Suo Jia knew that everyone had definitely worked hard this time.

In order to confirm that the lychees would stay fresh enough, the fire wind warriors didn't just transport the lychees; they cleverly decided to deliver the branches and leaves the lychees were on as well. The lychee branches inside the bag were extremely long, and each one was covered in at least 1kg of lychees.

Based on the local farmers' instructions, they had placed the lychee

branches inside a container of saltwater. Although the distance had required 2 weeks of journey, these lychees not only didn't lose its freshness, they even continued to flourish and mature. The lychees on these branches were not any different from the local lychees.

The 36 fire wind warriors delivered 36 branches of lychees in total. Although because of the weight and the amount of space the branches took up, they hadn't been able to transfer a lot of pure lychees, in terms of value, it far surpassed those that didn't have branches.

Originally, based on their previous plans, the lychees would be placed on trays and sold to the customers. However, after seeing the lychee branches, Eldest Sister changed her idea. She re-combined these tree branches and once again arranged and assembled them to form a lychee tree. What would be sold would be the entire lychee tree itself.

"Lychee gathering(?)" This was the White Villa's newest assembly name. Those that wanted to attend the lychee gathering had to first pay a 10000 gold entrance fee first. This wasn't even the expensive part, since it was only the entrance fee. Those that wanted to actually pick a lychee and eat it had to pay even more money.

100 invitations were soon sent out. Although 10,000 gold was a bit expensive, it must be pointed out that even ordinary shops would accept these prices. How could personally picking fresh lychees be exchanged for money?

It should be known that even the high-ranking aristocrat officials had never been able to eat these lychees before unless they had personally visited the south. Even those that had tried them before most likely hadn't had fresh ones. Lychees like these that had not even left their branches yet had never been seen or heard of before.

That same day during the evening, all of the guests were within the White Villa. In the garden in front of the White Villa, all of the guests stared in praise at the enormous lychee tree, especially at the lychees that were like glittering jewels within their eyes. From the fresh, green leaves, everyone knew that this tree did not wither or suffer any sort of harm

after being transported over such a long distance. Instead, it was full of life, and these lychees were just as rare and delicate as before.

The number of VIP guests numbered at a total of a hundred. This was the current White Villa reception limit. All of those who had the privilege of entering here were definitely wealthy and powerful distinguished individuals, as ordinary people did not even have the right to enter through the front door.

Suo Jia did not actually attend this party. After all... even though he was an eighth-ranked noble, in front of those guests, he was simply nothing. This was not even somewhere that he was worthy of speaking at. As for the aristocrats, the most important part was watching his attitude and understand what sort of position he currently held. If he even slightly crossed the line and uttered some careless words, then he would immediately be despised.

On the White Villa's third floor, Suo Jia and the group of fire wind warriors were currently drinking fine wines and looking at the lively gathering outside the window. The fire wind warriors were exceptions, since they were unwilling to eat the lychees they had painstakingly transported back. However, Suo Jia did not consider this at all, and heartily ate a branch of lychees. Suo Jia had never eaten not fresh lychees, let alone ones as fresh as these. Actually, not only eating, Suo Jia hadn't even seen them before. Now that he had the chance, nobody could keep him from eating them. To children, eating was the most important thing.

Despite seeing Suo Jia eat them so heartily, the girls still didn't feel any loss. Although transporting them had required a lot of effort, if it hadn't been for Suo Jia, how much could these lychees have been really sold for?

Chapter 76: Glacial Armor Spell

Suo Jia and the group of fire wind warriors observed the party as it gradually reached its climax. Just by simply paying 200,000 gold coins, one could go up to the tree and pick a lychee. However, as for the order in which the people could go up... hehe...

As everybody knew, even though the lychees were all on the tree they were not all the same. There were some that already matured, and some that were not. The people who picked earlier would naturally be able to pick the better ones.

Moreover, being the first ones to pick represented a symbol of identity and status. Because this was an event that could raise one's reputation, then this picking order definitely had to be auctioned off.

As time continued to flow, finally... the party gradually ended. All of the guests eventually left the White Villa. After a short while, Eldest Sister pushed open the tent entrance and entered.

Walking in front of Suo Jia, Eldest Sister said in delight, "Young Master, allow me to report on today's income. In regards to the lychees, the money gained from entry fees totaled at 1,000,000 gold, and today we sold 720 trays, earning 7,200,000 gold. The auction for the order of lychee picking totaled at 8,000,000 gold. Because of all of these, today's total earnings were 16,200,000 gold!"

"Wa!" Hearing Eldest Sister's words, the scatteredly seated fire wind warriors all cheered as they stood up in excitement. Although they knew that they would earn a lot more compared to before, there was no way that they could have ever imagined the amount would be so much!

Originally, the lychee operation had an estimated net profit of 150,000 gold coins. Now however, everyone's earnings had roughly doubled. Within only a single month, each fire wind warrior had earned nearly 300,000 gold. Just how many things could they buy with this amount of money...

While watching the fire wind warriors jumping for joy, Suo Jia gently

put a lychee into his mouth. Although each of them had earned 300,000 gold and thought that it was a lot, this was simply the price of an ordinary robe; they were still far from earning a great amount.

However, Suo Jia understood that within the service industry, he had just stepped into the aristocratic circle. Although such methods of earning money were not impossible, it was indeed slow. Compared to the weapons and food industries, it was still far behind.

Right now, however, although the fire wind warriors were already rather strong, they did not have the necessary strong equipment to face powerful monsters and enemies. After tasting the benefits of possessing magical equipment, Suo Jia knew that arming these fire wind warriors with equipment was his most urgent task. This was also the reason why Suo Jia set up the Commerce Union.

The Wild Rose Merchant Group's rank was still too low; it was currently still an F-rank commerce group. This made them unable to take on large tasks; only by taking on larger tasks could more profits be made, and they would also be able to get their equipment faster.

After enjoying the benefits of his magical equipment, in Suo Jia's opinion, although money could not raise a strong team, it definitely could not become strong without it either. This was why while training these girls, earning more money as soon as possible was the most important thing.

Only by starting this business and fully arming these fire wind warriors could he one day enter the Greater Trade Routes. As for right now, everything was dependent on money! To have money was the same thing as having equipment, and having equipment meant that having strength, as well as having faster cultivation. This was Suo Jia's current goal!

Early the next morning, the fire wind warriors left the White Villa. Once again, they left to bring back a fresh stock of Snow Lotus fruits. This Snow Lotus fruit grew in the northern arctics, and within the local area it was considered a rare and valuable specialty. The price of a single ounce of them was worth more than 10,000 gold, and there was no set price.

The Snow Lotus flower could be used for slow aging, and the Snow Lotus fruit could help recover spirit power. It was precisely because of these two wonderful features that their prices reached such an extraordinary level. Both the flower and the fruit were generally sold in grams, as few people dared to buy in kilograms.

There were many reasons why the group had specifically chosen this Snow Lotus flower. Suo Jia did not allow them to purchase this from locals, but rather wanted them to personally pick it from the arctic ice. This was done to force the fire wind warriors to face their poor resistances to the cold, giving their fire element battle qi's cultivation many benefits.

On the other hand, since they were personally picking the fruits, the original costs became zero. A single ounce of Snow Lotus fruit could sell for ten thousand; if they came back with 300 ounces, then the fruits of labor would provide each person 1,500,000.

The last aspect was that in the far north, although there were magical beasts inhabiting that area, they were all rather slow and sluggish. Even if they were to encounter some sort of dangerous situation, with the fire wind warriors' speeds, they could still safely escape. When considering the speed and strength of their team, they could gradually wear down and defeat their enemies.

It can be said that presently, picking these Snow Lotus fruits was the most suitable task for the fire wind warriors. Even though these tasks that were too difficult for more powerful warriors, the fire wind warriors could still handle these tasks because they possessed unique special abilities.

The fire arts' ability to resist cold, and the wind arts' ability to rapidly escape: these two abilities were truly indispensable for this mission. Even if one searched the entire world, one would only find that fire wind warriors possessed these traits. This was precisely why the price of the Snow Lotus fruit was so extraordinarily high.

Basically, if it were not the fire wind warriors sent on this mission, and

instead other element occupations had been sent, at the very least they would have to be more powerful by a couple times just to enter these arctics. How many individuals that had the ability to pick these Snow Lotus fruits, aside from the fire wind warriors, were there? Even if one was to assume that there were such people, how many of them would be willing to venture into such bitterly cold conditions for the sake of this cheap business?

Moreover, there was one more special fact about the Snow Lotus fruit. After picking it, it would become water after just a month, and lose all medicinal qualities. Only these fire wind warriors could quickly and efficiently pick and deliver these goods back to the White Villa, and see such shocking profits.

Leaving aside how rare the Snow Lotus fruit was and the fact that it couldn't be preserved for long, what made this fruit such an expensive luxury was because of its unique capability of being able to recover spirit power. It also had beauty and cosmetic properties.

Generally speaking, even the cities closest to the north would rarely carry this Snow Lotus fruit, let alone in Holy Light City. The truth is, although the unit price of the Snow Lotus fruit was ten thousand gold, there still had to be someone willing to sell it!

The most important point was still that although the Snow Lotus fruit was rare, as long as one possessed enough strength, it was not difficult to pick. Its numbers were plentiful as well; however, it could not be preserved. Moreover, these Snow Lotus fruits grew in a dangerous area, often surrounded by formidable magical beasts.

However regarding all of these difficulties, they were not anything the fire wind warriors couldn't handle. Within this special environment, not only were they able to develop their strength, but they could also earn a lot of money. In addition, these fire wind warriors could, upon picking these Snow Lotus fruits, immediately eat a number of them to not only offset some of the damages done to their skin, but also increase their spirit powers in order to enable them to run their battle qi smoother.

Of course, the Snow Lotus fruits had limited uses. Perhaps it would increase one's spirit power after the first time it's consumed, but after one eats it a hundred times, it unfortunately does not have any effect anymore. Aside from arduously training one's body, nothing else can be relied on to improve one's self permanently; they can only be used as temporary solutions!

On the third day of the fire wind warriors' journey to rush to the north, finally....Suo Jia managed to successfully summon the Glacial Armor for the first time. The so-called Glacial Armor that covered his body was only a few centimeters thick and it was completely made from ice. Its hardness depended on its temperature; the lower the temperature, the sturdier the Glacial Armor.

Although this was only the first time that Suo Jia had ever activated the magic, during the past month, he had already managed to achieve very high levels of strength and hardness for his Glacial Armor due to his training in the Ice and Snow Pact. Currently, it was at least no worse than leather armor. The most important factor was that leather armor had to be thrown away as soon as it broke, but the Glacial Armor could be repaired at any time. No matter how much damage was inflicted on the Glacial Armor, it could be instantly repaired. This was the most powerful aspect of the Glacial Armor.

Chapter 77: Visiting the Bazaar

At this point, Suo Jia had finally managed to securely set up his defensive system. With this Glacial Armor, any Wind Blades, Fireballs, or Rock Thorns could now be completely ignored. Aside from high-ranked magics and certain destruction spells, it would be very difficult for ordinary magics to injure Suo Jia through his Glacial Armor.

Although he had already learned how to use the Glacial Armor, Suo Jia did not dare slack off. He only had four months left to learn the Revolving Frozen Gas before the competition officially began. Revolving Frozen Gas was the most basic AOE spell of the water element, and the area of effect directly correlated with one's magic power.

Revolving Frozen Gas centered around the caster, releasing spirals of cold gas towards the enemy. This gas would then turn into a vortex, trapping those people inside and inducing frostbite all over the enemies' bodies. Not only did it have all of these effects, it also had a great slowing effect. If mastered, this spell could even completely freeze opponents solid!

However, to activate the Revolving Frozen Gas, one had to have extremely strong magical power. Otherwise, such a large scale spell could not be cast.

Two months passed in a flash. Suo Jia had still not managed to activate the Revolving Frozen Gas spell, even with the aid of the Faerie's Soul and Atlantis' Wisdom. Suo Jia knew, however, that he had almost grasped his goal. It would only take another month at most to reach his objective. As for the first-ranked magics, Suo Jia had already completely mastered them.

But more importantly, after two months of training, the Ice and Snow Pact had finally begun to show signs of new progress. The current Ice Sphere was already quite difficult to break; after colliding with the wall, it could easily be seen that the wall would sport a clear depression, and the Ice Sphere would still be completely intact afterwards. Both its strength

and hardness levels had been increased by quite a lot.

There were still 2 months left until the competition. The fire wind warriors that had previously gone to collect the Snow Lotus fruits would return soon. Although their trip was longer this time, the rewards they earned were plentiful. Suo Jia knew that he could now select and buy sets of equipment for each fire wind warrior.

While he was choosing equipment for the fire wind warriors, Suo Jia also needed to find some beneficial magic equipment that could increase the strength of his magic. The competition was starting in 2 months and for the sake of victory, temporarily relying on items was unavoidable.

The White Villa's rank and class increased during the past two months, and its income also increased wildly. The profits from the goods that the fire wind warriors brought were already worth tens of millions. Adding onto his own income from services, Suo Jia now had a wealth of 47,000,000 gold.

With money, he naturally gained confidence. He would no longer suffer experiences like when the store boss had yelled at him. Thus, early in the morning, he and the Sixth Sister once again left the White Villa to go to the market to browse around.

After learning her lesson last time, Sixth Sister had deeply felt that she had neglected her duties. Every day for the past few months, she had been circling the city, inspecting and improving her knowledge about all the businesses in Holy Light City. Now, although she did not dare say that she knew Holy Light City like the back of her hand, she was much more able than she had been 2 months ago. At the very least, she clearly knew the most appropriate places for various activities.

After hearing that the Young Master wanted to purchase some warrior equipment as well as mage equipment for improving attacks, Sixth Sister did not bring him to the magic shop they had visited last time. Instead, she brought him to Holy Light's open bazaar.

The open bazaar was a public business district that anyone could arrange vendor's booths in. As long as one paid a certain fee, he/she

could open vendor's booths here. Of course....the better the location, the more expensive its prices were.

The open bazaar occupied quite a large area. Although the exact dimensions were unknown, the boundaries stretched beyond what the eyes could see, and the space took up an entire four streets. The level of bustling liveliness it had was beyond imagination.

The open bazaar was split into 4 main sections: every-day use items, commerce merchandise, equipment, and seasonal clothing. Each section only allowed its respective type of items to be sold there and different businesses were not allowed to overstep their section's boundaries.

This time, Suo Jia's main objective was obviously the equipment section. With Sixth Sister in the lead, the two of them entered the bustling district. Seeing the surrounding vendor's booths that had been set up, Suo Jia immediately grew excited. The entire area was full of weapons and equipment. There were thousands of them, far surpassing the few the magic shop had had. Now he had much more choices.

With Sixth Sister accompanying him, Suo Jia leisurely walked around the vendor's booths. All types of weapons, armors, magic jewelry, and even some bizarre items were packed into each of the booths. Although there was no lack of quality goods, majority of them were normal items. What Suo Jia wanted to do was to choose the best weapons and equipment that he himself wanted from the seas of other weapons and equipment displayed.

Suo Jia did not want to buy any weapons. To him, the fire wind warriors' attack power and speed were already high enough. Even if these traits hadn't yet reached appropriate levels, they were not as important as defense was. Both wind elements and fire elements had weaker defenses, and could not be compared to water elements' or earth elements'. Thus, the first thing that had to be strengthened definitely had to be defense.

Unknowingly, time flew by. They looked around for the entire morning, and after buying a simple street snack to eat around noon, the two continued to stroll through the bazaar. However, despite their efforts,

they were still unable to find the things they wanted.

These weapons and equipment were mostly for girls, and while defense was one thing, being beautiful was another. Suo Jia didn't have the heart to make such young and beautiful girls dress up like men every day. Even if they had to hide their identities, it was still more reasonable to find some gender-neutral armors.

In the blink of an eye, the entire day had passed. At this point, Suo Jia's back and legs were beyond sore from all his walking, and yet he still hadn't found what he was looking for. Just as Suo Jia was thinking that the entire day had been a waste, a large ring of people attracted his attention.

Normally, if a vendor's booth had many people gathered around it, that meant the booth definitely had attractive items. Such items were also normally good quality items. With this in mind, Suo Jia pulled Sixth Sister and practically flew over to the booth.

After squeezing through the crowd with some difficulty, they saw a middle-aged man wearing a long red robe. He was currently sitting there with his eyes closed, there were only a few items on display. However, one of them had managed to attract Suo Jia's attention!

The item was a blue glove made of an unknown material. Not a single seam from its assembly could be seen from the glove's outer appearances alone. It seemed like the glove had been naturally created; it was both mysterious and strange, making Suo Jia unable to tear his gaze away from it.

However, what attracted everyone's attention was not this glove, but the flaming red greatsword next to the glove. It had a strange and extreme structure, and it gave off a very powerful feeling, especially the fiery red crystals embedded on the blade's sheath. It was obviously a mighty treasure.

Just as Suo Jia's attention was preoccupied by the precious blade, a fire warrior amongst the surrounding bystanders loudly shouted, "Hey! Vendor, I want this sword. How much is it?"

Hearing the other party's words, the vendor didn't even bother to open his eyes, and coldly said, "I've said this already. I'm only willing to exchange this sword, not sell it. My staff was destroyed while I was adventuring, so I need a staff. Unless you have a high quality staff, I will not sell this sword, no matter how much money you offer!"

"This..." Hearing the vendor's words, the fellow that had shouted out stuttered in reply. From the mage in the red robe's appearance, he seemed to be a magic lecturer. It would be difficult to find someone with a staff that would satisfy his expectations.

Among the 4 elements, the fire element magic had the strongest power, so fire mages had extremely high statuses. Fire staffs were beyond priceless, and it was extremely rare to see a good staff. Thus, whenever one appeared, everyone would fight over it like crazy.

Seeing everyone fall silent, the vendor sighed and said, "Everyone says Holy Light City is flourishing, however in my opinion, it's only average. Magic shops can't even buy decent staffs, and they can't be found in auctions either. It seems that this bazaar has absolutely no hope."

While speaking, the fire mage loudly declared, "Tomorrow morning, my group is just about to leave the city, and I desperately need a staff. Otherwise, there's not way I can continue adventuring. Therefore....I'll now greatly cut the price. As long as anyone has a Precious-ranked fire staff, I'm willing to exchange all the items in this booth for it!"

"Ya!" Hearing the vendor's words, everyone could not help but exclaim in shock. This fire elemental sword was an ideal-rank; just the price of it alone could not be any lower than a fire elemental staff of the same rank. This was also why everyone had gathered around it; fire elemental warriors and mages were equally valiant, and fire weapons and staffs were equally precious.

Hearing the vendor's words, Suo Jia finally returned to his senses. Suo Jia's eyes lit up as the vendor declared his new decision. It just so happened that he had the Ideal-ranked Vulcan's Roar, which was 2 ranks higher than the vendor's requirement. With this, he would finally be able

to get the blue glove!

Chapter 78: Interspatial Ring

The vendor's booth didn't have that many items. There were only 4 in total: the greatsword, the glove, a dagger, and a brand new longbow. Overall, it seemed that the bow's value was the lowest, while the greatsword's value was the highest. The glove's value could not be appraised, and the dagger was old and battered, appearing as if it had been picked up from who knows where.

Surveying the surrounding customers, the vendor continued, "This greatsword's value is already more than an Excellent-ranked mage staff's. Because high-ranked fire elemental staffs are rare, it is impossible to exchange this sword for an Ideal-ranked staff. Thus, as long as I manage to receive a Precious-ranked staff, I will already be quite lucky."

The vendor pointed at the glove and the dagger and said, "The glove and dagger were found when we excavated ancient ruins on an adventure. Their exact properties are unknown, and so they count as bonuses. However this bow is a good Power-ranked bow. No matter what, it's still worth some money."

At this point, the vendor waved his hand and said, "Alright, everything here right now combined can be exchanged for a Precious-ranked fire element staff. If anyone here has a better staff, I am willing to go to my companions for more items to exchange!"

Faced with the red clad mage's declaration, the people could not help but smile bitterly. No matter how much they felt this deal was worthwhile, if they didn't have anything in their possession, there was absolutely no way they could carry out the exchange!

While the red clad mage was shamelessly advertising, a warrior dressed in green armor strided over, and strongly pushed through the crowd. He loudly asked the mage, "Alright Sixth Brother, it's already time for us to gather. Hurry up and return, Boss is getting impatient!"

"Aye...." Helplessly sighing, the red clad mage began to clean up his stuff, and regretfully leave the booth. Although he had already lowered

his requirements, he still hadn't been able to make the exchange. It seemed he could only go to a magic shop to find a Power-ranked staff for now; it was better than nothing.

Seeing the red clad mage leave, Suo Jia dragged Sixth Sister with him to silently run after the mage. Only after they had left the bazaar did they quicken their pace, and chase after the two people in front of them.

"Mister Mage, please wait!" Having already guessed the Young Master's intention, Sixth Sister cried out in a melodious and clear voice to catch the two people's attentions.

Hearing the shout, the red clad mage and the green armored warrior stopped in their tracks and looked behind them in confusion. Having caught the two's attention, Suo Jia began to slow down as he gradually neared the red clad mage. Suo Jia then said in a low voice, "I have an Ideal-ranked fire elemental staff—Vulcan's Roar. If you want it, then bring your things to the White Villa to find me at 8 tonight." After he finished speaking, Suo Jia walked straight past the two people without any hesitation.

Suo Jia had not walked very far before his voice once again rang out, "Oh right, you should also know the value of Vulcan's Roar. Therefore, just the items that had been displayed at your booth aren't enough. If you bring some more items over tonight, I guarantee that I will offer you a fair price. I'm just like you; only looking to exchange, not to sell!" Suo Jia's figure walked further into the distance with Sixth Sister following behind. They quickly blended back into the stream of people, and disappeared from sight.

Although Suo Jia also couldn't confirm what the blue glove was and exactly what properties it had, Suo Jia intuitively felt that it was definitely something amazing. The outer appearance alone made the glove appear to be entirely carved out of wood, without any visible seams. They gave off the impression that it was made up of some sort of leather with a secret hidden inside it.

There was also that dagger. Although it looked beyond filthy, a single

glance could discern the fact that the dagger had already existed for many years. Despite this fact, the dagger had absolutely no signs of corrosion. How could it possibly be an ordinary artifact?

In regards to the fire elemental greatsword, Suo Jia did not hold much interest for it. No matter how precious it was, it was still a ranked item that could be bought for money. Thus, it was not uncommon in the slightest.

Waiting is always difficult to endure. With difficulty, Suo Jia finally managed to last up until 8pm. Just as the White Villa's customers had all left, a maid reported that there were some guests requesting entry at the door.

Suo Jia hurriedly ordered the maid to invite the guests into the living room. Soon afterwards...the mage in the red robe and the warrior in the green armor from earlier walked inside. Behind them followed a knight wearing silver armor!

As soon as he entered the room, the red clad mage impatiently asked, "Little fellow, do you really have Vulcan's Roar?"

Nodding in confirmation, Suo Jia smiled, "I definitely do have Vulcan's Roar. However, you must have the appropriate items to exchange for it. You should know that Vulcan's Roar is...."

Originally, Suo Jia just wanted to say that Vulcan's Roar was an Ideal-ranked staff, and far surpassed the red clad mage's original conditions. However, he hadn't imagined that before he had even finished speaking, the red clad mage excitedly cut him off, "Of course I know....although Vulcan's Roar is only an Ideal-ranked staff, it can increase the fire elements' power by 20% more than an ordinary staff can. The most important part is that Vulcan's Roar has a peak grade fire crystal embedded on it. The stronger the user's magic power, the better the effects displayed will be!"

"That...." Suo Jia stared at the red clad mage in a daze. He hadn't imagined that Vulcan's Roar would actually have this benefit as well. If the other party hadn't mentioned it, he really wouldn't have known.

While Suo Jia was surprised by the information, the red clad mage proudly continued, "In reality, Vulcan's Roar is only lacking in a special effect in comparison to Legendary-ranked magic equipment. In terms of auxiliary effects, it is 100% based on the user. The stronger one's magic power, the greater its supplementary effects. From this reasoning, if this staff is held by a formidable fire mage, it can be even stronger than a Legendary-ranked staff!"

"Eh...." After stuttering unintelligibly for a while, Suo Jia smiled bitterly, "I had thought I knew everything about this. I hadn't imagined that you also clearly knew about the staff as well. In that case, there's no need for me to waste my breath. Go ahead and take out the items you plan on exchanging. As long as they are appropriate, I will give you the staff!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the red clad mage opened the bag that he had been carrying on his back. Immediately....the large fire elemental greatsword, the glove, the dagger, and the longbow all appeared in front of him one after another.

Smiling, Suo Jia shook his head and said, "I don't need the bow. I'm not interested in anything that has a price. If you don't have anything else that catches my eye, I will not run the exchange."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the red clad mage stowed away the longbow, and then looked imploringly at the silver armored knight. Seeing the red clad mage's pleading gaze, the silver armored knight helplessly laughed bitterly, then reached into his pocket to pull out a very tiny box, throwing it towards Suo Jia.

As Suo Jia unconsciously caught the box, the knight helplessly said, "This is an Ideal-ranked magic ring. Although combined with the Inferno Blade, it may still not be enough to exchange for Vulcan's Roar, this is all we currently have."

Ignoring the knight's words, Suo Jia gently opened the box. Immediately...a simple and unadorned, but elegant ring appeared before him.

The ring seemed similar to a thimble. From its outer appearance, it was

completely mediocre, and it looked to be made of brass. Its surface was smooth and slippery; it was obvious with only a single glance that the ring was quite old. Besides from this, nothing else could be discerned about it.

Seeing Suo Jia's puzzled expression, the knight smiled, "Don't just look at its mediocre appearance. This isn't an ordinary object. Although it is not a Legendary-ranked magic ring, it is an interspatial ring made by Atom Alchemic Lab. It not only can contain a cubic meter volume's worth of objects, it can also materialize a Space Shield, which can resist any type of physical attacks once!"

"What!" Hearing the knight's words, Suo cried out in shock. This Atom Alchemic Lab was extremely famous, and was a world renowned laboratory a hundred years ago. This Atom Alchemic Lab rose to fame because of the interspatial ring, but at the same time, fell because of it too.

From creation to destruction, the Atom Alchemic Lab had a total of about 10,000 interspatial rings. Within that amount, most of them have already disappeared. In this world, there were currently only roughly several thousand left in existence. Although this ring was not a Legendary-ranked magic item, its usefulness was still extremely high!

Holding the brass ring in his hand, Suo Jia's eyes could not help but light up. Although it could only hold a cubic meter's worth of items, if each of the fire wind warriors had one, then it would save them much effort whenever they ran their commerce routes. In addition, the most important factor was that this ring could release a Space Shield. This was an absolute defense! Although the Space Shield could only resist a single attack every time it was used, it could be the life-saving straw at a critical moment.

Chapter 79: The Mass Exchange

While thinking, Suo Jia quietly closed the lid and quietly said, "This ring is truly not bad, however... right now, there are still too many of these rings in existence, and it is not yet worth trading the Vulcan's Roar for."

Speaking up to here, Suo Jia swept his gaze across several people before calmly saying, "Maybe you guys don't know this, but you can ask around here. This Vulcan's Roar has a value of 120,000,000 gold after being won at the auction. Your ring over here is not even worth 10,000,000 gold. If one took the risk of going to the trading union, you could find one for even a couple million."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the color of the knight's face changed, originally... he saw that Suo Jia was merely a small child and wanted to cheat him. He didn't expect, however, that although the little brat wasn't very old, he was extremely hard to fool.

While thinking, the knight smiled and replied, "Alright, then how about this, I'll just say things as they are. While we were adventuring this time, we stumbled upon the ruins of the Atom Alchemic Laboratory and found this interspatial ring. Now offer a price, with this knife as well as several rings, would you agree to trade?"

Hearing the knight's words, Suo Jia's eyes suddenly lit up. However soon after, Suo Jia calmed himself down and smiled at the knight. Suo Jia said flatly, "If it's like this, then I want to ask, how many of these rings do you have in total? If I am willing to offer a price for them, are you willing to sell them all to me?"

"En..." After contemplating for a bit, the silver knight resolutely said, "Either way, these are going to be sold, whether to you or someone else. How about this, we all need one to use ourselves. You have to understand that these things are simply too convenient for people who leave home year round."

After saying these things, the silver knight paused before continuing. "As long as your price can move our hearts, then we will sell them to

you.”

Hearing the knight’s words, Suo Jia had already thought of a number previously. Within their group, there was a earth elemental shield warrior and a light elemental knight. Although he could not see the other group members, there was no doubt that this fire elemental mage was their primary nuker. Just think about it, mage that exploded his own staff from using spells, what kind of powerful nuker was that?

In that case, the fire mage’s role became extremely important. The earth elemental shield warrior and the knight both had high defenses, and the knight was also skilled in healing. It was obvious that these were for the sake of putting up a resistance against magical beasts. Without the fire mage’s tyrannical attack power, they wouldn’t even be able to dream of killing powerful magical beasts within their lifetimes. They would naturally be unable to search for treasure as well.

It was precisely due to this reason that all the items gained had been given to the fire mage to exchange for a staff. The Vulcan’s Roar, to a fire mage, was even more powerful than Legendary-ranked equipment. It was extremely important for teamwork, and just with his attack alone, he could increase the group’s boldness by twofold; they would now be able to survey the places they had previously not dared to venture through.

Thinking up to here, Suo Jia calmly looked at the knight and said, “You should first say how many rings you have in total first. Also, how much are you willing to sell each ring for?”

“That...” After some hesitation, the knight furrowed his brows and said, “If we keep one each for ourselves, then there are 44 rings remaining. As for their selling prices, I hope that you can provide a starting value first.”

“Haha...” Hearing the knight’s words, Suo Jia could not help but laugh. He knew that the knight honestly didn’t know how much the rings were worth. The reason why he had asked Suo Jia to name an opening price was because the knight was afraid that he’d offer too low of a price.

After contemplating it for a while, Suo Jia smiled, “Currently, there are probably around 3000-4000 identical rings existing in the world. In that

case, we should calculate the price with something similar.”

After this, Suo Jia thought for a bit before continuing, “Let’s use the wind elemental Gale Ring as an example. It was also created at Atom Alchemical Labs, and there are also only 3000-4000 of them in existence right now. We can make a deal using its price as a reference. What do you think?”

The silver armor knight pondered over Suo Jia’s words for a bit, before resolutely replying, “No problem, this price is very reasonable. We are willing to accept it. In other words, you will buy each ring for 5,000,000 gold, right?”

Hearing the silver armor knight’s words, Suo Jia’s heart raced in excitement, and he felt as if it would jump out of his throat. In reality, Suo Jia’s idea was really stealing from them. Although Gale Rings really were created by Atom Alchemic Lab, and it was true that only 3000-4000 of them existed, Gale Rings were Gale Rings, and interspatial rings were interspatial rings. They were not the same thing at all.

If only 3000 pieces of dog shit were left in the world, they would still be dog shit, and would not be worth any money at all. However, if only 3000 gold ingots were left in the world, it would be a completely different story.

Especially when looking at usefulness, the interspatial ring was used much more often than the Gale Ring. Only people with an affinity to wind elements could use Gale Rings, but anyone could use interspatial rings.

While thinking this, Suo Jia put all his energy into repressing his excitement, and calmly said, “There are a total of 44 interspatial rings. If each one is 5,000,000 gold, then it would come to a total of 220,000,000 gold. Is this value correct?”

After some calculations, the silver armor knight and his companions dropped their jaws in shock, and trembling, the knight said, “God! Is it actually worth so much money? I couldn’t have ever imagined this.”

Seeing the group’s astonished expressions, Suo Jia smiled, “In that case, then I don’t need your Inferno Blade. This Inferno Blade’s value, if placed

in an auction, should sell for somewhere from 80,000,000-100,000,000 gold, right?

“Yes, yes, yes....” They nodded. This blade was definitely worth this much. In reality, if it was 80,000,000 gold, than it would’ve been sold at the bazaar earlier.

While thinking, Suo Jia gently lifted a finger to gesture at the maid to carry Vulcan’s Roar over, and she placed it on the table in front of them. Seeing Vulcan’s Roar, the red clad mage suddenly became so excited that he was gasping for breath. This was a high grade staff that every single fire mage desperately yearned for! God, it was something that one wouldn’t even exchange for a Legendary-ranked staff.

Seeing the fire mage’s excited expression, Suo Jia smiled, and pulled out four crystal cards that each represented 10,000,000 gold. He tossed them onto the table and said, “This is 40,000,000 gold. In addition to this, I will also give you Vulcan’s Roar. In return, you will give me 44 interspatial rings. Does that sound fair?”

“What!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the fellows cried out in shock. The silver armor knight angrily said, “What do you mean by this? Isn’t this staff only worth 120,000,000 gold? Even with the addition of 40,000,000 gold, you’re still missing 60,000,000 from the owed amount. This is too big of a difference!”

Hearing the opposite party’s words, Suo Jia remained calm and said, “This interspatial ring is not something only you guys own. If you refuse to accept the deal, then I can find someone else to exchange with. However, you guys should know that only one of this Vulcan’s Roar exists in the entire world. If you turn down this chance, you will not get another opportunity. I think....that you don’t need me to continue discussing this Vulcan’s Roar’s importance to a fire mage!”

“You....you....this is extortion!” The green armor warrior angrily replied to Suo Jia’s response.

“What? Extortion!” Hearing the green armor warrior’s accusation, Suo Jia stood up indignantly and shouted in anger, “You dare to say I’m guilty

of extortion? If you put it that way, then I won't give the 40,000,000 gold any more either; I'll just exchange that staff for your interspatial rings. You can go to the Commerce Union and tell them I'm extorting you. Just go ahead, I won't stop you...."

Seeing Suo Jia's furious expression, the silver armor also grew angry, and he waved his hand, "Ok, ok, ok, you think that we'd just do anything for that staff, right? Well, I will straight out refuse the exchange right this moment. Let's go!" Saying this, the silver armor knight turned around to leave.

Faced with the silver armor knight's actions, Suo Jia sneered, "Then I won't be seeing you off. I was trying to let you guys off lightly, but you dared to accuse me of extortion. Even if you beg me to exchange, I will no longer accept this deal. Please leave!" Saying this, Suo Jia huffed in anger as he sat back down, refusing to even glance at the three people.

Seeing Suo Jia's upset expression, the red clad mage was still unable to bear giving up Vulcan's Roar, and he tried to smile, "Look, how do I say this, even if business transactions fail, they shouldn't affect personal interactions. Everyone should stop letting this matter affect our relationships. In my opinion....we should properly discuss this again, let's just talk it over...."

Chapter 80: The Different Ring

“Discuss? What is there to discuss? Is it really necessary?” Suo Jia rudely responded to the red clad mage’s words.

Suo Jia sighed, turned to the red clad mage, and said, “Your boss is really too overbearing. Who says that it must be sold for the same amount I bought it for? Do you know what my circumstances were at that time?”

As he explained up to this point, Suo Jia unhappily glanced at the knight and continued, “I had to borrow the power of a person with strong status and position, and pressure everyone so that they wouldn’t dare to place bids against me. This is the only reason I was able to purchase it at such a low price. On what grounds do you request that I sell it to you for the same price?”

Suo Jia suddenly lifted his hand, and pointed at the green armored warrior, saying, “Alright, didn’t you say earlier that I was extorting you? Then let me ask you, as a water mage, why in the world would I ever buy a fire elemental staff?”

“This....” Faced with Suo Jia’s question, the green armored warrior stuttered for a while before blushing red as he replied, “Of course it’s to collect it and wait for it to appreciate in value, so that you can use it as exchange for equipment you need.”

Suo Jia nodded and loudly declared, “See, don’t you understand it clearly? Since you know that I have bought this for the sake of letting it appreciate in value, then why do you ask me to exchange it for the price that I had originally bought it for?”

Suo Jia then turned around to look at the red clad mage and said, “Mister Mage, I want you to answer this next question honestly. In your opinion....this Vulcan’s Roar, although it is not a Legendary-ranked staff, can it sell for over 220 million? Is it worth this price or not?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the red clad mage grew serious as he nodded his head firmly, “As long as one can afford it, I believe that....any fire mage wouldn’t dare to pass up on the chance of getting their hands on

this staff. Even 220 million gold may not be its true worth. In my heart, it is completely priceless, and is worth any amount of money.”

Suo Jia nodded in satisfaction at these words. Finally, he shifted his gaze towards the silver armored knight, the boss of the group, and said, “Mister Knight over there, do you understand now that I’m not extorting you? I can confidently tell you that once you have this staff, your group’s attack abilities will increase by multiple fold. Although this Vulcan’s Roar is not a Legendary-ranked staff, to this Mister Mage, the effects of this staff are even more powerful than a Legendary-ranked magical equipment. With this staff, even if you guys went to the Greater Trade Routes, your group’s attack abilities can already be qualified as top ranked!”

“The Greater Trade Routes!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the silver armored knight’s eyes burned passionately. The Greater Trade Routes was the paradise that every warrior dreamed of.

Smiling at the knight, Suo Jia calmly said, “If you bring this staff onto the Greater Trade Routes, only Epic-ranked equipment sets would be able to hold a candle to it. I ask of you, do you still think that a staff this powerful is not even worth 220 million?”

The knight swallowed hard with difficulty. He understood that what the brat was saying was correct. Although it was expensive, owning this staff would allow his group’s attack power to be immediately increased at an exponential level. Moreover, he would no longer have to worry over the mage’s weapons in the future. As long as his other companions managed to get their hands on some ranked weapons and equipment, they would be able to wreak havoc anywhere, even if it was the Greater Trade Routes!

“Alright...” After thinking of all this, the knight said resolutely, “In that case, I won’t say any more about this. Just use this staff alone in exchange for the 44 interspatial rings.”

“Haha....” Smiling, Suo Jia gently tossed the four crystal cards back onto the table, and laughed, “That’s right, everything’s in good faith. I’m honestly very interested in your rings, so I don’t mind giving you an additional 40 million out of amiability.”

Seeing that Suo Jia actually tossed over the 40 million again, the knight could not help but be surprised. Although he did not say it out loud, he internally now admired Suo Jia. Suo Jia clearly didn't have to hand over any money, and yet he still did. This was extremely generous of him, and it really made him blush, as he had realized the shame of his previous actions.

The deal was quickly completed. The 44 interspatial rings, as well as the mysterious blue glove and the dirty dagger were exchanged for Vulcan's Roar and 40 million gold. Both parties were very satisfied by this deal, and the knight inwardly decided that in the future, if they ever found any good items, they would definitely be brought back here for Suo Jia to look over them first. This little fellow, although he was still young, he had quite good vision. For the sake of keeping others' interests in mind and upholding fairness, he was willing to pay large sums of money. Such a good client could only be found here.

After the deal had been completed, Suo Jia invited the three to a sumptuous midnight snack. Only after this, were they seen off. The three of them had all agreed with Suo Jia that the next time the group discovered any good items, they would definitely bring them to Suo Jia first. Any high quality items would be prioritized for Suo Jia to purchase.

As he watched the three figures gradually fade away into the distance, Suo Jia smiled. Actually....the reason he had given them that 40 million was to give them a peace of mind. He had already stolen quite a bit from them and couldn't afford to further swindle them anymore; it was difficult for everyone.

This interspatial ring was incomparable to the Gale Ring. If the interspatial ring was brought to an auction, the starting price would have to be at least 10 million. However, nobody would ever sell such a useful item in an auction. That was why Suo Jia had cheated them in the exchange with the idea of buying them at a Gale Ring's price. In reality, these interspatial rings' value was something that nobody could determine, unless they were really brought before an auction for a thorough inspection.

Suo Jia returned to his room and dumped all 44 interspatial rings on the table. Seeing the table covered with rings, Suo Jia could not help but sigh in admiration. These 44 rings were worth at least 440 million. However, even if someone offered 1 billion for them, Suo Jia would not sell them. These items were too precious; only idiots would give them away.

“Hm” As Suo Jia flipped through the rings, he suddenly frowned. He quickly took out one of the rings from the pile and held it up to his eye to inspect it more closely. The more he looked at it, the more he felt that there was something a bit off. Why was this?

It wasn't that the ring was fake. If such an item were fake, it wouldn't have magic power at all, and could be sensed as soon as it was touched. Suo Jia had already tested all of them earlier before he had purchased them; they were definitely all interspatial rings.

However, no matter how much he looked at the special one in his hands, he couldn't deny the fact that it seemed different from the others! Although it was also made of bronze like the others, the ring was also covered with strange vein lines. More importantly, there was a tiny gem embedded in it!

Suo Jia suspiciously placed the ring on his finger, and channeled his spirit power into the ring to further inspect it. It actually would've been better if he hadn't inspected it. After he had finished, Suo Jia could not help but be dazed as he continued to stare at the ring on his finger.

Normally, there was only a cubic meter's worth of space within an interspatial ring. However, Suo Jia was dumbstruck as he discovered that within this interspatial ring, there was approximately 10 cubic meters worth of space!

Suo Jia swallowed hard in excitement. He gathered his spirit power, and then activated the Space Shield within the ring. Suddenly....a shapeless Space Shield quickly materialized in front of Suo Jia. Although it was both colorless and amorphous, Suo Jia clearly felt its existence and form with his spirit.

The Space Shield was about 1 meter in diameter, which was no different

from any other ring's Space Shield. Testing it with one attack, the Space Shield immediately dispersed. At the same time, the attack was swallowed by the Space Shield.

Suo Jia furrowed his brows in suspicion. Could it really be that....this interspatial ring only had a larger volume than the other rings, while its Space Shield's strength remained the same?

He doubtfully switched to another interspatial ring and tested it. As expected, the result was the same, or at the very least Suo Jia hadn't sensed any other differences. Unable to figure out the reasoning, Suo Jia wore both, one on each hand, and activated both Space Shields to compare them side by side. Suo Jia believed that there definitely had to be a difference.

Soon, Suo Jia's test showed results. The average interspatial ring could only materialize 3 Space Shields in succession before its ability to do so would temporarily disappear. However, the strange interspatial ring could materialize dozens of Space Shields in succession. Although he really wanted to test exactly how many could be released before its cool down period, Suo Jia had used up all of his spirit power and was no longer able to materialize a new Space Shield.

Although the Space Shield was invisible and incorporeal, it provided an absolute defense. No matter whether it was a slash from a sword in close quarters range, or whether it was a magic attack from a long distance range, it would completely shield against it a single time. After that one time, the Space Shield would immediately disappear. If one wanted to use it again, one would have to materialize it once more.

In terms of the average interspatial ring, the ring's abilities could only support 3 Space Shields. After all 3 were activated, a couple of minutes were required to restore the shield. However, Suo Jia's strange ring seemed to be able to materialize Space Shields endlessly; as long as one had enough spirit power, one could keep releasing the shields.

Looking at the strange ring in his hand, Suo Jia knew that with this ability alone, this ring was definitely qualified to be Legendary-ranked.

Such an amazing ring obviously couldn't be handed to others. Suo Jia immediately slipped it onto his own finger; he refused to part with it for the rest of his life.

Chapter 81: The Glove's New Use (Part 1)

After he had obtained this strange ring, Suo Jia carefully looked over each ring again with eyes holding insatiable greed. In order to make sure that he wouldn't be wasting any good things, he tried them one by one until he made sure that none of these were as awesome as that strange one. Only after that did he gather all the rings with a hint of disappointment.

In regards to the interspatial ring, Suo Jia already had a solid understanding of it. The shield that released from the interspatial ring could unconditionally block a single attack from either the front or the back. Also, the back of the shield was where the entrance to the storage area was located. If one wanted to store anything, then the items would be placed in from this entrance.

Of course, the interspatial ring was not without certain flaws. The Space Shield could only manifest itself for three seconds, and it was also only usable for a single attack. It was impossible to use the Space Shield as if it were a regular shield, as it did not last that long. Only during that instant before an attack would hit, and only during that most opportune moment would it be the appropriate time to activate it.

However, just this alone was already very amazing. An absolute defense against any attack; this was something that every warrior yearned for in their dreams. Although utilizing the Space Shield required quite a bit of spirit power, and warriors might not even be able to use it many times if at all, Suo Jia believed that this small ring's life preserving ability would definitely save one's life several times.

As for the remaining 43 interspatial rings, he placed them all within this interspatial space. Only in here would they remain the safest, because even if someone else obtained this ring, they would have no way of retrieving the items stored within. Different types of spirit power would create different spatial areas. Once these items were placed within this ring, unless one personally retrieved them, there was no way of getting them out!

After looking over the rings, Suo Jia turned his attention over to the blue glove. With the glove in his hands, Suo Jia could not feel any weight. He gently rubbed his hands together, and the glove felt like cotton; exactly what type of material was this made out of? What made it so strange?

Frowning, Suo Jia gently put on the glove. Although the glove wasn't that large, it was really elastic. On Suo Jia's hand, it actually fit so well to the point where it didn't even feel like he was wearing a glove!

Slightly waving his right hand, Suo Jia was surprised to find that although the glove covered his entire hand, it was as if it didn't even exist. Suo Jia could actually feel the wind gliding past the skin on his hands.

This right glove was pale blue in color, and its surface was both extremely thin and smooth. Even if it was tightly gripped in one's hand, one wouldn't be able to feel its physical existence. It was both soft and light, and was beyond mysterious.

Suo Jia picked up a pair of scissors on the table and pressed the sharp end against the glove's fabric, wanting to test its durability. However, he hadn't imagined that after only a gentle press of the scissors against the glove, the blue fabric would tear apart.

Seeing this, Suo Jia frantically removed the scissors. Regretfully, he looked at the glove; however, Suo Jia was puzzled to discover that he couldn't find the hole that he had just made. The entire glove was still completely intact!

In order to confirm his suspicions, Suo Jia tried it a few more times, resulting in no changes at all. Suo Jia could thus confirm that this glove didn't have any defensive properties whatsoever. Just like water, it couldn't resist any penetrating attacks from sharp weapons. Even more similarly, once the sharp weapon was removed, it would immediately return to its original condition.

"This...." Looking at the blue glove, Suo Jia was completely at a loss. He really couldn't think of exactly how he was supposed to make use of a glove like this. It had absolutely no defensive abilities; it really was just like a layer of water that covered his hand.

After some contemplation, Suo Jia lifted his right hand, and drew a magic spell array in the air. Moisture Technique, Swamp Technique, Ice Sphere Technique, and Glacial Armor, Suo Jia had activated each of the magics he had mastered, yet he didn't discover any differences.

Shaking his head in doubt, Suo Jia finally gave up on trying to figure it out. This glove had a mysterious, instantaneous recovery ability, but aside from this, it was extremely normal. Even if it hid a deeper secret, it seemed that he wouldn't be able to discover it at this moment.

As he temporarily pushed it to the back of his mind, Suo Jia shifted his gaze towards the last item. He could not help but frown as he looked at the dirty dagger on the table. Although the dagger didn't have a hint of rust, it was caked with mud. It was very obvious that since it had first been dug up, nobody had ever bothered to clean it.

Suo Jia ordered a maid to bring over a basin of water. After he carefully cleaned the dagger and wiped dry any traces of water on it, finally....Suo Jia saw the dagger's original appearance.

This completely normal dagger had an extremely thin and glossy outer appearance. Although it seemed to have been sanded, it didn't reflect any light at all.

The dagger's surface was completely covered in strange glyphs. Aside from this, the dagger had no other strange points. Even its form was extremely ordinary, exactly the same as any other dagger. It was obvious that this weapon was not Legendary-ranked or higher; at most, it was only Ideal-ranked.

Puzzledly holding the dagger in his hands, Suo Jia could not help but let out a flash from his eyes. It was comfortable, really comfortable. Although the handle did not seem particularly special on the outside, what was surprising was that when he held it in his hands, it was extremely snug. Suo Jia had the misconception that when he held the dagger, his entire right arm seemed to be one with the dagger.

Gently waving it around, the 'one with the blade' feeling became more and more prominent. Looking at it right now, it seemed quite ordinary, as

it was just a plain normal dagger, but... he didn't know exactly why but he felt that that was not all there was to it. He thought that there was some aspect that he was missing and that there was still something about this dagger that made it differ from others.

Suspicious, Suo Jia waved the dagger around a couple more times. Other than the 'one with the blade' feeling, he really did not notice any other difference. Filled with doubt, Suo Jia picked up the fruit knife on the table and slashed a few times in the air.

"Wrong!" Suo Jia clearly felt the difference in comfort. In addition to the comfort, as well as the 'one with the blade' feeling, Suo Jia knew that there had to be one additional effect. However, Suo Jia could not find the right words to explain it.

Continuously trying a few more times, Suo Jia's entire body violently shook and stood there dumbfounded. After comparing it back and forth a few times, Suo Jia finally realized what made this dagger so special!

Chapter 82: The Glove's New Use (Part 2)

Before this, Suo Jia had discovered a total of three unique aspects about this dagger. The first was how comfortable it was to use, the second was its 'one with the blade' feeling, and the third was that it didn't reflect light. However, Suo Jia had finally discovered the dagger's greatest secret – its ability to completely suppress its aura!

When he waved this dagger, for some unknown reason, it made absolutely no sound. Even a fruit knife's blade, which normally would stay silent, would have to generate some type of sound when brandished vigorously. However, this dagger seemed to completely conceal all sounds.

Suo Jia was certain that this dagger was definitely not a common object. Because it was so comfortable to use, it made the dagger easier to control. The 'one with the blade' feeling allowed the user to bring out more of its strength and inflict greater damage. The lack of reflection made it impossible for the enemy to detect the weapon because of its glint in the light.

As for its ability to suppress its aura, this was the most extraordinary part of all. When Suo Jia used it, there wasn't much use in this characteristic. However, if a thief used it, it would be a completely different story. Because thieves are proficient in concealment skills, they could completely hide their body's presence until the moment they attacked.

However, with this dagger, no matter what kind of attack is used, the user wouldn't generate a single sound. As long as they concealed their bloodlust, then their victim would have absolutely no clue how they died.

This dagger seemed entirely normal to the average person, and had absolutely no use to them. However, if this dagger ended up in the hands of a thief, this would become an irreplaceable Divine artifact!

The dagger was definitely not a Legendary-ranked item; it wasn't even an Ideal-ranked one. However it was very clear that this was definitely specially created by some thief ancestor based on the unique abilities of a

thief. This dagger pretty much existed for the sake of thieves.

In this world, only a few geniuses could have the opportunity to become a warrior or mage. Majority of the people could only choose to become an adventurer or a thief. By experiencing endless battles, they would be able comprehend their own battle techniques.

In terms of numbers, the thief population was the greatest. Even the combined total of mages and warriors couldn't even reach half of the number of thieves that exist. A thief's weapons and equipment prices were also imbalanced.

The average weapons and equipment used by thieves had little value. However, once a high grade thief equipment appeared, its price would be beyond what people could ever imagine.

Since there were more clients, all thief weapons and equipment were overused, and were used to their maximum potential in their line of work. However, there were very few good items. The polarization between the two ends were extreme; in the entire market, 99 would be trash, and the remaining 1 would be a treasure that people would smash others' heads for.

Thieves strongly value ancestral history. For a thief, it is highly possible that his/her family has been in the business for 8 generations. Thus, all weapons and equipment were passed down generation after generation; very few originate from an outer source. That's why the good items in the realm of thieves are pretty much all held by a few thief families that have longer histories. People outside of these families were rarely able to see these items.

However, just because it was rare, didn't mean that it wasn't impossible to encounter them. These thief weapons that had left behind legacies in history could perhaps be unearthed from other areas, and thus have the chance to appear in the market. These items were fought over by all thief families.

The thief occupation didn't have powerful combat abilities, only proficient abilities in concealment. It could be said that their strength

had concealment as its base. Their attack and defense was entirely dependent on equipment. Without any equipment, they had virtually no ability to attack or defend at all.

Perhaps a thief would be able to kill a mere chicken with a fruit knife. However, with a dragon-slaughtering dagger, the thief would easily be able to kill dragons. This was the extent of a thief's dependence on weapons and equipment.

Historically, people have always thought of thieves the same way; when they are faced with a defenseless enemy, a perfect thief can conceal themselves in the shadows and brandish a deadly sharp blade to fell a great dragon with absolutely no preparation!

Suo Jia began to tremble in excitement as he looked at the dagger in his hand. Of course, he wasn't getting excited from nothing. In this world, the thieves' occupation had the most treasures. Average, minor thieves put aside, which one of the ancestral and influential thief families didn't have a chestful of quality items?

It has to be pointed out that no matter whether it's a magical beast egg or the various items sold in auctions, since ancient times, majority of these items were stolen by thieves, or treasure hunters from magical beast lairs. There were many places and many things that only thieves and treasure hunters could enter to gain such items. Any other occupation, no matter how valiant they are, can only look on powerlessly from the sidelines.

For example, the Holy Light Emperor's crown was an Epic-ranked item that had been stolen by a thief from a dragon's lair without 12 Black Dragons noticing. If it had been any other occupation, even if it were an Epic-ranked mage and warrior combined, they would definitely be unable to fight against 12 Black Dragons!

As Suo Jia looked at the dagger in his hands, he knew that this dagger was beyond important to a thief. It could increase their control over weapons, as well as their attack abilities and damage output. It also didn't reflect any light. Most importantly, it could eliminate any sounds; when

used to steal, it was impossible for one to do anything to prevent it!

However, Suo Jia knew that to a thief, a dagger's sharpness was extremely important as well. If a thief was given a wooden blade, then how could he possibly kill a thick-skinned magical beast? Not only would the skin be impenetrable, the dagger would break as well. If this is the case, then what use would amazing concealment abilities be?

Closely examining the blade of the dagger, Suo Jia couldn't help but frown. It was no good....it seemed that this dagger was not sharp at all. It was completely blunt. After some tests, he concluded that it even had difficulty cutting through a wooden chopstick. This.....

Shaking his head in disappointment, Suo Jia tried to cut the table with the dagger's sharp point. In the end, it made Suo Jia feel more despair. Although it was still somewhat sharp, it was no different from a normal dagger. With Suo Jia's power, it couldn't cut through the 1 centimeter thick table at all.

Looking at the dusky dagger in his hand, Suo Jia could not help but inwardly feel regret. Although this dagger had many mystical abilities, it wasn't very sharp. This made the dagger extremely disappointing. If it were only a bit sharper, this dagger would be a completely different story; its value would be immeasurable.

Wait!

Amidst his disappointment, Suo Jia's eyes lit up as he thought of a possibility. Although....the dagger itself wasn't sharp, what if it were activated along with battle qi?

Suo Jia knew that many weapons were not originally sharp; only after imbuing it with battle qi, would any results show. In reality, most warriors' weapons were the same. After imbuing battle qi into their weapons, they would be able to completely overcome any obstacle. Without the battle qi, it was only a blunt blade.

While thinking of this, it raised Suo Jia's last trace of hope. Unfortunately....Suo Jia didn't have battle qi; he only had magic power, and magic power couldn't be used to drive warrior weapons. Magic power

could only drive magic staffs.

Helpless throwing the dagger into the interspatial ring. He knew that if he wanted to see if the dagger could be driven by battle qi, he'd had to wait for the fire wind warriors to rush back. They were all able to use battle qi!

Suo Jia stood up, and looked outside. The sky had already begun to darken. Not daring to delay any longer, Suo Jia quickly left the small office room, and rushed over to the underwater training area. No matter what, he couldn't abandon his training.

Soon after, Suo Jia had reached the training area. He first practices the Moisture, Swamp, Ice Sphere, and the Glacial Armor Techniques. After he had finished warming up, he began to train in the Ice and Snow Pact. This was of the utmost importance.

The Ice and Snow Pact was really a method using the heart to combine existences. On the one hand, it used the subjective consciousness to sense, and on the other hand, it used the hands to control the ice's spirits. While training, it seemed that there was an ash-blue cold stream constantly rising and spiraling around between his hands.

Just like the fire wind warriors, although Suo Jia trained in the ice elements, he still had to endure the attack of the frigid air. Ice and fire was similar; both were merciless, and didn't differentiate friend from foe. No matter whether it was the caster or the enemy, both suffered from the same attack. You can control fire, but the fire will still burn you. You can control ice, but the ice will still freeze you!

It was precisely for this reason that training the Ice and Snow Pact was such a painful process. The lower the temperature, the more pain one had to endure. The pain of such frigidness was something that only others who had experienced it would be able to understand.

While training the Ice and Snow Pact, Suo Jia had tossed the cold stream back and forth between his hands. After wearing the blue glove, Suo Jia was delighted to discover that although it had no defensive capabilities, this glove could completely isolate the coldness. His right hand wearing

the glove couldn't feel that bone-chilling coldness of the stream.

In his delight, Suo Jia no longer tossed the stream back to his left hand, and kept it jumping around on his right hand. After a while, the bright blue ice stream began to leap up like a flame. Yet Suo Jia was completely unable to feel the pain of its frigidness.

“Could it be....that blocking temperature is the glove's greatest characteristic? If it's like this, then to those that train the Ice and Snow Pact, this is an absolute treasure!” Suo Jia thought ecstatically.

Lightly prodding the icy flame, and putting all of his effort into sensing the ice's spirits, Suo Jia became completely absorbed into it. Once the coldness had stopped attacking Suo Jia, he had finally wholeheartedly connected with the ice spirits.

Ice spirits were really just a different form of ice element. People said that ice was sleeping water, and the ice spirits were really just uncommunicative water elements. Although the two had different names, in reality, ice and water were the same substance, just with different forms.

In other words, water was an awake person, while ice was a sleeping person. Where the exact differences were could only be understood through the Ice and Snow Pact. Once one was able to completely discern the exact differences between the two forms, then the peak of training in the Ice and Snow Pact had been reached.

Chapter 83: The Relationship Between Friends (Part 1)

For the remaining few days, Suo Jia focused on cultivating the Ice and Snow Pact. Under the protection of the blue glove, Suo Jia was able to cultivate for longer periods of time and gain even better results. Although it had only been a couple days' worth of time, the results obtained were not easily achievable within a week using his previous training method.

Finally, the travel worn fire wind warriors finally arrived home. Although the expressions on their faces were awfully exhausted, their eyes glowed even more brightly. Suo Jia knew that on this trip, the girls ate quite a few Snow Lotus fruits. Otherwise, there was no way they could have improved so much!

These girls were directly welcomed into the underwater training area, and right when they entered, one of the girls excitedly said, "Mr. Suo Jia, this time we made quite the harvest!" While speaking, all of the girls placed their packages on the floor.

Looking at each of the abnormally large packages, Suo Jia could not help but secretly admire them. These packages were about twice the size of their normal packages! The contents would most likely also be double of what they used to be; it seemed like... in order to earn more money, these girls really risked a lot!

While thinking, that girl continued, "For the sake of delivering a bit more this time, we increased the package weight by 25kg. We really made a fortune this time, haha..."

Looking at the girls who had tired faces yet unusually excited spirits, Suo Jia sorrowfully said, "You girls, seriously. Why did you girls do so much? Although you girls need to cultivate, there's still no need to go too far."

"Hehe..." Hearing Suo Jia's words, the girls embarrassingly smile, and began to explain. "We also originally did not decide to return with so

much, however there were too many Snow Lotus fruits. We accidentally picked too much, but didn't want to waste any so..."

Looking at the group of silly girls, Suo Jia helplessly shook his head. How could there be too many Snow Lotus fruits? The main reason was that these Snow Lotus fruits were too precious and uprooting them did not take too much work. This was the reason why the girls picked up too many.

As a matter of fact, gathering the Snow Lotus fruits was not too difficult, the main thing was that the location was simply too dangerous. In addition, there were magical beasts defending the area. If these conditions could be cleared, then besides the factor of time, you could pick as much as you wanted to.

Right when Suo Jia was pondering over this, the girls excitedly said, "Mr. Suo Jia, this time we returned with a total of 900kg. This should sell for a lot of money right?"

"This..." Hesitantly looking at the girls in front of him, Suo Jia knew that during these past two months, other than the two weeks leaving and returning, they picked for nearly half a month. How could things earned with such difficulty not be worth a lot of money?

The only thing was that these girls were simply asking for too much. Since they came back with approximately a ton of the Snow Lotus fruit, this was simply too f*cking outrageous! Others sold the Snow Lotus fruit in ounces, but they really did it this time, they were now talking in terms of a ton!

Faced with so many Snow Lotus fruits, Suo Jia was put in a difficult situation. The rarer it was, the greater its value. Now that they came back with so much this time, how was he supposed to sell this? While he was helplessly considering this, Suo Jia could only send someone to find Eldest Sister and see if she had some solution.

Soon after, Eldest Sister rushed here. Seeing the three packages of Snow Lotus fruits, Eldest Sister also helplessly smiled bitterly. This was completely different from the lychee which everyone could eat as if they

were just another fruit. This was something sold in ounces, and a single ounce was something that was worth 10,000 gold. In addition, this was something without a market price. Now that there was a ton at their disposal, how would one sell it?

Thinking over this for quite a while with furrowing brows, Eldest sister said, "There's no way around it. Just by relying on the White Villa, there's no way we can get rid of all these high quality goods. We must think of other ways."

After pondering for quite a while, Eldest Sister's eyes suddenly lit up and excitedly said, "Young Master, how about we remove a small section of the perimeter wall that is facing the street, and set up a highest grade shop?"

"En?" Furrowing his brows in confusion, Suo Jia was puzzled, and questioned Eldest Sister. "I did not really understand what you just said. Can you be a bit more specific?"

"En..." After pondering for a while, Eldest Sister confidently said, "Let's open up a professional store, one that especially sells food and medicine that are good for cultivation. This way, there is no need for reception, and we could also quickly sell the items that these girls deliver back. We can kill two birds with one stone!"

Speaking until here, Eldest Sister smiled and continued, "The location of our White Villa is very good; it's near the main street. There are too many places that don't fully exploit their geographical advantages, which is too unfortunate. This is Holy Light City's liveliest area. No matter what kind of shop is opened, it will always have a stable income."

"Of course it's possible, but what about these Snow Lotus fruits? They can't wait for the day it takes to construct a shop!" Suo Jia frowned at Eldest Sister's words.

At this, Eldest Sister also knit her brows. These Snow Lotus fruits could at most be preserved for a weekend. However, even if the shop was set up within a week, there was no time to advertise it.

It was impossible for the White Villa itself to get rid of the fruits; if they

were sold by 0.5kg, there were 900 kg worth of fruits. Even if the customers were extremely wealthy and could eat a lot, if each person ate 0.5kg, they'd still need 1800 customers. This was an impossible feat.

After contemplating for a long time, Eldest Sister helplessly said, "I also cannot think of any better idea. For the sake of urgency, if you don't want to see those Snow Lotus fruits go to waste, you can only go to Emma and see if she has any ideas."

Eldest Sister smiled and shook her head as she persuaded, "You are always too afraid to owe others, and refuse to ask favors from people. If you do so, then others won't ask you for favors either, and your relationships will stay distant. How could that even be considered a relationship at that point? Relationships are built through communication. Owing people things is not anything scary; as long as you return them, it's fine."

Eldest Sister paused for a bit then continued, "Everyone says that walking down a path with more friends is always better. If you need any help, then you can just get aid from your friends, as long as you also offer to help when they are in need. With exchanges like these, everyone becomes more intimate with each other."

Conflicted, Suo Jia scratched his head as he bitterly smiled, "I know, you always have reasons; I can't argue against you. Either way, the Snow Lotus fruits were already shipped here, so there's no way I can just watch them waste away. Otherwise, it'd really be a shame. Putting aside the rarity of the Snow Lotus fruits, this was gained from everyone risking their lives on an expenditure. They went through a lot to bring it all back. No matter what, even if I have to sacrifice face, I still need to go and request for help!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, Eldest Sister didn't react. She was pleased at Suo Jia's maturity, however the group of fire wind warriors that had a deep mutual understanding with Suo Jia, were far more touched by his actions.

The fire wind warriors understood Suo Jia too well. They were afraid of

other people owing them, and also didn't want to owe others either. Back when they had begged for Suo Jia to help them, they had to spend a lot of effort into doing so. In reality, if he had a choice, Suo Jia would definitely not ask for help. However, for the sake of making sure the girls' efforts to ship the fruits weren't in vain, he had no choice but to request for aid right now.

While all the girls were silently moved by this, Eldest Sister laughed, "Oh Suo Jia, Emma just happens to be at the White Villa. She wants to meet with you. When you see her later, you can tell her about this situation at the same time."

Eldest Sister paused slightly here, then smiled and said, "You don't have to look that needy. This doesn't really count as asking for a favor; a merchandise so high in demand like this will definitely benefit Emma's family too. Everyone would just be working together. You can be bold and forceful when you speak to her; even if it doesn't work, it's not too big of a deal. We can come up with our own ideas to resolve this issue. It's just that we would definitely suffer from losses in terms of costs that way."

Quietly standing up, Suo Jia sighed deeply as he said, "Alright, you should lead these girls to go rest. I'll go meet Emma right now. I believe that as long as I bring it up, she will definitely agree to help." Suo Jia resolutely turned around, and walked out of the door.

"Brother Suo Jia, Emma's here!" A few minutes later, as soon as Suo Jia had entered the White Villa, he heard Emma's upbeat voice ring out.

Looking towards the direction where the sound came from, he saw Emma sitting on a tall stool, as she waved at him with a happy expression. Seeing the innocent and adorable Emma, Suo Jia organized his thoughts, and slowly walked towards her.

Emma sat in the corner of the Villa. On the table in front of her was a large plate of fruit. Although this girl had successfully lost weight, by relying on Suo Jia, she hadn't dieted at all. Just as before, she continued to eat heartily, and her mouth was never empty.

She casually reached out her hand to stuff a grape into her mouth, and

her eyes closed in contentment. Her small fists were tightly gripped together, giving Emma an adorable appearance that people could not help but smile at. After a while, Emma opened her eyes, and sincerely said to Suo Jia, "I have to tell you, Emma recently got fatter again. You'll need to help treat Emma again."

Emma's appearance had changed, as well as her personality. The most important part was that even the way she spoke had become childish, making it impossible for people to refuse any of her requests.

Suo Jia smiled and nodded, before he replied calmly, "That's not a problem. Since I've already made a promise with you, I'll definitely be willing to help treat you at any moment of time. However....before I begin working, I need to talk to you about something."

Chapter 84: The Relationship Between Friends (Part 2)

Hearing that Suo Jia needed her for something, Emma stopped her hand from grabbing more grapes and replied in confusion, “You have something to talk to me about? What kind of thing, tell me about it.”

Seeing Emma’s cute smiling face, Suo Jia opened his mouth and said, “Recently, I assigned some people to bring back some Snow Lotus fruits. I didn’t expect to end up with so much, and the White Villa is incapable of consuming all of it. That’s why I wanted to ask you to find a way to sell these Snow Lotus fruits through other market channels.

“Snow Lotus fruits!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Emma replied in surprise, “You actually have Snow Lotus fruits! Where is it... quickly bring it over here, I want to eat some...”

Smiling, Suo Jia shook his head. This girl couldn’t say even three words without mentioning ‘eat’. She was no longer afraid of becoming the Shar Pei woman she used to be. With Suo Jia by her side, even if she wanted to change back, it’d be impossible.

While thinking, Suo Jia smiled and said, “Rest assured, there is more than enough Snow Lotus fruits to go around. A single person would not be able to eat it all no matter how hard they tried. If you want to eat some, then eat to your heart’s content. However the thing regarding these Snow Lotus fruits...”

Looking at Suo Jia in confusion, Emma could not understand the situation. “These Snow Lotus fruits are so precious, people could only fear that there aren’t enough. How could anyone have excess? How much do you have, I’ll buy it all!

Without batting an eyelid, Suo Jia glanced at Emma and said, “These are words you said yourself. Actually, it’s not that much, just 900 kg. Do you really want to purchase them all?”

“Agah!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Emma suddenly dropped her jaw in

disbelief and said, "How could you have so much? Could it be that you grow these things in your backyard?"

Of course, Emma was only joking. While she said this, she knit her brows as she contemplated the issue. After a while, Emma finally said, "I can't eat so many Snow Lotus fruits. How about this: place these Snow Lotus fruits under a shop with my father's name behind it. However much they sell for, I'll pay it back to you. What do you think?"

"En..." After pondering for a moment, Suo Jia flatly said, "That works too, however... we are merely selling on behalf of others, so the actual seller should take a portion of the income that they deem is appropriate."

"Aiya, what kind of relationship do we have? If you sell things at our place, how could we take a portion of it!" Emma vigorously waved her hand quickly.

Seeing Emma acting so cute, Suo Jia smiled and said, "It's because we are familiar with each other that we have to clearly do these things. A so-called gentleman's friendship is also called keeping clear accounts. How things should be done is how things are going to be done. If you can help me get rid of these things, then I would already be very grateful. You have to take out your share, you must take out your share or else I will rather find someone else to do this."

"Alright!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, Emma resolutely said, "Since you earn so much and want us to take a portion, then we won't take it halfheartedly. However, there's no need to worry, I'll definitely ask my father to advertise it properly, and sell the Snow Lotus fruits at high prices. We should gain our fortunes together!"

While speaking, Emma tossed the last few grapes into her mouth, and she said unclearly, "In that case, I'll go back now and get it done with. Just send all of the Snow Lotus fruits to my household. I'll handle everything from there."

Seeing Emma leaving so happy and excited, Suo Jia could not help but let out a big breath. He originally thought that it would be a really difficult and embarrassing task to ask for help. However, now he didn't

know whether he was the one begging for help or whether it was the other way around, and it wasn't embarrassing at all. It was like what Eldest Sister said; between friends, if someone needed something, the other had to help out.

Suo Jia hurriedly ordered for the 36 bags of Snow Lotus fruits to be delivered to Emma's household. Afterwards, Suo Jia rushed back to the underground training area. It was about time to give those rings to the girls.

The reason why he was gifting the girls with such precious items was for two reason: the first was because with those interspatial rings, they could deliver more merchandise each time. The other reason was for the sake of their safety. With these rings, each girl had three life-saving straws that they could use in a critical moment of danger, providing them a great help.

Suo Jia entered the underwater training area, and swept his gaze across all the girls that were silently sitting there, as if they were meditating. However.... Suo Jia was not a warrior, and so he didn't know exactly what they were training in, and how they were doing it.

Waiting for a short while, all of the girls opened their eyes and saw Suo Jia arriving. All of the girls immediately gathered together, and hurriedly wanted to know what they were going to do with the Snow Lotus fruits. Only when Suo Jia told them that they found a solution did they let out breaths of relief.

These Snow Lotus fruits had consumed 2 months of their time, and had required a lot of arduous efforts to transport them back to Holy Light City. If the fruits didn't sell for good prices, then their toiling efforts the past 2 months would be completely meaningless.

From within his bosom, Suo Jia pulled out the pouch containing the rings. From the ring Suo Jia had, all of the contents poured onto the rug in front of them. Seeing Suo Jia act in this way, all the girls began to wonder when Suo Jia began to grow fond of rings, as he carried so many with him.

Seeing the girls' puzzled expressions, Suo Jia smoothly picked up a ring,

and wore it on his left hand. He then faced the girls and said, "Draw your swords, and attack me once at full power!"

"Ah!" All the girls exclaimed in shock at Suo Jia's words. In their opinion, at such close range, a mage wasn't that different from an ordinary person. If they swung their blades down in such a circumstance, wouldn't he be completely doomed?

Noticing that the opposite party was unwilling to act, Suo Jia gloomily said, "What? In your eyes, am I extremely weak? If I told you to attack me, then attack. What is there to consider? Hurry up, hurry up, if you don't attack me soon, how will you know of the ring's benefits?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the girl clenched her teeth, and charged while shouting towards him with the swords that were previously on her backs. However... although on the outside she seemed extremely fierce, in truth, she knew how far she would go. Right before she would cause Suo Jia any harm, she would pull back and stop her sword!

"Dong!" The great sound rang out; not waiting for the girl to decrease her speed, Suo Jia lightly waved his left hand. As if electrically shocked, the greatswords in the girl's hands seemed to have swung down on steel, and was immediately repelled!

They stared at Suo Jia, dumbstruck. In the girls' eyes, Suo Jia's bare fists seemed to have directly countered the greatsword and repelled it backwards. Suo Jia looked towards the girl that had just attacked. The hand that had been gripping the sword was incessantly shaking, with fresh blood dripping down from the web between her thumb and fingers.

Looking at Suo Jia in shock, momentarily, within the eyes of the girls, Suo Jia suddenly casted a mysterious veil. What type of martial art was this? With such a casual wave of a hand, it was able to reflect back that sharp blow. Was this still considered a technique?

Suo Jia gleefully smiled at the girls' shocked expressions. He removed the ring and said, "Come, come, come, there's enough rings with the same effect for everyone. You all have one each!"

Blankly, they accepted the rings that Suo Jia passed over to them one by

one. After quite a while, they finally woke up from their stupors, and incredulously looked at the rings in their hands. They looked back at Suo Jia, and one of the girls cried out in shock, “Heavens! Mister Suo Jia, don’t tell me that the scene that had just occurred was caused by this tiny ring!”

Chapter 85: Combat Equipment (Part 1)

Suo Jia smiled and nodded his head before he answered with certainty, “That’s right, it’s as you have guessed. In reality, the awesome thing about the interspatial ring as shown previously is the Space Shield effect that comes with it. It’s invisible, but it’s an absolute defense! ”

“Invisible, Space Shield?” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, one of the girl exclaimed in shock. Immediately raising her head, she gave Suo Jia an uncomprehending look, as she asked, “This ring, could it be the interspatial ring known in legends?”

Nodding his head, Suo Jia calmly answered, “That’s right. Except that ring, do you really believe there are other rings with the same capability?”

“Oh my God!” Shaking while looking at this spatial ring, the girl cried out in astonishment, “This is really an interspatial ring! And in terms of value, it is simply priceless! Although the market’s first offer is only 10 million gold coins, this is something no one has ever been willing to sell.

In the middle of her speech, the girl lifted up her head, and said with a puzzled look, “Although we have been working very hard to make this money, in my opinion, the amount we have been struggling to gather is too few compared to this value of 10 million gold coins. The fact you want to give this ring to us now is... ”

Looking at the group of girls before him carefully, Suo Jia calmly answered, “You girls constantly go out, and can encounter danger at any moment. By giving you these rings, I just hope that they can save your lives if you’re ever in a critical moment of danger. You are all my good friends; I don’t wish for anything to happen to you girls!”

All of the girls’ couldn’t help but tightly grip the rings in their hands at Suo Jia’s words. This ring was already no longer just its original value; it also now contained Suo Jia’s feelings of concern and protection for them.

This interspatial ring was an essential thing that most elites used. When in danger, its absolute defense could block any attack. To an expert, this was equivalent to having multiple lives. Having this ring was the

same as having a magic weapon that could protect the body. No matter how dangerous a situation was, the ring could be used as a life line.

In addition, if it was appropriately used, a ring like this could allow the girls to become victorious over originally undefeatable enemies. This was especially true for the 36 fire wind warriors, since they were originally powerful. With the addition of these rings, their formidability would be beyond ridiculous. They would even be able to defeat their opponents by simply wearing them down until they were half dead.

The girls didn't reject such precious items, and they quietly slipped the rings on their fingers. First of all, no one could possibly reject such a present. Secondly....this present contained Suo Jia's emotions within them, making it difficult to reject. These feelings could only be returned with the identical intentions; there was no other method of repaying him.

During the following few days, the entire Holy Light City was stirred up with movement. With the appearance of the Snow Lotus fruits, anyone from high ranking nobles to wanderers were completely enticed by such amazing goods. These fruits were rare, even in the northern cities, let alone at Holy Light City, which was a metropolis much further from the North.

How intense the people were buying up the goods doesn't really require any further details to describe. Every time a Snow Lotus fruit was put up for sale outside the shop, a line a few hundreds of meters would immediately form to purchase them. If the supply wasn't unlimited, all of the Snow Lotus fruits would've most likely been entirely whisked away in an instant.

Seeing how amazing the sales of the Snow Lotus fruits were, Suo Jia was extremely envious. However, Suo Jia had no other way; since he didn't have stores, he couldn't have advertised extensively enough to form such a crowd. Before he built his own shop, he had no alternative but to rely on others for help.

Lazily lying down on a chair, Suo Jia ate the priceless Snow Lotus fruits as common fruits. The scarlet Snow Lotus fruits were sweet and bitter at

the same time. When in the mouth, one couldn't differentiate between sweetness and bitterness, and could only keep eating it. The fruit had an indescribably heavenly taste that would spread in the mouth. After eating one, it made any person want to continue eating more and more, as the person got increasingly more addicted to its amazing flavor.

Although this little thing could raise spirit power, it couldn't be that much. Otherwise, it was easy to get addicted. Once addicted, then one would be forced to stop eating it, since it wouldn't be any different from poison.

Although selling the fruits for money was important, Suo Jia didn't worry about eating them himself. After all....things that could boost one's spirit power were things that no mage would be willing to skip out on. Suo Jia hadn't eaten anything else but Snow Lotus fruits the past week. The fruits had become his only source of meals, and after a week had passed, he had eaten an entire bag of them.

In reality, the consumption of Snow Lotus fruits was supposed to be restrained. Eating one fruit could improve spirit power, but eating too many won't have any effects, and thus they'd be wasted. However, Suo Jia didn't care about these things, and gorged himself on them. Surprisingly, Suo Jia discovered that after eating a lot of them, there was a certain point where the spirit power would suddenly increase rapidly!

Finally, Suo Jia tossed the last Snow Lotus fruit into his mouth. Not completely satisfied, he licked his fingers clean. After eating 25kg of Snow Lotus fruits, Suo Jia had already gotten addicted. Unfortunately, he had eaten all of the fruits he had had; besides from licking his fingers, he couldn't do much else anymore.

Just as he was feeling sorry for finishing all the fruits, the room door opened, and Eldest Sister walked in with an excited expression. She placed a list in front of Suo Jia, and happily said, "The Snow Lotus fruits have all been sold. This is the list that Emma's household sent; it also has the total income earned from the Snow Lotus fruits."

Suo Jia reached out to look at the list closely. For each 0.05 kg of 9000

kg of Snow Lotus fruits that were sold, 20,000 gold was earned. The total earnings reached 360 million.

After splitting it amongst the fire wind warriors, they'd each get 5 million. They had really hit the jackpot this time. Although Suo Jia gave away half the earnings to the fire wind warriors, he himself still kept half of it. He had just spent 40 million, but then earned back 180 million; it was hard to imagine money could be earned so easily.

After receiving this good news, the first thing Suo Jia did was rush back to the underwater training area. Seeing Suo Jia walk over with such a happy expression, the girls expectantly looked at Suo Jia.

Facing the girls, Suo Jia loudly declared, "I bring good news; this operation was a complete success! All of the Snow Lotus fruits were sold out, and each of you earned 5 million in earnings!"

"Wa!" The girls all cried out in unison at Suo Jia's words. Although they had always known that the Snow Lotus fruits were worth a lot of money, they hadn't imagined that it could earn such a great amount.

Suo Jia said to the jubilant girls, "This time, I'll give each of you 1 million gold for the time being. The rest of the money will still stay with me. Just as before, if you have a legitimate reason to use it, you can come to me at any time to collect the money."

The girls didn't really mind Suo Jia's words. In their opinions, the million gold they were getting were their actual earnings. They didn't plan on using the money that was in Suo Jia's hands. Suo Jia had already given them rings worth millions of gold; when would they want money again? The additional money didn't even need to be mentioned.

The girls all knew that the amount of money that Suo Jia spent on them would continue increasing. This was only the beginning; a strong group couldn't just rely on the power of people. Equipment also had to keep improving, otherwise, how would the group grow stronger?

After some celebration, Suo Jia elegantly sat down. Of the 360 million gold, only 36 million had been given away. The amount of money under Suo Jia's control had already reached 320 million. Even if he encountered

a Legendary-ranked magic item, he'd still have the money to purchase it.

Chapter 86: Combat Equipment (Part 2)

Finally, everyone calmed down. All the girls consciously surrounded Suo Jia. One of the girls said, "Mister Suo Jia, this time when we went to collect the Snow Lotus fruits, we discovered many ice-elemental magical beasts. Originally....we could only run from such powerful magical beasts. However, with the interspatial rings that you have given us, we can try to annihilate those magical beasts now!"

"Yea!" Another girl chimed in, "That's right, the defensive effect this ring has is really too formidable. With this ring, even if we encounter magical beasts much stronger than us, we'll have the chance to kill it. Then we'll be able to collect precious magic crystals, as well any valuable materials from the magical beasts' bodies!"

Hearing the girls' words, Suo Jia couldn't help but inhale sharply and he said incredulously, "God, you're not planning on attracting the attention of those high-rank magical beasts, right? That's too dangerous!"

"Of course it's dangerous. But as long as we seize the opportunity properly, it won't be a problem." A girl said with absolute confidence.

Suo Jia bitterly smiled at the girls around him, and helplessly said, "Speaking with you girls is so exhausting; I don't even know your names. What exactly should I be calling you!"

"Uh...." Muttering to themselves, the girls all knew that making Suo Jia remember each one of their names was a bit too difficult. It wasn't convenient either, since....they couldn't use their original names anymore.

After a while, one of the girls said, "Our names cannot be used anymore, and in my opinion, making up new ones is unnecessary, since no matter what, we can't change our last names. I personally can't abandon my ancestry. Therefore....for everyday communications, we should use the army numbering system!"

"Yes....." Hearing the girl's suggestion, the other girls all chimed in, each of them expressing their agreement.

Seeing everyone agree, one of the younger girls smiled and said, "In that case, why don't we just number off by ages? The oldest one is #1, and the youngest one is #36. What do you think?"

"What about me? What number am I?!" Suo Jia cried out, seeing that he hadn't been included.

Hearing Suo Jia's exclamation, the girls all laughed out loud. That younger girl responded, "You're obviously #0. You're the most superior, and the leader of all of us, but you're also the youngest!"

After hearing that he had the special #0, Suo Jia happily nodded, "Great, great. I'm very satisfied with this number. From now on, I'm #0, haha..."

Soon after, all the girls had agreed on what their numbers were. They wore a badge on their chest that had their numbers written on them, so that the number would be seen at first glance. This made addressing each other easier.

Moreover, another benefit to this numbering system was that the ones who were older became more powerful. The oldest 6 especially far surpassed everyone else; they were on a completely different level.

Although it was only based on age, in reality, they had also been numbered by strength. The oldest 6 sisters from #1-6 were each in charge of teaching 5 of their younger sisters, perfectly forming 6 groups of 6 people each. That way, in regards to both age and strength, these numbers had extremely important meanings behind them.

After organizing the number system, the most powerful #1 spoke up, "We've contemplated and researched many difficult and unsolvable issues before. However, now that we have these interspatial rings, everything has been resolved."

#3 chimed in, "Eldest Sister is right. Our fire attribute can resist the ice-elemental magical beasts' freezing abilities, and our wind attributes can make our movements faster than the magical beasts'. Adding on that these interspatial rings' absolute defense: Space Shield, our powerful combat abilities, and our great teamwork, we can definitely defeat magical beasts far more powerful than us!"

#3 sighed in admiration at the ring on her finger and continued, “Moreover...with this interspatial ring, we are also guaranteed to be able to survive outside for long periods of time. No matter whether it’s tents or food, neither of them require additional stamina to carry around. Besides, even if we get injured, we can find a good place to recover and heal. That’s why....no matter how powerful a magical beast we face, we will definitely have a chance at killing it.”

Faced with the girl’s thoughts, Suo Jia could not help but swallow hard. He knew that once they had gotten used to fighting with the extremely powerful magical beasts, the comparably much weaker humans would be like using a melon cutting knife to slice vegetables. Although this was extremely dangerous, Suo Jia couldn’t help but admit that doing this would show results. At the same time, it was also the best way to train them.

“Alright!” Finally, after much contemplation, Suo Jia said with difficulty, “I’ll just agree. However, you have to promise me that you definitely cannot force yourself too much. Although strength is extremely important, it has to be gained one step at a time. Don’t take unnecessary risks; if the situation doesn’t look good, immediately retreat. I don’t want anything to happen to any of you!”

Touched, #1 looked at Suo Jia and firmly said, “Don’t worry, Mister Suo Jia. No matter how adventurous we are, we still value our own lives. Unless there’s absolutely no other option, we would never lightly sacrifice ourselves.”

Reassured, Suo Jia nodded, and then knit his brows, “Originally, you girls could already set off. However....since your actions are so dangerous, I think....I need to go out and select some weapons and armors for you all. I definitely won’t let you girls use these broken pieces of metal to fight those magical beasts with your lives on the line; that’s just looking for death!”

“Ya!” The girls couldn’t help but cry out in shock at Suo Jia’s words. There was no warrior that didn’t desire for a good weapon and strong armor. However, these were really expensive, and few people could afford

them. All the girls knew that this time, Suo Jia would be spending a lot of money again.

Seeing how excited the girls were, Suo Jia smiled and said, "I don't quite understand the battle techniques that you fire wind warriors use. Tell me, what types of weapons and armors are you more comfortable with?"

In response to Suo Jia's words, #1 happily replied, "The weapons we use are very unique. Normally, those with the fire attribute use knives, and those with the wind attribute use swords. However, dual elements like us, use weapons that are half knife and half sword. The weapons we desire the most are the Holy Cross Blades used by the Church. But..."

#1 didn't finish her sentence. The Holy Cross Blade were the highest grade weapons that the Church's Holy Knights used. These were extremely costly to make, since they were of superior craftsmanship, and the prices were really too expensive.

The Holy Cross Blades were something that even Suo Jia had heard of before. They were really just broadswords with 60cm long shafts. The sword guards were 120 cm long, and they could only be carried on one's back. From the distance, it seemed as if one was carrying an enormous cross.

The Holy Cross Blade's blade was 1.5 meters long; with the addition of the 50 cm long shaft, its total length reached up to over 2 meters. Even warhorses could be cleaved in half with a single cut. This was the Holy Knight's highest grade weapon.

However, although the Holy Cross Blades were the Holy Knights' greatest weapons, the only ones that could really display their full strengths were the fire wind warriors. With their explosive strength and speeds as fast as the wind, they could easily make these broadswords become Death Scythes that reaped people's souls.

Although it was extremely precious, Suo Jia paid no mind to it. It should be pointed out that Suo Jia relied on these 36 fire wind warriors the most to achieve his goal of going on the Greater Trade Routes. A mage like him that didn't have a group of valiant warriors to protect him wouldn't be

able to face powerful foes relying on his strength alone. Only under close protection could he release his world-shattering magic techniques.

Suo Jia nodded and said, “Alright. In that case, then even though I will fulfill your wishes now, there will eventually come a day where I’ll be able to give each of you your own Holy Cross Blades. For now, in terms of armor, do you have any requests?”

In response to Suo Jia’s question, #1 replied, “In terms of armor, we’re more comfortable with lighter and stronger armors, it is key that they must be flexible. The most important characteristic is that they must have cloaks. We have many motions that are fully used by integrating them with the cloak. The longer the cloak, the better. The most ideal armor is the one that high-ranking officials normally wear into battle!”

Faced with #1’s words, Suo Jia felt completely powerless. This fellow really wanted everything; the armor of a high-ranking official was obviously the best battle armor. It was not only able to block arrows, but also had a powerful magic resistance.

“Alright....” Helplessly shaking his head, Suo Jia bitterly smiled, “The Church’s Holy Cross Blades and high-ranking officials’ armor are your ideal weapons and equipment, right?”

“Yes, yes, yes....” The girls all nodded in response to Suo Jia’s words. #28 excitedly said, “Once we wear battle armor like that, we would even be able to kill all the king’s horses and all the king’s men. We’d be able to roam around unobstructed. Since the beginning of history, these are the most powerful weapons and equipment for fire wind warriors!”

Chapter 87: Treasures Are Hard To Find

(Part 1)

General armor was not armor that came from ancient times. In truth, this was actually modern alchemic technology that infused ancient magic into the armor. The armor's quality was light-weight, however the strength of the armor far surpassed that of forged metal. Behind it swayed a large cloak, and so for a team, this general armor was their strongest asset. In actuality, the name general armor was not really the best name for the item. This warrior armor should actually be named Marshal's Armor.

How much money would be needed, Suo Jia simply did not know. However Suo Jia knew that there was not yet any urgency to obtain this armor. One, was that it was too expensive and he could not afford it currently, and the other aspect was that armor wasn't as important as weapons.

Holy Cross Blades were the weapons most suited for the fire and wind warriors. The sooner they obtained those weapons, the sooner they could grow accustomed to using them. If they obtained them too late, then they would have to decide whether or not the weapons were still worth getting.

Speaking of weapons, Suo Jia suddenly remembered that strange dagger. He took out his interspatial ring and gave the dagger to #1 and said while perturbed, "#1, take a look at his dagger for me. How powerful is this dagger after it is imbued with battle qi?"

Smoothly accepting the dagger, fire wind warrior #1 waved the dagger around a couple of times, her face exuding a bewildered expression. She was most likely shocked by the strange feeling of the dagger!

She slowly gathered battle qi, soon after... number one infused the battle qi into the dagger. Then, with a fizz sound, #1 easily pierced through a hard stone pillar with the dagger.

Seeing this scene, Suo Jia could not help but open his eyes wide. Faced

with what happened right in front of him, there was already sufficient evidence that when this dagger was supported by battle qi, it definitely had destructive power. With things turning out this way, this dagger's value was now simply immeasurable.

Gently removing the dagger from the stone pillar, number one shook her head in admiration. "Heavens, this dagger has ridiculous penetrating power. If you just compress your battle qi a bit, then the damage you can cause to your target would nearly double. If a thief were to use this dagger, it could utilize backstab, gouge, one-strike kill, counterattack, assassinate... and other thief techniques, on its original foundation, would double the power!"

Hearing number one's words, Suo Jia immediately entered a petrified state. This was the same as saying that upon obtaining this dagger, the thief's offensive power and destructive capacity would instantly double. This was simply ridiculous, and although it was not an Epic-ranked dagger, its benefits far surpassed that of an Epic-ranked equipment.

For example, the thief's one-strike kill relied on speed and one's courageous advancing manner. To be able to inflict three times the usual damage, this originally was already quite ridiculous. However... on this foundation, where the offensive power was doubled, then it was like doubling the triple damage! A thief, with this dagger, could create up to six times the offensive power!

Generally, if a thief's weapon did not specialize in speed, then it specialized in one-strike killing. There weren't many that increased attack power like magical staffs, however this dagger precisely increased attack power. One could use a limited amount of battle qi and condense it to deal twice as much damage. This was simply too frightening.

Right when Suo Jia was thinking, #1 continued her words of praise, "This dagger feels really comfortable in my hands, and it moves freely and effortlessly, strengthening your control of the weapon. It also increases your accuracy, as well as blocking sound and glare. This makes it so that even when you attack, you can maintain your stealth."

While speaking, #1 handed the dagger back to Suo Jia and sighed in praise. "This is simply ridiculous, where did you get such a dagger from? This dagger is really priceless; it isn't something money can buy! If this was paired up with an interspatial ring, it definitely becomes an unbeatable combination. With the interspatial ring as well as this dagger, you would still have a chance even when fighting head on against warriors."

"Hehe..." With a smile on his face, he put away the dagger. Suo Jia laughed and said, "Alright, for the next couple of days, you all should stay in here and cultivate. I'm going out to stroll around the bazaar and see if I can pick up some other good items." Saying these words, Suo Jia couldn't wait any longer, and left the fire wind warriors here, as he went to look for Sixth Sister to discuss tomorrow's plans.

This couldn't be blamed on Suo Jia, as the first time he went to the bazaar he was able to acquire so many good things. Putting aside the Inferno Blade that no one was using at the moment, just the 44 interspatial rings, this dagger, and that mysterious blue glove was already enough to make Suo Jia so excited he couldn't sleep.

Clearly, this dagger alone was already something that money could not buy. As for the 44 interspatial rings, even if it was sold at market price, would still be able to sell for a bit more than 400 million. Even if Suo Jia were to just exchange the Vulcan's Roar for the 44 rings, he would still be ripping the other party off.

Lastly was this strange blue glove. Although as of right now, Suo Jia only noticed that the glove could block cold. However, even an idiot would realize that that couldn't be all there was to it, only that Suo Jia currently couldn't figure out the other effects.

In addition, even if the blue glove had no other features besides blocking cold, even if he would have to pay ten thousands gold, obtaining this glove meant that he would no longer have to worry about the bitter cold invading his skin. Everyday when he cultivated in the Ice and Snow Pact, he would be able to extend his practice by five or six times. This effect directly allowed Suo Jia's ice arts to become more powerful. The

more you cultivated, the more you would benefit, this is the same for everyone.

Early the next morning, Suo Jia once again asked for a leave of absence. Continuously for the past two weeks, Suo Jia did not really attend school. He was absent every single day, but since Suo Jia had good grades and his strength was also good, the school did not care too much about it. Even if they wanted to control him, the relationship between Suo Jia and Holy Light city would make the school reconsider.

Together with Sixth Sister, the two once again hurried towards the bazaar. Immediately after the first dozen steps, Suo Jia saw a huge booth. The booth was filled with weapons and other types of equipment and bizarre items. Suo Jia rushed curiously at once towards the booth.

He immediately looked at the items that were seemingly tattered. Ever since he had the experience of obtaining that dagger, Suo Jia took a particular interest in these ragged items. After all... that was how he obtained such an extraordinary dagger.

Seeing that Suo Jia's was excitedly looking at such tattered items, the stall owner laughed and said, "This little guy has a good eye, these items were all dug up from an old tomb. Who knows, maybe you'll find some treasure among them!"

Hearing the stall owner's voice, Suo Jia could not help but feel startled. According to the opposing party's words, there actually might be a chance of obtaining treasures. Suo Jia was not the only person who felt this way, and after thinking about it for a while, Suo Jia quickly became relieved. This world's treasures came in all different weird shapes and sizes, no one could consistently tell the difference. No matter how clever the appraisers were, there were bound to be some mistakes made.

After thinking about it, most Epic-ranked items, weapons, and equipment were discovered this way. If the items were old and tattered, then it would be difficult to recognize. Similar to the dagger that Suo Jia had, even though it was extremely powerful, you would never be able to find the dagger's name on any books.

All of the Legendary and Epic-ranked equipment were previously owned by legendary figures or epic heroes, causing them to be famous. In actuality, however, the equipment used by legendary heroes and figures were not necessarily the most powerful, but simply the most well-known. After all, the equipment of those nameless heroes might be even more powerful.

As he thought about all this, when Suo Jia saw those old and tattered items, he already no longer had his previous excitement. If it was that easy to choose something, then all of the weapons, equipment, and magical items wouldn't be so expensive. If they were to randomly sort through it one by one, then a couple thousand gold would be enough to casually buy the items.

"However..." Standing up straight, Suo Jia looked at the endless items in front of him. Within the ten thousand, or maybe even a hundred thousand items, Suo Jia was convinced that there must be at least one extremely precious treasure hidden here. Although there might only be one or two, as long as they were able to find and purchase it, then this would be a successful trip.

The two most important aspects for this task were vision and luck. To find a single good thing within hundreds of thousands of items, it really was too difficult of a task. One possibility would be to purchase everything, but doing such a thing would simply be too frightening for anyone other than Emma.

While Suo Jia was lost in his thoughts, the stall owner laughed and said, "Little friend, for these mysterious items, each of them are 100,000 gold. You can randomly pick around, and if you can find a treasure, then it's your profit!"

Chapter 88: Treasures Are Hard To Find

(Part 2)

“Che....” Frowning in disdain, Suo Jia who had already learned his lesson would not be tricked so easily. He looked at a few stained mysterious objects, but immediately lost interest. A good magic item, if not made of a special type of silver, had to be made of a precious metal so that it wouldn't rust easily.

Seeing Suo Jia's expression of disdain, the stall owner's voice couldn't help but rise a pitch, “Little friend, I'm not bragging. Our Ma De prestigious thief family's booth has the highest chance of having good products. Our family's name is exhibited there for a reason; aside from a few extremely powerful thief families, nobody else has the abilities to go on dangerous adventures!”

Hearing the stall owner's words, Suo Jia's eyes could not help but light up. His heart skipped a beat as he smiled, “Boss, is your family very awesome? I wonder, in Holy Light Empire's rankings of thief families, where does yours place?”

“Hehe....” Proudly smiling, the stall owner said arrogantly, “Our Ma De family is ranked 28th in the new rankings for Holy Light Empire's thief families. How about it? We're awesome right?”

“Eh....28th!” Seeing the boss' proud expression, Suo Jia had thought that the family would be ranked in the first few places. He hadn't imagined it'd only be 28th place; how could being ranked after 20 possible be awesome!

Seeing Suo Jia's stunned expression, the stall owner's face immediately turned bright red as he shouted, “You brat, if we were ranked in the first 20 places, why would we set up a booth here? We would've opened our own family shop ages ago.”

Speaking up to here, the boss loudly said, “Go, go, go....if you aren't buying anything, don't cause trouble. If you could afford good things, why

would you come to the bazaar? If you're really that amazing, you should go to the Lin Sen family's store to go buy things. They're the first ranked thief family; you should be satisfied with that, right? Then again, how could a little brat like you be able to afford things like that?"

Suo Jia didn't mind the stall owner's words; on the contrary, his eyes lit up. He didn't actually want to buy good things, but he wanted to go and make a deal with their business. With the thief dagger, Suo Jia really wanted to know whether or not the first ranked Lin Sen family would have any good items to trade with him!

Now that he knew the Lin Sen family's existence, Suo Jia didn't dally any longer, and immediately left the bazaar. Under Sixth Sister's guidance, they began to walk towards the Lin Sen Commerce Union.

Fortunately, Sixth Sister knew the exact location of the Lin Sen Commerce Union. However, originally she did not know the status of Lin Sen, so she naturally did not care too much about it. Now that the young master wanted to go, locating it was not a problem.

After thirty minutes, the two individuals arrived at the Lin Sen Commerce Union's entrance. Being the number one aristocratic thief family in the entire world, Lin Sen aristocratic family had their own commerce union within Holy Light City. The second floor was used for office purposes, while the first floor was an enormous store.

As soon as they entered, Suo Jia was blinded by the glittering items from within the store. Each weapon and set of armor glowed brightly; one could tell from a single glance that these items were of high quality.

The Lin Sen Commerce Union was extremely lively. A large amount of people entered and exited constantly. Nobody noticed a small child like Suo Jia, and the majority of them thought that he was a child that had accompanied his parents inside. They couldn't have possibly imagined that Suo Jia was a major customer. He was not only coming to purchase things, he even had a treasure that any thief would beg for in their dreams!

After circling around, Suo Jia was a bit disappointed. Although the

items in the store were all treasures and there were even Ideal-ranked goods, it was very obvious that none of these things would satisfy Suo Jia's needs.

Suo Jia disappointedly walked up to the service counter and asked in discontent, "Boss, do you only have these goods in this store? Don't you have any better ones? You guys are the Lin Sen Commerce Union, you must at least have a Legendary-ranked equipment to sell, right?"

The Commerce Union's boss rudely rolled his eyes at Suo Jia and said, "Young children that don't understand anything shouldn't talk about such things. Of course we have Legendary-ranked equipment, but....why would we so casually display something so precious? If you don't have anything to do, go play somewhere else. Can't you see we're busy?"

Hearing the boss' words, Suo Jia could not help but try to suppress his anger. It was inconvenient to be so young. No matter where he went, people wouldn't respect him at all. Even buying things ended up the same way.

"Ya! It really is Brother Suo Jia!" Just as Suo Jia was inwardly fuming, a clear sound rang out from outside the door. A small figure happily bounded inside.

Without even turning his head, Suo Jia could tell from the voice that it was definitely Emma that had arrived. He turned around and indeed....Emma had arrived with some of her escorts. She skipped over to him happily. Seeing her energetic state, Suo Jia couldn't help but groan. Did a mature, adult woman like her really need to walk like that?

Although Suo Jia also had to agree that Emma's outer appearance had been changed by him to make her seem like a young girl of 13-14 years old, her age was after all, still set. What kind of delicate appearance was she trying to fake.

While Suo Jia was inwardly frowning to himself, Emma had already arrived at Suo Jia's side. She pulled at Suo Jia's arm, and asked excitedly, "Why didn't you go to school today, and run all the way here in your free time? Did you come to buy something? If anything has caught your eye,

I'll buy it for you."

In response to Emma's words, Suo Jia gloomily glanced at the boss and helplessly said, "I did want to buy something, but others say that I'm just a little kid, and won't let me see anything good."

"What!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, Emma suddenly became round. Both hands pinching her waist, she angrily shouted at the shop owner, "I don't care if you are Lin Sen or Mu Sen, as long as you are running a shop in Holy Light City, then it is important to follow Holy Light City's Economy Act. If I am not mistaken, all customers are to be treated equally and fair trade must be conducted. This is actually the first line of the Act, and yet you dare to..."

It was very obvious that the boss recognized Emma. Actually, it wasn't just him; anyone that did business in Holy Light City would recognize the brat. Offending anyone else was fine, but offending Emma meant that they wouldn't be able to do business anymore!

"Little miss, you shouldn't lower yourself to argue with a person of such low status like me. I'll go and retrieve our store's protected treasures to show our little guest. This should be enough right?" The store owner said with a miserable face.

Seeing that the boss had given in so easily, Emma didn't bother to keep pressing the matter. In the end, she wasn't part of any type of law enforcement, and previously, she had just wanted to scare him a bit. Since the other party admitted their wrongs, there was no point in pursuing it any further, as that would not benefit either party.

Seeing the boss' painful expression, for the sake of allowing Suo Jia to earn enough respect and finish the deal as he wished, Emma moved closer, and said in a tense voice, "I'm helping you right now. Do you know who the person standing in front of you is? That's Lord Suo Jia. An ordinary citizen like you would actually dare to be so impolite to a lord. Once they look into that, wouldn't you lose your head?"

Hearing Emma's words, the store boss immediately began sweating like crazy. Even if he was Lin Sen family's member, he definitely wouldn't dare

to offend an aristocrat. The aristocrat's glory was the the same as the royalty's power; it was not permitted to violate any of them.

Even if a person was sentenced by the country, they'd be able to keep surviving as long as they ran to another country. However, once one committed an offense against a noble, then sorry, but the entire world wouldn't be able to tolerate the person. If the person ran to any country, there would be nobody willing to shelter the fellow that had offended an aristocrat.

Not mentioning the aristocrat's glory and power, just the relationship between Suo Jia and Duke Wen Sha was something that nobody else could ever experience. Unless they didn't want to continue living as they pleased in Holy Light City, who would dare to not give face to the City Lord Wen Sha?

In panic, the store boss hurriedly ran into the storage room, and came back out carrying a long wooden box. He smiled widely as he said to Suo Jia, "Customer, this is the store's treasure. It's a Legendary-ranked Spirit Wind staff. Please examine it as you wish."

Gently opening the box.....a gold glow immediately lit up in front of Suo Jia. As he looked at the staff within the box, Suo Jia couldn't help but knit his brows. This staff was indeed quite good, but it wasn't what Suo Jia needed.

Chapter 89: Replicated Equipment (Part 1)

Without even asking for the price, just by simply knowing the fact that it was considered the store's treasure, one could conclude that it would definitely be priced higher than if it were at an auction. Otherwise, wouldn't it have been bought by someone by now? This was why it was known as a guarded treasure; the price would definitely be higher than what it's worth.

Suo Jia wasn't even a wind mage, yet the price was not cheap. Because of these reasons, Suo Jia didn't have the slightest interest and helplessly sighed as he said in disappointment, "You guys own such a huge Commerce Union, don't tell me this is the only good item you have? The number one thief family, to only own this wand, isn't that a bit too shabby?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, although the store owner became furious, he did not dare express any of it. With a smiling face, he said, "Esteemed customer, it's not that we don't have any good items, but rather that all the good items are stored in our collection. Even if we put them on display, we would not sell them here. Although there are many people coming and going, the people who really have money don't come here. They would rather choose to participate in auctions."

Nodding his head in understanding, Suo Jia pondered over this matter for a while before asking the store owner for a writing utensil and a sheet of paper. He then quickly wrote some words on the paper, folded the paper, and gave it to the store owner while saying, "Give this letter to the Lin Sen thief family's head. Other than the family head, no one is to be allowed to look at the contents of the letter."

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the store owner hurriedly accepted the letter. Actually, it wasn't necessary for Suo Jia to instruct him not to look at it; he wouldn't dare to anyways. Any letter meant for a family head was not something that people like him could casually read unless he wanted to lose his head.

Of course, if it were an ordinary person, perhaps the store boss wouldn't have bothered to deliver the letter at all. However, Suo Jia was a different case; he was beyond well-known within Holy Light City. Plus, he had the status of an eighth-ranked lord, which meant he already counted as a minor aristocrat. Although secretly opening the letter was not enough to destroy entire families, anyone who looked at it would definitely die.

Once Suo Jia had passed the letter over, he turned around and walked out of the Lin Sen Commerce Union. With Emma accompanying him, he began to walk towards the second Commerce Union. With the brat Emma with him, Suo Jia would be able to see all of the commerce unions' treasures. Maybe he'd even find what he was looking for.

As the store owner watched Suo Jia's group of three slowly walk away, he wiped away the sweat off his forehead. He told his colleagues to look after the shop, and....the store boss held Suo Jia's letter as he quickly ran towards the commerce union's stairs.

Lin Sen Commerce Union had 2 floors. Currently, a figure covered with a grey cloak was casually leaning on a couch, completely still. The next moment....a soft knock came from outside.

With the grey cloak's consent, the great doors opened. The store boss respectfully walked in, handed the letter over to the grey cloak, and whispered some words into the grey cloak's ears. Then, under the grey cloak's commands, the store boss quickly left the room.

Without paying any mind to the letter in his hand, the grey cloak casually threw the letter on the nearby table. It was obvious that he didn't care about a letter a mere child had written, even if Suo Jia was a lord.

After a long while, the grey cloak picked up the letter out of boredom and gently opened it. After closely reading its contents.....

"Hu!" With a whoosh, the grey cloak suddenly sat up straight, his whole body trembling as he stared at the letter he was holding. He couldn't believe what was currently in front of him; increasing accuracy, stealth, and power.....did such a formidable dagger really exist in this world? If it did, then this was the ideal dagger of a thief's dreams!

There was only half a year left until the grand competition between the thief families that was held every decade. Earlier, the grey cloak had actually been worrying about this; in the last decade, the outstanding stars in the thief world had appeared. If he wanted to maintain his throne of being the top family, it would be unfathomably difficult. However....as long as he got this dagger, the Lin Sen family would undoubtedly continue sitting in the number one spot. As long as this dagger was with them, nobody could possibly pose a challenge to them!

Leaving aside what the grey cloaked man's decision was, meanwhile accompanied by Emma, Suo Jia ended up going to the other top ten thief families' commerce unions. What was disappointing, however, was that although all of those other guarded treasures were indeed rare... none of them were compatible with water arts. Generally, fire was the most common followed by wind; water types were simply too rare.

Suo Jia, along with Emma, entered the sixth commerce union. From the outside, this commerce union didn't seem to be any worse than the Lin Sen's Commerce Union. In reality, the top ten thief family's commerce unions were all pretty much the same. Even the treasures were similar.

After casually strolling around the shop....the two of them directly found the store boss and requested to see the shop's treasures. Even if Suo Jia didn't reveal his identity, the store boss couldn't refuse Emma. No matter whether or not he was willing, he had to bring out the treasures for Emma to see.

Emma and Suo Jia awaited for the treasure to be brought out. Soon afterwards, an interesting and appealing wooden box was carried out. Gently opening it, the store boss smiled and said, "This is a water elemental Legendary-ranked ring – Frost's Sigh. It can increase the effects from training in the Ice and Snow Pact, as well as reduce the magic power consumption used by ice magics. At the same time, it can also increase the formidability of the ice magics."

"Wa!" Seeing the ring inside the box, Suo Jia immediately grew excited. This ring was exactly what Suo Jia was looking for. No matter whether it was its ability to increase the effects of the Ice and Snow Pact, or its

ability to reduce magic power consumption, Suo Jia wanted both of them. As for the increase in ice magics' formidability, although most magic rings did this, this ring was Legendary-ranked after all. It had to be more effective than normal rings by much more.

Suo Jia raised his head in excitement and eagerly asked, "How much are the effects increased by?"

In response to Suo Jia's question, the store boss said sincerely, "This Frost Spirit can increase the Ice and Snow Pact's effects by 100%, as well as decrease magic consumption of ice magics by 50%! It can also increase the strength of ice magic by 10"

"Huh?" Knitting his brows in confusion, Suo Jia asked, "I'm sorry, I don't understand. What does increase the strength of ice magic by 10 mean?"

Most likely because of Emma's presence, the store boss replied very patiently, "Young customer, perhaps you don't really understand. Only weapon-type equipment can raise a magic's formidability based on a percentage. Small items like this ring have very small volumes; there is no way upper grade gems can be embedded onto them. Therefore, they cannot increase formidability proportionally. They can only boost the strength of the magic based on some exact amount"

Speaking thus far, the store owner momentarily paused, organized his thoughts and patiently said, "Increasing the magic power of ice spells by 10 basically means that it can help you decrease the temperature of your ice magic by 10."

Hearing the store owner's words, Suo Jia immediately lit up. Although this ring could not increase the power of magic percentage-wise, for Suo Jia right now, its ability to increase magic by a set amount was actually more suitable for him. If his Ice Sphere could decrease by ten degrees, then it would basically no longer shatter.

One should not look down on this ten degrees, ten degree water does not freeze. Although ten degrees isn't too cold, if one dropped that by another ten degrees, then it would reach the freezing point; the gap between the two was still rather significant.

This was ice's specialty: the lower the temperature, the higher the increase in toughness and strength. Although the ring could only improve by ten degrees, the difference in toughness and strength in regards to the current Suo Jia was like comparing mud to stone.

The truth was, after a few months of cultivation, Suo Jia's Ice Sphere was already similar to stone. When the Ice Spheres hit the stone pillars, the stone pillars would shatter, and at times the Ice Sphere would still remain intact. This signified that the Ice Sphere and stone were quite similar to each other in hardness, and the Ice Sphere possessing just a bit more sturdiness.

If the temperature was dropped by another 10 degrees, then Suo Jia's Ice Sphere would definitely be much harder than the stone pillar. After collision, the Ice Sphere would most likely not shatter, and its power should increase as well.

Although its might wasn't increased proportionally, from a certain standpoint, this ring's abilities were not any worse than an item that did boost effects based on a percentage. In this world, once one trained to a specific point where it was really hard to breakthrough the bottleneck, this ring could decrease the temperature by another 10 degrees from the base setpoint. At that point, the results shown would definitely create a major difference.

Lifting his head in excitement, Suo Jia firmly said, "Alright, Boss, how much is this ring? Name your price!"

Chapter 90: Replicated Equipment (Part 2)

The store boss could not help but start at Suo Jia's words. Generally speaking, store treasures weren't sold. He hadn't imagined that Suo Jia would actually want to purchase it. What was he to do now?

Although such treasures were normally not sold, now that the store owner had displayed it, it was merchandise. If a customer wanted to purchase it, then the store owner had to sell it. That's why store treasures typically gave out outrageously high prices in order to dispel the opposite party's attempts in purchase. If there was really a person that disregarded this price and still wanted to purchase it, then the store owner really had no other choice aside from selling it to the customer.

While the store owner was in a daze, Emma's sharp eyes discovered the tag hanging on the box. She gently reached out and flipped over the tag to inspect it. The long chain of zeros practically blinded Emma.

"My God! You dare to sell this measly ring for 400 million? How is this not stealing! Even if you brought this to an auction, it would only sell for around 200 million." Emma cried out incredulously.

"Hehe...." Hearing Emma's sharp cry, the store boss inwardly sighed in relief, "I'm deeply sorry. This price was set by the family leader. Although I also feel that this is too expensive, since it's 2x greater than auction price, I cannot alter the price without approval. I hope that the two of you understand." The store boss closed the box, prepared to stow it away. It seemed to him that these two fellows would no longer be willing to buy it.

"Slow down!" Seeing that the store owner was about to place the ring away, Suo Jia panicked on the spot. Not only did it strengthen ice magics' formidability, it could also boost the effects of the Ice and Snow Pact by 100%, and even lower the magic power consumption by 50%. These effects made it impossible to Suo Jia to give up on this ring. Even if he had to pay a great price, Suo Jia still wanted it.

Gasping for breath in panic, Suo Jia begged the store owner, "Boss, you really cannot make it any cheaper?"

Firmly shaking his head, the store owner said resolutely, "I apologize, but I cannot decrease the cost by a single cent. You should also understand that the store's treasures aren't really meant for selling at all. If you really do want to pay 400 million, then I have no choice but to sell it to you. But other than that, I cannot make it any cheaper.

"Fine..." Gritting his teeth, Suo Jia turned to face Emma and reached his hand out, "Emma, let me borrow 100 million; I want to buy this ring!"

"Are you crazy!" Seeing Suo Jia's determined expression, Emma shouted in disbelief, "This ring is definitely not worth that much money. At the most, its value is only 200 million, yet you want to buy it for 400 million. That's too excessive; even if you have money, you shouldn't spend it like this!"

The current Suo Jia couldn't be swayed at all by Emma's persuasion. He fiercely shook his head and said in a low voice, "I don't care. No matter what, I want that ring. You just say whether or not you're willing to lend me money! Hurry up, if you won't lend it to me, I'll go find Wen Ya to lend me some. If I'm too late, this ring might be gone!"

"You!" Helplessly looking at Suo Jia, Emma shook her head, "You've really lost your mind; this is all your own responsibility. I can even give the money to you rather than lend it, but are you absolutely sure you won't regret this? You're wasting 200 million."

Suo Jia smiled at Emma's words and said, "You don't need to worry about that. In my opinion, there are only two types of things in this world; the things I need, and the things I don't need. As long as I need it, I think spending any amount of money is worth it. To me, this ring is priceless. Forget 400 million, even if they were selling it for 1 billion, I'd still buy it!"

After hearing Suo Jia's response, Emma didn't bother speaking any further. She directly took out an amethyst card and handed it over to Suo Jia. As Suo Jia accepted this 100 million, he also pulled out 3 of his own amethyst cards from his interspatial ring without hesitation. He tossed the total of four cards onto the counter, and directly placed the box into his interspatial ring.

“You! That! I.....” The store owner could not help but stutter at the sight of Suo Jia actually willing to buy it for 400 million. What was this, did he think money didn’t have value? This ring was only a water elemental ring, incomparable to a fire elemental ring. Even if it was brought to an auction, the highest price it could possibly sell for was just 200 million. Typically speaking, selling it for 130-140 million was already above average. However this small child had actually bought it for 400 million!

As the store owner exclaimed in shock, Suo Jia pulled out a letter and handed it to the store owner, “Help me deliver this letter to your family leader. Nobody else is to look at it. Don’t say I didn’t warn you, I’m an aristocrat that has a noble title!” Suo Jia then pulled Emma to leave, afraid that the store owner would take back his words and demand for the ring back.

Afterwards, Suo Jia continued to visit multiple commerce unions. Unfortunately, although their treasures were all quite good, Suo Jia firstly didn’t have any more money, and secondly, none of these items were anything that Suo Jia urgently needed. Therefore, he only looked around, and didn’t buy anything else.

After strolling around for the entire morning, although Suo Jia had managed to buy himself a satisfactory treasure, that hadn’t been his purpose for going out. The reason he had come out here was to help the fire wind warriors get some equipment and weapons. The things they’d face in the future were ice elemental magical beasts that were far more powerful than them. If they didn’t have sufficient weapons and equipment, it would be extremely dangerous.

Seeing Suo Jia frown in worry, Emma curiously asked, “You...you wanted to buy such an expensive item, just to regret it afterwards. If you knew this earlier, wouldn’t it have been better if you hadn’t bought it?”

Suo Jia bitterly smiled and shook his head, “I’m not worrying about that. Actually, I had come here today to purchase some battle armor and weapons. However, after walking around for an entire morning, I haven’t made any progress at all.”

“Wow....” Emma cutely patted her head and groaned, “Please, can you not be so condescending? Emma is standing right in front of you. Whatever you want to choose, just tell me; there are very few things I don’t know about.”

Suo Jia looked at Emma in surprised, and said expectantly, “Then does that mean if I want to get a batch of Holy Cross Blades, as well as some Marshal’s Armors, you can help me procure them?”

Wiping away the sweat that had quickly formed on her forehead, Emma said with difficulty, “You really need the craziest things; could it be that you don’t know? Holy Cross Blades are specifically used by the Church’s Holy Knights, and even they don’t use it that often. As for the Marshal’s Armors, those are peak level armors that only marshals or soldiers wear. The weapons and armors you want are all so difficult to obtain.”

Emma really wanted to tell Suo Jia that she had no way of procuring the things he wanted. However, she had already announced otherwise, and there was no way she could take back her words so soon. Plus, if she conceded defeat so easily, where would Emma have face?

Since she had already said all this, then she definitely needed to find a way to do it. Since she was young, Emma had always been taught by her father that as a businessman, integrity was as important as life. Anything stated must be carried out. No matter how difficult it was, she could only go home and secretly cry to herself.

The reason that Emma’s family was as successful as they were now was because of Emma’s father. He had constantly told Emma that he could only be at this point today as a result of one belief – in this world, all troubles have solutions. One simply needs to think hard about it, and then a method of solution will definitely appear.

After contemplating for a long time, Emma finally clapped her hands together and said happily, “I don’t know why you want Holy Cross Blades and Marshal’s Armors, but I can tell you that those things cannot be used by ordinary people. Otherwise, the country and the Church would both cause trouble for them. How could just anyone use a marshal’s

clothing and a Holy Knight's weapon?"

"This...." Suo Jia suddenly began to sweat at Emma's words. It was true... this whole time, he and the fire wind warriors had completely neglected a problem: the fire wind warriors were not longer the country's citizens.

If they were the country's elite forces, then they would without question be able to wear the Marshal's Armors and the Holy Knights' Holy Cross Blades. However, if they dared to use them now, they'd pretty much be looking for death.

Seeing that Suo Jia was now sweating profusely, Emma quirked her mouth and smiled, "Don't be afraid, I've already thought of a plan. Although we don't have the genuine qualifications, we can find someone to counterfeit them for us!"

Chapter 91: Revolving Frozen Gas (Part 1)

“Counterfeits!” Hearing Emma’s words, Suo Jia shook his head furiously, repeatedly rejecting, “No, no, I don’t want it for its appearance and shape, the most important thing is its quality. Getting counterfeits is definitely not the way to go.”

Faced with Suo Jia’s refusal, Emma laughed loudly before saying, “My intention was not to make a counterfeit, but instead to make a copy, as these two are completely different concepts. You know, in order to become one of the most successful businessmen, my father did business with the dwarves and sold weapons to make a fortune. Think about it, if the great masters from the dwarf race personally copied and produced this equipment, then would the quality be poor? As long as you are willing to put up the necessary funds, even if you need it to be stronger than the original, it wouldn’t be a big deal.”

Hearing Emma’s words, Suo Jia immediately urged Emma to lead him to the dwarven blacksmiths. Under Emma’s leadership, they arrived at the Holy Light dwarven smithery, and asked to meet with the dwarven smithing master.

Because of his relationship with Emma, Suo Jia was quickly allowed to meet with the most renowned, perspiring dwarven master. From the outside, although the dwarven master appeared to already be in his 70s, what intrigued Suo Jia was that his height was similar to Suo Jia’s. When they stood next to each other, no one would be able to tell who was taller.

Emma was clearly quite familiar with this heavily bearded individual, and when they met she immediately beckoned Suo Jia to explain his situation. Hearing Emma’s words, the dwarven blacksmith lifted his head. He swallowed a mouthful of wine, as he said to Suo Jia with a completely flushed face, “Can do, Holy Crossed Blades and Marshal’s Armors right? I can help you, but I don’t have anyway of procuring the materials. These two types of equipment are all made from special materials, and those are all rare and precious ores. In order to give Emma face, as long as you can obtain those precious ores, I’ll help you construct what you need free of

charge.”

While speaking, the dwarf once again lifted his head and dragged a gulp of aged wine. With a breath that reeked of alcohol, he said, “If you cannot find the materials, then I have no other way either. Even if my skill level is high, it’s impossible to make such superior equipment with common iron and copper.”

After contemplating for a bit, Suo Jia firmly said, “Alright, I’ll go and collect these materials. However, can you give me a list explaining precisely what materials are needed?”

Hearing Suo Jia’s words, the old blacksmith grabbed some pen and paper before madly scribbling on the paper. Seeing the blacksmith writing endlessly, sweat began to gather profusely on his forehead.

Spatial Meteorite Iron, Thousand-year Chilled Steel, Volcanic Sanguine Copper, Cold Abyssal Stone... Wind Dragon tendons, Black Dragon scales, Azure Dragon fangs, Earth Dragon skin... warehouse metal and wood, Diamond Bamboo, Wind Fox Fur...

After writing for an entire minute, the old blacksmith finally stopped. Only after looking over the list one last time and filling in some more information did he give the white sheet of paper to Suo Jia and say, “Alright, this is basically all of it. I can begin forging once you obtain these things.”

Shuddering while taking the list of items, Suo Jia said while trembling, “Heavens, how can there be so many necessary items? How am I supposed to get all these things? Let me count... there’s actually more than forty different types of materials. It might take me ten years to find all of these!

“Eh....” Hiccuping, the dwarf blacksmith explained, “If you are able to collect all of these parts, then I can forge the Marshal’s Armors, as well as the superior peak-grade weapons ‘Holy Cross Blades’. If you can bring the people who are going to use these armors and weapons, then I can create equipment sets that are most appropriate for their unique characteristics and their body measurements.”

The old blacksmith gulped down another swig of wine, and said with his

mouth still full, “If you cannot find all these things, then that’s no big deal either. I can use other materials as substitutions. However, its performance would decrease that way. The more materials you can find, the better the quality of the armor that I can make. If you cannot find a single material, then you might as well just randomly choose a few armors from this shop and leave.”

“Oh!” Suo Jia’s eyes lit up at the old blacksmith’s words. He stuffed the paper into his pocket and smiled, “That’s fine too. Since I’m already here, I couldn’t possibly leave without purchasing anything. Lead me to look around, and help me find some weapons similar to the Holy Cross Blades, as well as the Marshal’s Armors. I can afford to use up some time right now.”

Hearing that Suo Jia wanted to purchase something, the old blacksmith immediately recovered his spirit, and even smiled. He quickly led Suo Jia towards the back of the storehouse. While rushing there he said, “Haha....what did I say? These items are really hard to look for. Unless you find all of them, you’re better off just spending some money and buying the goods in this store instead.”

Suo Jia couldn’t help but smile bitterly at the old blacksmith’s words. He knew that the only reason there were so many items to look for and why he had been offered to have the equipment made for free was only because the old blacksmith wanted him to realize how hard it was and take back his decision. The ultimate objective was to get Suo Jia to pull out some money and spend it on the store’s goods.

Suo Jia said, “Hey, I have to make this clear. Buying is fine, but it’s only to temporarily reduce the urgency. I’ll definitely gather your materials. You’d better not forget your promise. If I do manage to find all the parts, you’ll have to help me create 36 sets of armor and weapons for free!”

As Suo Jia finished his words, Emma smiled and chimed in, “Don’t worry about that, Suo Jia. Dwarves strongly emphasize keeping promises. As long as they’ve said the words, they’ll be willing to even die to carry them out. As long as you find those materials, this master will definitely not decline your request.”

“Yes, yes, yes...” The dwarf blacksmith nodded at these words and said, “That’s right, little fellow. Anything that I’ve already promised will be valid forever. Emma can be our witness. My words are completely true, and I will always keep to them. As long as you gather those materials, I will help you construct these items for free.”

At this point, the old fellow smiled sinisterly and said, “However, don’t say I didn’t remind you. If you only find some scattered few, I’m not going to serve you. You need to obtain at least 40 out of these 60 materials for me to help you. Otherwise, don’t blame me and say I go back on my words.”

Suo Jia bit his tongue in uncertainty. He knew that wanting to gather so many things was extremely difficult, to the point where the difficulty couldn’t be measured. He also didn’t know if after actually gathering all of these, would the armors and weapons created actually be powerful?

Suo Jia revealed these doubts to the old blacksmith. In response, the blacksmith widened his eyes and shouted, “What is a brat like you thinking about? I’m one of the four great dwarf masters. Plus, since the materials used are peak-grade, these equipment and armors couldn’t possibly be lacking!”

The old blacksmith snorted and resolutely said, “I can promise you that if you actually gather these materials, no matter whether it’s armor or weapons, they would at the very least be Legendary ranked. Moreover....I can also connect the blades and armors with spirits. This will allow them to mutually boost each other and cover each other’s weaknesses. It could also dig up a small portion of the power of Epic-ranked equipment sets!”

Chapter 92: Revolving Frozen Gas (Part 2)

Hearing the blacksmith's words, Suo Jia's eyes shone brightly. He earnestly said to the blacksmith, "Very well, I'll remember your words. In addition.....I'll do everything I can to find these items!"

The old blacksmith didn't pay much mind to Suo Jia's words. The words of an eight-year old child mostly seemed like bragging; nobody would really take them seriously. More importantly, they had already reached the storehouse, so it was time to begin selling. This was what the blacksmith was most concerned about.

Bringing Suo Jia up to a shelf, the old blacksmith pointed at the armor neatly arranged and said, "This is an armor made by copying the Marshal's Armor. Although it can't possibly be as powerful, its defense is still quite good. It's just enough to aid your urgency temporarily."

The old blacksmith then led Suo Jia even further into the storehouse, and pointed to a large pile of boxes, "Those are fake Holy Cross Blades. Their forms and weights are all exactly the same; it's just their strengths that are lower. They can be used temporarily; in the end, they're still produced by dwarves, so their quality isn't a problem."

Suo Jia nodded and said, "I want 36 each of these armor and weapons. Can you calculate the total cost for me?"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the old blacksmith pulled out a metal abacus and it pattered as he calculated. After he finished, he smiled, "Although these are just normal equipment and don't carry any additional effects; they're still dwarven products after all. They are of high quality, and can last for a long time. Their performance is also much better than other races' products, so the total price is still quite high. The total is 42 million gold."

Speaking up to here, the old blacksmith gave the abacus a shake. With a Huala sound, the old blacksmith laughed and said, "However, in order to give Emma face, I don't need that 2 million. You can just give me a total of 40 million."

“Fuck!” Hearing the old blacksmith’s words, Suo Jia could not help but feel dumbstruck. Could it be that this old bastard couldn’t count? How could he possibly know that Suo Jia only had 40 million gold left? Any more and Suo Jia wouldn’t have had enough.

Within the underwater training area, Suo Jia was sitting cross-legged on the ground. He wore the Frost’s Sigh on his finger, then... he wore the blue glove on his hand, completely covering the ring. This way, no one will be able to see the precious ring; otherwise, there would be trouble.

The fire wind warriors were already wearing the armors that Suo Jia brought back for them, and had left with the old blacksmith’s material list with their destination set in the far north. One objective was to hunt those high-rank ice element magical beasts; after all, their entire bodies were covered in treasures. They could simultaneously improve their combat abilities and earn a lot of money. It was definitely more cost-effective than picking Snow Lotus fruits.

After sending off the fire wind warriors, Suo Jia once again began cultivating. Wearing the Frost’s Sigh, he started to perform the Ice and Snow Pact. Sure enough, Suo Jia could clearly feel the connection between the ice spirits and himself; it was comparatively more clear and more smooth.

After only slightly testing it out, Suo Jia decided to momentarily stop. The part of the Frost’s Sigh that Suo Jia liked the most was precisely the fact that it could improve his cultivation in the Ice and Snow Pact. Closely tied with this, however, was the halved magic power consumption when activating ice spells.

As for spirit power, after eating 25kg of Snow Lotus fruits, Suo Jia’s spirit power continuously broke through three times. Currently, it had far surpassed his magic power. Now that he had this ring as well, it caused his magic consumption to decrease by half. Didn’t that mean he could already cast the Revolving Frozen Gas?

Originally, Suo Jia would have had to train for at least another half a year before he could successfully cast the Revolving Frozen Gas. However,

after obtaining this ring, as well as the aid of the Snow Lotus fruit, Suo Jia could immediately cast it.

After taking in a deep breath, Suo Jia opened his magic textbook, and silently read it for a bit. First, he memorized the diagram needed to cast the Frozen Revolving Gas, then he closed his eyes, constantly familiarizing himself with it inside his mind.

Not realizing how much time had passed, Suo Jia finally opened his eyes. He confidently stuck out his right index finger, and in rapid waves, the Frozen Revolving Gas was released in one go.

“Hu... Phew...” Accompanied with a huffing and puffing sound, a freezing cold stream of air flowed out with Suo Jia as its source. It spread outwards while spinning, and no matter whether it was the ground or the pillars along its path, they were all covered in a sheet of snow white frost. The temperature of Suo Jia’s surroundings immediately dropped to 30 degrees below zero!

Furrowing his eyebrows in dissatisfaction, Suo Jia knew that his cultivation was still too weak. This low of a temperature would at most give his opponent a cold, and not be able to defeat the enemy on the spot. After all... negative 30 degrees was not enough to kill someone, and would barely even inflict a frostbite.

This Frozen Revolving Gas counted as one of the basic auxiliary ice magics. Its effects included numbing the enemy’s limbs, slowing their movements, lowering their attack power, as well as reducing the enemy’s accuracy. There were no other effects aside from these.

Based on the magic teacher’s words, Suo Jia’s only method of attack was the Ice Sphere. While considering this problem, Suo Jia’s right hand quickly began to move once more, and with a single wave of his hand, the Ice Sphere spell array formed in the air.

A cold, white air emitted from the Ice Sphere, and with a whistling sound, it flew towards the stone pillar opposite from him. Just as Suo Jia expected, after the Ice Sphere smashed the pillar into thousands of pieces, it didn’t shatter. Instead, it continued to shoot quite a distance before

falling onto the ground where it [Taffy was here] rolled around back and forth.

Normally speaking, 10 degrees wasn't that extreme of a temperature difference. However in certain critical moments, this was a deadly amount. If a person has a fever of 40 degrees, they can still be saved. However, if they reach 50 degrees, then they're beyond saving. Even if they manage to live, they'd be reduced to an idiot. If they get to 60 degrees, one can scramble eggs on them.

Currently, with the help of the Frost's Sigh, the temperature of Suo Jia's Ice Sphere had been lowered by an additional 10 degrees from its original base temperature. Both its hardness and power had been increased by a great amount, and its destructive ability had also been greatly boosted.

Without tiring, Suo Jia began to activate the few magics that he knew one after another. He knew that the more these magics were practiced, the faster his activation speed would become, and the more powerful they'd be. After training these to a certain extent, the wounding power of the Ice Sphere would be quite formidable.

However, just because an ice magic's temperature was lowered doesn't mean it's perfect. One also had to actually hit the enemy to be qualified. The Ice Sphere's speed was also related to the extent a mage practices it; no matter how the magic is activated, it becomes faster, more fierce, and more accurate the more it's practiced.

Only after his magic power had pretty much been exhausted did Suo Jia stop, and once again begin training the Ice and Snow Pact. An ash-blue mist rose like a flame in Suo Jia's palm, constantly flickering.

Time passed very quickly. In the blink of an eye, there was only one month left until the day of the annual competition. During the past month, Suo Jia's strength had suddenly increased fiercely with the help of the three magic equipment. He had already far surpassed the norm of other children of his age. However despite this, Suo Jia was still not completely satisfied, and he thought that his speed of improvement was still too slow. This was because his objective was the Greater Trade

Routes; he couldn't spend too much time training here.

As the days until the competition inched closer, Suo Jia's training also became harder. However, even though there was still a month left until the competition, he had no choice but to temporarily stop training because... the day that he had arranged to meet with the leaders of the top 10 influential families had arrived. The main reason he had arranged for the meeting date to be so late was to allow these family leaders time to rush over from their cities.

Suo Jia once again excused himself from school, and quietly waited at home. He had ordered the maids to invite any person that arrived and asked to see him into the guest room, and wait on them there. Once everyone gathered, he'd naturally go out to meet them.

Suo Jia believed that with such an amazing dagger at stake, none of those fellows would dare to skip out on this meeting. They didn't have to worry about Suo Jia tricking them, since Suo Jia didn't have the capital to do so.

As time flowed by, the family leaders of the great ten thief families arrived at the White Villa, and one by one, they were invited into the guest room. After seeing that so many other family leaders had appeared in the same place, a few of the family leaders couldn't help but inwardly frown. They knew that if the others weren't here to look around for fun, they must've come to take away that dagger.

Finally, the ten great influential family leaders had finally gathered. After organizing his thoughts, Suo Jia pushed the door open and walked in. Seeing Suo Jia's appearance, the eyes of the leaders immediately lit up. All of them knew that this young boy was Lord Suo Jia.

Suo Jia didn't bother wasting words, and directly pulled the dagger out. He placed it carefully on the table, allowing everyone to look at it. Suo Jia was not afraid of any of them stealing it and running away, since nobody was that extreme. It wasn't like Suo Jia didn't have any background either; unless they wanted their entire family to be eradicated, nobody dared to go against this child that had a relationship with the Fourth Prince.

The dagger quickly circled around the family leaders. After it had once again returned to Suo Jia's hands, he fiddled with it as he smiled and said, "I'm sure everyone already knows the advantages of this dagger, so I won't go into further detail. The reason I called everyone together today was to find a good owner for this dagger. However...."

Suo Jia paused for a bit before he said in a serious tone, "I need to first clarify some things. I'm only willing to trade this dagger, not to sell it. Don't try to persuade me with money; I'm not lacking in wealth. I only want a water elemental magical item that is Legendary-ranked or higher. I will trade with whoever has something that I am satisfied with."

All of the leaders couldn't help but furrow their brows at Suo Jia's words. An item for a water mage wasn't a problem; after all, any influential thief family would definitely have some in their collection. However... all ten of the major family leaders were here. It looked like... if they didn't sacrifice a lot of wealth, there was no way they'd walk away with that dagger.

As the leaders were all in deep thought, Suo Jia continued, "The main reason I called everyone here today was for you all to personally experience this dagger. Everyone can return now; in half a year, we'll meet here once more. However, next meeting, I hope that everyone will have brought treasures to exchange."

Suo Jia pulled out a dozen lists of items from his pocket and gave one to each of the leaders, while saying, "This is a list of items. If any family leader can gather all the items from this list, I will definitely trade with them. Otherwise, I can only see whose item will arouse my interest."

Chapter 93: Searching for Information Before the Competition (Part 1)

The reason why he had delayed the business deals by three months was because Suo Jia wanted everyone to have enough time to gather up their families' water element treasures. This would increase the chance of a good item emerging. On the other hand, him collecting all the items on that list was more or less an impossible task. These were not items that could simply be bought with money, as only through the hands of these their families would it be possible to collect most of the items in a short period of time.

In addition, Suo Jia was becoming addicted to looking for treasures. He would always walk around the bazaar whenever he had free time, looking around and hoping to find some other equipment useful for thieves. You have to understand, there are many treasures in this world, and only with more capital could one obtain more good things.

Unfortunately, after going there a couple of times, Suo Jia ended up spending 10 million gold only to end up with a bunch of garbage. Only now did Suo Jia understand that ancient, old and dusty looking things that did not actually rust were not necessarily good things. Truthfully speaking, not rusting did not mean it was a treasure.

There was only a month left before the annual competition. Arriving in class early in the morning, he noticed that all the girls were extremely excited. After listening to them, he realized that today was the selection date for the competition's participants.

As for Suo Jia's prestige and status within the class, there was no comparison, and everyone would nominate him for one of the participating positions. However, the competition had a total of 3 spots. It was precisely because of these last two spots that all the girls became excited, as anyone could take those spots.

After learning for an entire year, everyone had already grasped the Moisture, Water Sphere, as well as the Swamp Technique. Although its

lethality was limited, no matter what it was still a qualified topic of learning. Compared to a normal person, they were stronger by far. With their strengths increasing, of course they would want to participate. Either way, no one was going to die, so what was there to be afraid of?

While the girls were all excited talking among themselves, the female lecturer walked in with magic books in her hands. Seeing the female instructor arrive, all of the the girls quieted down.

The female lecturer looked around and sternly said, "Everyone knows that in another month, the annual end-of-the-year grand competition will begin. That's why we have to choose three representatives today to attend the grand competition. As for how people enroll, I'll let everyone decide through elections. I hope that everyone is fair, and acknowledges the strongest students in the class based on their current abilities."

After a slight pause, the female lecturer continued, "Alright, now....I want everyone to take out a pen and paper, and write down the names of three people you think should enter the competition. The three people who have the most votes will be chosen for this competition."

Following the teacher's instructions, all the girls quickly pulled out a pen and paper and quickly began to write. Afterwards, each group leader gathered all of the votes together. They organized them carefully before handing them to the teacher.

After reading the ballots, Suo Jia was without a doubt the first chosen competitor based on the ballots. As for the remaining two, one of them was the straightforward girl that everyone was friendly with, Xue Er, while the last one was a girl that was normally quite popular.

Suo Jia furrowed his brows. Suo Jia understood this girl to a certain extent. She had a round face, a sweet smile, and her eyes were always happily smiling. She didn't laugh or speak, and was an easily likeable young girl. However, Suo Jia knew that this competition was not simply a form of entertainment; she was not at all suitable to enter.

Suo Jia stood up and loudly said to the lecturer, "Instructor, I think that...before the beginning of the competition, we should hold a contest in

our class. The three of us chosen members will accept challenges from any other members of the class. If we lose, then I think that the victor should be the one qualified to represent our class in the competition, right?”

“This...” The lecturer could not help but hesitate slightly at Suo Jia’s words. In her opinion, it didn’t matter who entered the competition. Either way, they were going to lose, so what was the difference? That’s why she had never once considered whether or not the chosen three were the most powerful.

Seeing the teacher’s hesitation, Suo Jia stressed, “Instructor, I’ve said before.....we’ll definitely win this competition. Perhaps you think that we will surely lose, but I don’t feel the same way. That’s why I hope that you will agree to my request, and choose the strongest 3 people in the class to enter the competition. We definitely won’t give up on the dream of victory!”

All of the girls immediately began to echo Suo Jia’s words, and begged the teacher to agree with his request. Regardless of the final victory or defeat, it would only be complete if they tried their best.

Faced with the strong demands of everyone, the instructor couldn’t go against them, and simply agreed. Soon after...all of the students in the class had moved to the training area. Following Suo Jia’s words, all the classmates began to challenge the three chosen competitors.

Very quickly, under Suo Jia’s lead, three people stood on a stage, waiting for the challengers to appear. However, even after waiting for a long time, there was still no one willing to come out. Despite Suo Jia’s urges, everyone merely looked on from the sides, unwilling to come out and issue a challenge.

Seeing this scene, the lecturer proudly said to Suo Jia, “If it’s like this, then there’s no other way. Although I also think that your idea is quite good, this action has absolutely no way of continuing if nobody is willing to challenge any of you.”

Suo Jia couldn’t help but knit his brows together at the lecturer’s words,

and looked for the silver-haired girl. Soon after....Suo Jia found the thin-lipped girl with the long silver hair, her whole body emitting a frigid aura. At the moment...she had her head lowered as she stood there. She hadn't even bothered to look towards their direction.

Suo Jia took a deep breath. Although he didn't know why, Suo Jia knew that if he didn't take the initiative to call her out, she definitely wouldn't come up herself. Suo Jia shouted, "Selena, what are you doing? Didn't you say before that even if it were the final moment, you wouldn't give up on pursuing victory? Didn't you say that victory was something that one was supposed to defend with their life? What are you doing? Could it be that you really want to abandon your beliefs?"

"Hu!" Selena suddenly raised her head after hearing Suo Jia's words. Her eyes shone with a bright and cold light, as she stared unblinkingly at Suo Jia. After a while, Selena finally said sharply, "You three are the people that everyone chose which means you represent everyone's wishes. I don't want people to misunderstand my fight as only a means of seeking fame."

Suo Jia suddenly understood Selena's words. This girl was too ice-cold; she was normally extremely indifferent to the other girls. Although it was unclear how strong she was, it was obvious that nobody would've chosen her. Moreover, although she maintained her attitude towards pursuing victory, she didn't want everyone to misunderstand her. That's why it wasn't that she didn't want to fight, but that she couldn't.

Having understood Selena's thoughts, Suo Jia smiled and shook his head, "Don't worry, Selena. This battle is for the sake of our class's honor. No matter whether you win or lose, everyone will only admire you for your efforts. Nobody will think that you're issuing a challenge for the sake of fame."

After hearing the conversation between Suo Jia and Selena, all the other girls immediately understood Selena's worries. In reality, they hadn't had such complicated thoughts; they had only felt that they lacked the skills to try challenging the chosen three. Moreover, even they would've previously misunderstood Selena, now that they understood her intentions, they naturally wouldn't make such a mistake.

Under the encouragement of all the girls and Suo Jia, Selena finally walked up. She swept her gaze across Suo Jia, Xue Er, and the round-faced girl. Finally....Selena slowly raised her hand and pointed to the round-faced girl, “Since everyone insists that I take up a challenge, then I choose you as my opponent.”

Chapter 94: Searching for Information Before the Competition (Part 2)

Seeing the round-faced girl's frightened state, Selena coldly smiled and said, "The reason I chose you is because you don't have any courage at all. Once you actually enter the arena, you will be afraid. You might not know this, but battles draw blood, and can inflict damage onto people, to the point that...one can even lose his/her life!"

"Ya!" The round-faced girl cried out sharply at Selena's words. She hurriedly covered her own mouth, as she said in a shaking voice, "You... don't you scare me. I won't believe you."

"Ai..." The female lecturer sighed in response to the round-faced girl and said, "No, she's not trying to scare you. What she said is true. Once you enter the tournament arena, drawing blood is merely a minor thing. The slightest mishap can cause one to be crippled, or even lose one's life. Although these chances are very small, such things have actually happened quite a few times."

"Wa!" Crying out once more in shock, the round-faced girl began to tremble as she said, "Then....then I won't compete against you. I won't attend this tournament at all; you can just go instead." After saying this, the round-faced girl ran back like a rabbit into the group of girls, practically leaving a trail of smoke behind her, and was unwilling to show her face again.

Most girls are cowardly. After hearing that entering the tournament was so dangerous, all the girls began to shrink backwards. This time, Suo Jia didn't try to make things difficult for them, and didn't try to force them into entering the tournament. In reality, the thing that Suo Jia was looking for was not strength, but courage!

After learning for an entire year, Suo Jia already had a very deep understanding for all of the water magics. In regards to the few apprentice magics, no matter whether it was the Moisture Technique, Swamp Technique, or the Ice Sphere Technique, their killing powers were

too weak. It could be said the the first ranked ice magics were the only equivalent to other elements' beginner's magic formidability. At the current stage, water mages weren't any different from a priest; they didn't have any methods of attack.

Both would lose, but Suo Jia didn't want everyone to lose so thoroughly. Losing this competition was fine, but they couldn't lose a person. Being defeated wasn't scary, but if one shivered with fear under an enemy's attack, they'd completely lose face. Even worse, if one was scared to tears, then in the future, none of the water elemental mages would ever be able to face the public again.

Boldness and courage were the two standards the Suo Jia was currently looking for in his companions. Since the competition required three people to enter, Suo Jia would rather choose those with more guts. Even if they lose, they would at least show everyone the water elemental mages' drive and braveness.

The selection immediately ended once all the girls began to shrink back from the front. Rejecting the lecturer's order to return to the classroom, Suo Jia said sincerely, "Instructor, there's still a month left until the tournament. I hope that you can give the three of us a week's break so that we can focus on training. As I've said before, we'll definitely win this tournament!"

Profoundly looking at Suo Jia, the lecturer firmly said, "That's not a problem. Actually....the other elemental mages all started to train in a closed room three months ago. This being the case, granting your request for one month off is nothing."

Suo Jia nodded, and shot a meaningful glance at Xue Er and the other girl, signalling them to stay behind. Afterwards....under the lead of the female lecturer, all the other girls left the training area.

After the last girl had finally left, Suo Jia slowly turned around. He looked at Xue Er and the thin-lipped girl and said profoundly, "Since you two want to enter the tournament, then you can't lose face. Even if we lose, we must lose with a straight back. For the sake of giving you girls a

chance of experiencing what the tournament will be like in advance, the three of us should first practice against each other.”

Faced with Suo Jia’s suggestion, the two girls nodded without any hesitation. The only difference was that Xue Er was passionate and unrestrained, cheering in high spirits. In contrast, the thin-lipped girl only nodded slightly. Her expression remained unchanged, and was as cold as it was before.

Suo Jia slightly sized up the two girls. Although they were all the same water mages, and also had the same innate talent in their class and held the greatest strength among the girls, they had completely different personalities.

The feeling that Xue Er gave off was like a rolling sea. She was passionate and bold, and dared to say anything she thought of. Her personality was extremely straightforward and down-to-earth, giving anyone she met feel carefree and at ease. She was like the daughter of the great seas.

On the other hand, the thin-lipped girl was different. One could never even think of seeing any ripples of change in her expression. She never smiled, and she was like a silent icy mountain. However, despite this fact, nobody doubted that underneath her icy exterior, she possessed a blazing heart!

After contemplating for a while, Suo Jia said, “We’ve all known each other for so long, and have been classmates for a year now. However, although you two know my name, I still don’t know yours. Right now....I want to get acquainted with both of you.”

Suo Jia warmly smiled and said, “My name is Suo Jia, water elemental mage apprentice. I’m 8 years old this year, and I live in Holy Light City.” After he finished, Suo Jia smiled at the two girls, waiting for them to introduce themselves.

The first to reply was Xue Er. She candidly replied, “My name is Aimi Xuete. I’m 8 years old this year. My family lives in Labuladuo Ocean City, and I’m a water elemental mage apprentice!”。

As soon as Xue Er finished speaking, both her and Suo Jia both turned to face the thin-lipped girl. Under their gazes, the girl's small mouth moved slightly, then she said in a low voice, "My name is Francis Aila. I'm 8 years old this year, and my family lives in Icebound City. I'm a water elemental mage apprentice."

(TL Note: I have no clue why she got a new name....apparently "silver-haired girl" = "thin-lipped girl" = Selena = Francis Aila. I found this extremely confusing and spent a while trying to figure it out, but my only conclusion was that the author sucks at remembering names. >.< P.S. He did the same thing for Vulcan's Roar/Wrath and Atlantis' Wisdom/Crown T.T)

"Eh...." Hearing Aila's concise and cold self-introduction, Xue Er gave an exaggerated shiver. As her shoulders shook she said, "God, can't you say that with a bit more emotion? You're freezing me to death."

Hearing Xue Er's words, the thin-lipped girl's expression seemed to change from its natural state. However, unless observed closely, one wouldn't be able to tell. After a moment of silence, the thin-lipped girl coldly said, "Sorry, I'm used to speaking like this."

Grudgingly rolling her eyes, Xue Er shrugged her shoulders. Suo Jia watched the two girls' expressions and actions with a helpless look on his face. He couldn't help but shake his head as he laughed, "Alright, both of your names are a bit long. Fortunately, both of you have the character 'Ai' in your names. Therefore...from today onwards, Xue Er is just Aimi. As for you, I'll just call you Aila." Suo Jia said to the thin-lipped girl.

"Hey!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, the thin-lipped girl shouted loudly, "What is that? Aren't you being a bit too lazy? Why must you call us by such random names? Calling her Aimi is fine since that's her original name, but Aila isn't my first name, it's my family name, got it?"

"That! Eh..." Hearing Aila's words, Suo Jia scratched his head and awkwardly replied, "But your name is really too long and difficult to remember. Besides, Xuete isn't an appropriate name for a girl. At the very least, even Xue Er sounds better than Xuete!"

Helplessly rubbing her head, Xue Er frowned and said, "Forget it, it's better if you just call me Aimi. Although it's only my name, it sounds much better than Xue Er. Otherwise, if I'm always called Xue Er, I'll get too used to it."

"Hehe...." Having gotten away with his idea, Suo Jia snickered and said, "Right, isn't that better? You're Aimi, and she's Aila. Now it sounds like the two of you were sisters."

"Yea..." Nodding her head in agreement, Xue Er pouted and said, "It definitely does sound like we're sisters. It's too bad that one's a first name, and one's a last name. Although they both have the 'Ai' sound, the way they're spelled is entirely different!"

Casually waving his head, Suo Jia firmly said, "I don't care if one is a first name, and one is a last name, or if the ways they're written are different. As long as I can call you two by something that can differentiate the both of you from each other, then it's fine. Let's not bother discussing something so useless anymore, and start competing!"

Suo Jia retreated and said to the two girls, "Right now, the two of you should fight against each other first. The regulations are like any other proper battle; you must use all your strength to compete!"

Hearing Suo Jia's words, the two girls regained their energy. They pulled out their staffs, and faced each other 50 meters away, prepared to initiate their attacks as soon as Suo Jia gave the command."

"Ready....start!" Following Suo Jia's voice, the two girls simultaneously raised their staffs. A blue light shot outwards from both of their staffs, as they shot out Water Spheres at practically the same time towards each other.

"Peng!" With a muffled sound, the two Water Spheres collided in midair. Both fell apart upon contact. In terms of activation speed, the two were exactly even. However, in terms of the size of the Water Sphere, Xue Er's was larger; it was nearly two times greater than Aila's!

Suo Jia couldn't help but click his tongue in admiration at the enormous Water Sphere that Xue Er had produced. Even if the current Suo Jia tried

as hard as he could to create a large Water Sphere, it would not necessarily be as large as Xue Er's. Her talent was definitely enviable.

However, in the end, Water Spheres were just Water Spheres. No matter how they were used, they would break apart upon encountering any obstruction. Although Aila's Water Sphere was smaller, she wasn't at a disadvantage. At flying speed, Aila continuously shot out Water Spheres one after another to hold back Aimi's large Water Sphere. Eventually, the two had reached an impasse.

"Che...." After expelling a few Water Spheres, Aila gritted her teeth. She knew that if she continued to expel them like this, even if she wasn't at a disadvantage, it wasn't like she would be able to gain any advantage either. Her body suddenly swayed as she waved her staff. A Swamp Technique shot outwards, with the target being directly under Aimi's feet.

Due to a moment of carelessness, Aimi walked into the swamp. The moment she was thinking of pursuing Aila, she discovered that she had actually been trapped by the swamp. Although she could still move, it was extremely difficult for her to walk. At the same time, she would have trouble dodging Aila's next spell.

Helpless, Aimi could only activate the Aqua Aegis Technique. She wanted to quickly leave the Swamp Technique's effective area, but unfortunately for her, Aila had calmly and clearly planned this. No matter how much Aimi struggled to escape, she would immediately fall into another area of the Swamp Technique. Aimi could only helplessly remain in a difficult situation as she tried to dodge the Water Spheres. With nothing else to do, she could only grit her teeth and fling out her own Swamp Technique.

Both girls were stuck in swamps without any means of escaping, and thus stayed in their places as they continued to attack each other. Seeing this, Suo Jia couldn't help but smile bitterly. What did this count as? A battle like this didn't display a single trace of skill. If they entered the tournament with this kind of attitude, it would be strange if they didn't lose.

Chapter 95: Contesting With Innate Skills

(Part 1)

Since he couldn't bear to watch them go at it any longer, and did not wait for there to be a clear winner. Suo Jia stopped the two. Seeing the girls have vigorous fighting spirits still, but clearly running out of breath, Suo Jia bitterly said, "Let me ask you girls, are you two really going to use your techniques in this way during the competition?"

Looking at Suo Jia in confusion, Aimi replied without understanding, "If we don't use it like this, how else would we use it? Right now, we only know three types of techniques. Even if we wanted to do something else, there are no other tricks to play!"

Tightly furrowing his brows, Suo Jia understood that what Xue Er said was the truth. Even if the one in this situation was Suo Jia, it would still be difficult to exert strength. Otherwise, why did he use the Exhaustion Training Method? Wasn't the reason precisely because it was impossible to obtain victory using strictly Water Art techniques?

After thinking for a long time, Suo Jia lifted his head and looked at the girls while saying, "I want to ask you girls, how are your attitudes towards obtaining victory? Is it something that doesn't really matter if you have it or not, or is it something that you absolutely must obtain?"

Faced with Suo Jia's question, the two girls replied without hesitation, "We need to obtain it, of course. If there was a chance of winning, who would want to lose? Especially losing in front of all those teachers and students!"

Nodding his head slightly, Suo Jia narrowed his eyes and said in a low tone, "If it is like that, then have you ever thought about using the Exhaustion Training Method?"

"What!" Hearing Suo Jia's words, Aimi was astonished and said in disbelief, "Although training in this way could increase one's strength rapidly, it definitely is not worth it. It could increase one's strength right

now, but they'd be losing out in the future!"

Hearing Aimi's words, Suo Jia face did not reveal the slightest change and calmly continued to look at them. Under Suo Jia's gaze, Aila coldly said, "I do not believe in the future. A real warrior never truly knows how long they will live. If this method can quickly improve my strength, then I am willing to try it."

Talking thus far, Aila lifted her head, and her eyes emitted a radiance while saying, "If I am not mistaken, Lord Suo Jia has already completed the Exhaustion Training Method!"

Smiling, Suo Jia calmly said, "You are correct, I used it three times. How about it, do you want to experience the results?"

Faced with Suo Jia's interrogation, the two girls both nodded. Seeing this situation, Suo Jia smiled and said, "Alright, since you girls think that way, then both of you should come at me together."

"What? Attacking together! You want to challenge both of us at once?" Aimi exclaimed loudly.

Not replying to Aimi's words, Suo Jia slowly lifted his right hand, and quickly drew out a spell diagram while flatly saying, "You heard my words clearly. In that case, what are you waiting for?"

Seeing that Suo Jia was already casting his spell, the two girls no longer idled there, and quickly put some distance between them. At the same time, they casted their own spells to intercept Suo Jia's magic.

Seeing the two girls who were putting some distance in between them, Suo Jia smiled. With a wave of his right hand, starting from the base of his feet, a layer of icy frost began to spread out in a circle around Suo Jia.

"Xi!" Seeing this scene, the two girls stopped momentarily and looked dumbfoundedly at Suo Jia. Under the two girls' astonished gazes, the blue colored ice quickly enveloped Suo Jia's body, forming a completely enclosed Glacial Armor!

Looking at the stupid expressions of the two girls, Suo Jia smiled. He waved his right hand in a circular manner, and an Ice Sphere was

launched. Two Ice Spheres were released in succession, and with a roaring sound, they sped towards the two girls. Right when the two girls were about to dodge, the two Ice Spheres crashed into the ground in front of their feet.

The training area was extremely sturdy, but even if its sturdiness matched that of stone, when it received the impact of two cold emitting Ice Spheres, a pit formed. As for the two Ice Spheres, they were no longer visible.

Looking at the two dents in front of them in shock, the two girls' expressions became extremely pale. They were extremely clear that once such violent attacks hit their bodies, even if they did not die their bones would definitely fracture. With only a single hit, they would completely lose their abilities to fight.

In terms of defense, Suo Jia had the Glacial Armor. Their Water Spheres would only make the Glacial Armor even thicker and sturdier, and couldn't harm Suo Jia in the slightest. In addition, Suo Jia's Ice Sphere could defeat them in one hit. There was no need for their participation in this match any more. Even if they had a few more people, it would be pointless; they were on completely different levels.

Dispiritedly putting down their staffs, the two girls bitterly looked at Suo Jia, and Aimi opened her mouth. "Heavens, what kind of training did you do? You are only eight years old, but you've already reached this realm of strength. Not only did you learn meditation, but the Ice Sphere and Glacial Armor as well; how could we possibly defeat you!"

Seeing the two girls' actions, Suo Jia knew that they had already given up. Slowly dispersing the Glacial Armor, Suo Jia calmly said, "There's nothing special about it. I only previously used the Exhaustion Training Method. If you girls want to, you can do all this as well."

Neither of the two girls were indecisive people. After weighing the pros and cons, the two simultaneously expressed that if they only need to do it three times, they were willing to use the Exhaustion Training Method. Everything was for the sake of victory!

Suo Jia furrowed his brows at the girls' response. There was only a month left until the tournament. Based on his experience, there was no way the the Meditation Technique or the Ice Sphere Technique could be learned within a month. Even with the Exhaustion Training Method, the girls would still need time.

Suo Jia helplessly said, "Even if you girls are willing to use the Exhaustion Training Method, it can only increase your strength a bit faster than before. There's no way the results will show before the tournament starts. You might not even be able to learn the Meditation Technique in time, let alone the Ice Sphere and Glacial Armor Techniques."

Suo Jia paused slightly before continuing, "In other words, even if you started using the Exhaustion Training Method now, you won't be able to actually use it. Despite this, do the both of you still wish to persevere?"

Faced with Suo Jia's question, Xue Er resolutely replied, "I can't wait for that long. If I had known that it could make me so powerful earlier, I would've used it ages ago. However, learning about it now isn't too late either. No matter what, I want to use it."

As soon as Aimi finished speaking, Aila continued, "I don't know how long I'll be able to live, nor do I know what battle I'll die in. Therefore...I don't care about the future. As long as it can increase my strength quickly, I'm willing to use any type of technique."

"Alright...." Suo Jia nodded and firmly said, "In that case, then we'll start tomorrow. The two of you should just come to the White Villa. We can go to the underwater training ground together, and stay there until the day of the tournament."

Chapter 96: Contesting With Innate Skills

(Part 2)

The two girls obviously didn't have any objections to Suo Jia's plan, and immediately followed Suo Jia to the White Villa. Since then....the two girls cultivated in the underwater training ground day and night, completely forgetting the concept of time.

Of course, Suo Jia wasn't as hardworking as them, but he wasn't slacking off either. In reality, after obtaining Atlantis' Crown, Suo Jia no longer needed to meditate. His free time had thus increased by a lot. As for training in the Ice and Snow Pact, he could do it any time.

The concept of requiring good items to do good work was something anyone could understand. Suo Jia obviously knew this even clearer than anyone else. Before the tournament, Suo Jia had to choose some weapons and equipment for the two girls. Even if it didn't increase their chances at victory, it would at least provide some more safety for the girls.

Firstly, each of them had to get their own interspatial rings. This was equivalent to giving each of them three extra lives. They could use it during critical moments, and reverse the flow of battle.

Since defense was somewhat ensured by this, the next point to address was attack. Although both girls used staffs, it was obvious that neither of the staffs were high grade goods. They could only increase water magic's formidability by a very minor amount. Staffs like these weren't enough to grant victory to them in the tournament.

Of course, Suo Jia didn't plan on buying them too highly ranked and precious staffs either. Even if he did give them High-ranked staffs, they wouldn't be able to bring out the staff's power. In reality, Suo Jia had been contemplating this for a while – it was best to get the most appropriate staff. However, exactly what kind of staffs could match with these girls well?

Was it really impossible for a water mage apprentice to activate the Ice

Sphere Technique? Actually, this wasn't entirely correct. Some staffs originally had the ability to condense ice; and Water Spheres shot out could congeal into Ice Spheres. If mages that could already use the Ice Sphere Technique used such staffs, then they could lower the Ice Sphere's temperature, boosting its hardness and its strength even further.

Suo Jia's current objective were these very type of staffs. Obviously, Suo Jia would only buy these for the two girls. He personally didn't plan on using a staff; he had already gotten used to activating magic with his bare hands. He didn't plan on changing his methods at the moment. It should be known that uses of a staff also had a restriction limit. One had to practice it quite a lot; it wasn't like it could be used just by picking it up and waving it around.

Aside from a few Legendary and Epic-ranked equipment, most staffs weren't things that anyone could use. For example, if the Vulcan's Roar was taken by a mage apprentice, only 1% of its formidability could be brought out. Only absolute peak-level experts would be able to use the staff's entire extent of formidability.

Suo Jia didn't plan on purchasing Legendary or Epic-ranked staffs for the two girls; that was a request that couldn't be granted even if it was presented to him. Besides....Suo Jia didn't have the money to purchase such things anymore. Thus, Suo Jia could only buy for them common type staffs that official mages used.

However, despite this, staffs that had the ability to condense ice were extremely uncommon and precious. Their prices were also much higher than normal staffs. Fortunately... Suo Jia had Emma as his friend. Without much effort, two beautiful models of ice-condensing staffs were handed over to Suo Jia for free.

Suo Jia entered the underwater training area with a staff in each hand. At that moment...the two girls had just recovered from the Exhaustion Training Method. Seeing Suo Jia enter, both of them turned around excitedly to look at him.

After the staffs were handed to them....Suo Jia commanded for Aimi and

Aila to test the special effect of the staff on magic targets that he had carefully placed in front of them.

The first one to test it was naturally Aimi. She raised her staff, and in an instance, a Water Sphere about the size of a person's head whistled as it leapt out of the staff. It let out a muffled bang and it directly hit the magic target opposite of her.

"This..." Hesitantly looking at the staff in Aimi's hand, the three people were momentarily stunned. Theoretically, shouldn't the ice-condensing staff release Ice Spheres?

After some contemplation, Aila curiously walked forward. Her staff lit up, and a blue Ice Sphere appeared from the staff with a shrill sound. It emitted a white air, and after colliding into the magic target, the Ice Sphere broke into many pieces, which flew all over that place.

"What! Your staff is fine; mine's broken. Let's try switching." After seeing this scene, Aimi grabbed the other's staff, and then shoved her staff that had shown no results into Aila's hands.

Aimi lifted the staff with 100% confidence, and aimed it at the magic target a few dozen meters away. She once again activated a Water Sphere, and with a blue flash of light, the massive Water Sphere once again leapt out of the staff and collided into the magic target.

Aimi's mouth dropped open in shock at this. She looked disbelievingly at her staff. At the same time, Aila pursed her thin lips, and the staff in her hand lit up, once again whizzing out an Ice Sphere.

"Wa..." Aimi's small mouth began to tremble as she wailed out loud, "I give up! Even the staff is bullying me! Why can't I release an Ice Sphere? How come she can?"

Seeing Aimi crying loudly gave Suo Jia an endless headache. However, he had no way of stopping it. Just as Suo Jia was trying to solve this difficult problem, Aila coldly said, "Congratulations, Aimi. If my guess is correct, your attribute is Heaven's One Holy Water. No matter how low the temperature is, I'm afraid that you most likely won't be able to condense it into ice."

“What? Heaven’s One Holy Water? What’s that?” Aimi’s eyes grew wide in curiosity at Aila’s words, forgetting how she had just been crying so miserably.

Facing Xue Er, Aila coldly explained, “Heaven’s One Holy Water is a special attribute. It’s said that it only appears once a century. Moreover, two people with the Heaven’s Holy Water attribute definitely cannot meet, because only after the first person dies can a second one appear.”

Aila paused for a moment before continuing, “The characteristic of Heaven’s One Holy Water is that no matter how low the temperature is, ice cannot be condensed. However, the freezing effect is far stronger than that of ice magics.”

“Eh!” Hearing Aila’s words, Suo Jia asked in confusion, “How could that be? Theoretically speaking, shouldn’t the freezing effects of anyone’s magic be increased by lower temperature?”

Without batting an eyelid, Aila looked at Suo Jia and flatly said, “If you don’t believe me, you can test it yourself. Check if the piece of ice or the freezing water is colder. I believe you’ll quickly find your answer.”

“That...” Suo Jia couldn’t help but go into a foolish daze at Aila’s words. There was no need to test it. If the temperature was the same, then one would obviously freeze faster if their body was completely submerged in the water.

Suo Jia was envious to death of Aimi, and shot her a jealous look. He looked at the talented her, and then looked back at himself; Ai....how could there be such a great difference between himself and her?

Catching Suo Jia’s envious look, Aimi finally brightened. In fact, she was so happy that she was grinning from ear to ear. However, Aila then said, “But while Heaven’s One Holy Water has incomparable freezing effects, its defense is extremely weak, and its magic has low destructive powers. It can only kill living things; it’s very difficult to break any inanimate objects. Its general magic characteristics are the same as normal water magic’s.”

Suo Jia opened his mouth in shock; he had finally understood. The

Heaven's Holy Water was indeed very powerful, since its freezing effects were 2x stronger than ice magic's. However, with such an outstanding advantage, it also had a disadvantage; the water's form meant that one with Heaven's One Holy Water didn't have a defense like the Glacial Armor, nor a penetrating attack like the Ice Arrow. It could be said that Heaven's One Holy Water used its extraordinarily low temperature to instantly freeze enemies to death.

Hearing Aila's words, Aimi's previously large smile gradually faded. Her large eyes began to form tears once more; as soon as something went wrong, she'd go back to crying.

Seeing the tearful Aimi, Suo Jia no longer knew if he should be envious of her anymore. While gaining the 2x stronger freezing effects, she had also lost powerful destructible abilities. Was this really good or bad?

At that moment, Aimi seemed to release her resentment onto Aila and angrily shouted, "You must be jealous of me. That's right.....it must be because you are jealous of my talent that you make my Heaven's Only Holy Water sound so unbearable. I don't believe that my Heaven's Only Holy Water is inferior to your ice magic in any way!"

Faced with Aimi's challenge, the Aila who was incomparably stubborn in obtaining victory said in reply, "Your Heaven's One Holy Water is indeed powerful, but it doesn't necessarily beat my Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons. Although my ice magic doesn't have freezing effects as strong as yours, it's still stronger, harder, sharper, and more destructive than yours. In addition, it also has higher defensive powers."

Hearing Aila's words, Aimi opened her mouth, wanting to refute her words. However, she had no means of doing so; after all.....she wasn't as proficient as Aila in the secrets of the water element, and thus lacked the ability to argue against her.

"Damn...." Although Aimi was speechless, Suo Jia's face turned bitter as he said dejectedly, "What is this? One of you has Heaven's Only Holy Water, and the other has the Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons. How come it's just me that doesn't have any special attribute, and is entirely normal?"

Aimi immediately calmed down at Suo Jia's words, and she giggled, "Even if your Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons isn't inferior to my Heaven's Only Holy Water, I'm at least stronger than the average person. Haha....I'm in between."

Sweeping a cold glance at Aimi, Aila said in a frigid voice, "Who told you that normal was bad? Although his ability to freeze isn't as good as yours, nor is it as hard and sharp as mine, Lord Suo Jia has some characteristics from the both of us. Although his strength is extremely average, he isn't necessarily any weaker than us."

After a slight pause, Aila earnestly said, "Talent is admittedly important, but ultimately, it's still the person that matters most. No matter how amazing one's talent is, it doesn't mean that he/she can become an almighty mage. In reality, the two of us only have some distinct characteristics. Lord Suo Jia, on the other hand, is more all-around."

Chapter 97: Preparing to Fight Fire Arts

(Part 1)

“Ai...” Bitterly sighing, Suo Jia said, “Forget it Aila, you don’t need to comfort me. I understand my talent very well, and it’s not comparable to the two of you.”

“No!” Hearing Suo Jia’s words, Aila resolutely said, “I never comfort others. No matter when it happens, to whom it happens, or under whichever circumstances, I always say things as they are. In training matters especially, I will not have any pretenses. At the very least, I will not deceive you.”

Speaking thus far, Aila paused momentarily, and after collecting her thoughts, she continued, “Being outstanding has its own benefits, and being balanced has its own benefits as well. In truth, if I had the choice, I would rather choose to be a normal person and not have this Ice Fiend’s Nine Prisons. No matter how precious it is or how hard it is to obtain, it is all the same to me.”

“What are you trying to say?” Suo Jia asked in confusion after hearing Aila’s words.

Deeply looking at Suo Jia, she said in a heavy tone, “To be honest, although you don’t have any outstanding aspects, you also don’t have any weak points. Being well-rounded is your greatest characteristic, and only through being balanced can you advance and master the two aspects of water arts, and interchangeably use the two.”

Aila had a vague expression on her face as she muttered, “Although in the aspects of hardness, firmness and sharpness, I am far more outstanding when compared to you, once the steel-like ice breaks, I lose all the flexible and unnatural changes of water. Weighing the pros and cons, can one truly say that having this is beneficial or harmful?”

After a slight pause, Aila suddenly looked at Suo Jia and quickly said, “That reminds me, Lord Suo Jia, since you even learned the Glacial Armor,

then have you learned the Revolving Frozen Gas?”

Faced with Aila’s question, Suo Jia calmly nodded and said, “I have already learned it, and can already freely cast this spell. You are asking this because...”

Enviously glancing at Suo Jia, Aila continued, “Actually, perhaps you’ve never thought about this, but mixing the Revolving Frozen Gas with the Swamp Technique can imitate a high-rank ice system spell – Icebound.”

Hearing Aila’s words, Suo Jia first furrowed his brows, but then his eyes suddenly lit up. Indeed... a large portion of the Swamp Technique was water, so as long as one used the Revolving Frozen Gas to freeze the swamp, then wouldn’t the opposing target stuck in the swamp be frozen as well? Compared to that high-rank ice system spell, these two different methods could lead to the same result!

Seeing Suo Jia’s ecstatic expression, Aila said, “You can also first utilize a Water Sphere Technique, and when the opponent is fully drenched, you can use the Revolving Frozen Gas. This will allow you to achieve the result of the High Level spell – Icicle Prison.”

“Wow!” Hearing Aila’s words, Suo Jia’s eyes immediately glowed brightly. Aila’s pointers woke him up, and Suo Jia suddenly realized that his killing potential could be increased by several folds. In fact, what Aila had helped him realize was a brand new way of thinking. This was a foreign world that Suo Jia had never touched upon before!

Glancing at Aimi, Aila faintly said, “It doesn’t matter whether it is me or Aimi, neither of us can use the other’s skills. My specialty is ice, while hers is water. Only you, despite not being particularly good at either, can be good at both. When morphing the two types together, your magic can be used in countless ways, and you can become the most difficult opponent.”

“Wa!” Hearing Aila saying so many good things about Suo Jia’s situation, Aimi at once began to shout out, “I don’t care anymore, I also want to be balanced. I don’t want some Heaven’s One Holy Water, I want to be like Suo Jia and freely manipulate and transform!”

Coldly glaring at Aimi, Aila said in an overcast mood, "Stop complaining, your talent is something that others beg for but will never receive. In regards to unnatural transformations, even Suo Jia could not be compared to you. No matter how ice tries to change, how can it be more flexible than water?"

Speaking thus far, Aila lifted her hand and said while looking at the ceiling, "A person's natural talent does not decide their achievements in life. Anyone can become formidable, but the crucial point is whether or not you work hard, and how intelligent your mind is."

Aila then turned around and looked at Aimi. Although her expression was ice cold, her tone was sincere, "Therefore, from now on just focus on yourself. Within this world, there is only a single person who has the Heaven's One Holy Water, and only one person with the Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons. We have to have faith in ourselves, and then display our specialties to their limits. Once we reach that level, no matter what kind of enemy we face, we will not have to fear them. Being unique has its own benefits, and being balanced has its own benefits as well. In the end, it still depends on the person."

Hearing Aila's cold analysis, Suo Jia and Aimi calmed down. After a while, Suo Jia cheerfully said, "I feel that Aila's words are on point. I won't be discouraged anymore. Just as Aila has explained, I need to believe in myself. However right now, I need to carefully think about Aila's advice in order to gain more insights."

Hurriedly saying goodbye to the two girls, Suo Jia entered the underground isolated chamber, and sat cross-legged on the cushion. Suo Jia painstakingly contemplated for a while. After Aila's advice, Suo Jia had realized for the first time that his ability to alternate the combination of ice and water were his greatest advantages and his best way out of situations. Based on this thought process, he could do many different things. The number of attack methods at his disposal had also increased greatly.

On the other side, Aimi and Aila both began to start cultivating again. Before the tournament began, they didn't have the privilege of resting.

Aimi's Heaven's One Water Sphere and Aila's Nine Prison Ice Sphere flew out in quick succession, causing the entire underwater training area to fill with whistling and whizzing sounds.

They all understood that the time remaining was running like water, and the time that passed was like lightning. When one focused in order to accomplish something, the passing time was always astonishingly fast. A month's worth of time would pass by like the blink of an eye.

Early in the morning, Suo Jia walked out from his confined room. Across from him, Aimi and Aila had already long ago finished preparing and were patiently waiting for him. Since today was the day of the tournament, they did not cultivate too excessively in order to preserve their spirit and magic powers. In preparation for today's competition, this was the smartest thing to do.

After examining the equipment the two had, the three ate a sumptuous breakfast and headed straight for the school. Upon entering their classroom, the three were immediately caught up in the sea of girls. After not seeing them for an entire month, the hundred girls were all worried about them and formed an impenetrable crowd.

After enduring through an entire month of arduous cultivation, the three all underwent significant changes. Not only did their self-esteem show a change, but their faces all revealed steadfast expressions as well. These were looks that only individuals who underwent difficult training would have.

Seeing the three individuals prepared to enter a battlefield, the instructor sighed in praise and nodded her head. "Very good, you guys are really exceptional. No matter what the end result is, I respect your perseverance thus far."

Hearing the instructor's voice, all of the girls revealed looks of admiration. Seeing the girls in high spirits, Aimi made a small fist and confidently said, "Don't worry; no matter what, this time we will be sure to win!"

In response to Xue Er's words, the instructor smiled, but did not take

them seriously. She believed that only when they stood on top of that battlefield and faced other elemental mages would they truly understand how weak they were. Before that happened, no matter what others said, they would not believe anything else.

Looking at the current time, there wasn't much time before the grand opening ceremony. Clapping her hands together, the lecturer organized all of her students and escorted Suo Jia, Aila, and Aimi towards the tournament meeting area.

There wasn't much to say during the opening ceremony; there was only the military entrance, and the exchange of pleasantries between the heads of the school and Holy Light City. After these conventional procedures, it was already nine in the morning. Soon after... the official tournament had finally begun.

Chapter 98: Preparing to Fight Fire Arts

(Part 2)

The entire school had the earth, water, fire and wind four major systems. Each system was divided into the warrior and mage professions, so every grade had a total of eight education facilities. Eight delegations, four mages and four warriors.

Because the Holy Light Academy required ten years of study before graduating, it had a total of nine grades. With every grade having eight regions, there was a total of 72 regions and 72 delegations. Suo Jia, Aimi, and Aila's group of 3 were one of the 72 delegations. They were the youngest group of water mages, and in the history of water mages, they were inevitably seen as the weakest group.

The individual grade grand competitions were the first to be executed. For Suo Jia's group, they had to first defeat the similar grade level's earth, fire and wind three systems of mages, as well as the earth, water, fire and wind four systems of warriors, before they could be known as the grade's champions and obtain the right to challenge the higher grade levels.

Due to a result of each school district having eight teams, in order to speed up the competition schedule, the competition had to adopt an elimination system. If one won, he/she could continue in this competition. But if one lost, then he/she were eliminated. That's why in total, eight would become four, four would become two, and two would become one. Within three rounds of the competition, they would be able to decide on the grade champion.

Looking at the past thousand years of history, water elemental mage apprentice had never made it past a single round, and were more or less spectators. Only until five grades later when they became Novice Mage Trainees would they slowly become stronger.

Of course, this year was different. Suo Jia, Aimi, and Aila had the goal of becoming their grade's champions. As for challenging the older grade levels after becoming the champions, the three of them hadn't thought

that far yet. After all... just winning their grade level was already an extremely difficult task.

According to the rules, the team with the worst performances last year had the right to be the first to pick their opponents. If the result was the same and they still lost, then they would simply continue that way in future years. That's why... historically, the water mages who had never won a single round, were the first to be able to choose their opponents.

Since he was the only guy, as well as the team captain, when the time came for the captains to gather, Suo Jia obviously stepped forward bravely. Standing together with the other seven team captains, he stood within the competition area, and the challenge procedures continued from there.

What was worth mentioning was that the grade competition was not held within the Lord's Guild Hall, but instead held inside the nine great branch buildings simultaneously. Because of this, each of the locations were packed with the spectating students.

Although the sub-venues weren't as large or luxurious as the Lord's Guild Hall, nor were they as complete, they could still easily accommodate for each grade's eight delegations, as well as the 800 students. With almost a thousand gathered in the field all cheering in high spirits, they all encouraged their own delegation on.

A crucial point was that the Water Arts did not have a warrior division. Otherwise, Suo Jia would definitely choose to be a warrior, and would not be a mage. However right now, there were actually a group of individuals representing the water warrior delegation; what did this mean?

In truth, they weren't real water elemental warriors. Strictly speaking, they were ice warriors. Because they were naturally born with unique physiques that allowed them to cultivate ice battle qi, they could freely utilize cold qi to freeze their opponents during battles.

Although ice warriors could control cold qi, they could not control water, and could not become mages either. Their unique gifts allowed them to become frightening quick-freeze warriors. They were powerful,

and were not below fire elemental warriors in terms of strength; the ice warriors could even slightly restrain the fire warriors.

Surveying the entire competition field, more than eighty percent of them were male, and there were only a few girls. Of course, there were still places where the girls gathered, and that was naturally the region that Suo Jia's classmates were. There were almost a hundred girls, and they looked like a hundred skylarks. They were chattering among themselves, both lively and cute, causing students from other elements to look in this direction from time to time.

On the competition field, Suo Jia and the other seven captains arrived in front of the judges. Sweeping their gazes over them in an imposing manner, the judges frowned and said, "Based on the performances of the past years, the first to choose their opponents are supposed to be the water mage delegation. Who is the captain? Take one step forward."

Hearing the judge's words, Suo Jia took a small step forwards, and indifferently said, "I am the water elemental mage captain."

Doubtfully giving Suo Jia a glance, it was very obvious that the judge was surprised that the water mage captain was a male. Could it be that... the Water Arts were no longer the girl's realm? When did a male become the outstanding one?

However, confusion was personal; he still had his work to carry out. Deeply looking at Suo Jia, the judge said in a serene voice, "Based on past performances, you are free to select your opponent, right now... you should indicate who your opponent in this competition will be!"

Faintly nodding his head, Suo Jia turned his body and faced the other seven captains. Seeing Suo Jia's turned body, the other seven pursed their lips in disdain. If they had to face another opponent, then the results would be difficult to predict. But facing the water mages, then this was already a guaranteed win. This wasn't even a fight between the two people at the same level.

Seeing the other seven captain's prideful faces, Suo Jia began to feel anger stirring up within him. They dared to look down upon others;

sooner or later he was going to let them feel his strength. For now, it was still best to just pick an opponent before doing other things.

Suo Jia's gaze swept across each of the seven captains. He smiled and pointed at one of them while saying, "Alright, I choose that fire elemental mage captain to become our sacrificial lamb!"

"What!" The seven captains, as well as the judge, cried out in shock at Suo Jia's words. "Classmate, are you sure you choose the fire elemental mage captain? You need to get this straight, since the first year, the Fire Arts division have been the reigning champion for the past 18 years. Are you sure you don't want to carefully reconsider your decision?"

Resolutely waving a hand, Suo Jia said seriously, "No need to reconsider. I choose the Fire Arts." Suo Jia then turned around, and walked off the platform before the judge had the chance to continue blabbering on.

After leaving the platform, all the girls swarmed around Suo Jia, and a chaotic jumble of questions ensued. Seeing Suo Jia's completely confident and satisfied expression, the lecturer smiled, "Let Teacher guess, you must've chosen the wind elemental mages, right? Relatively speaking, the Wind Arts, although stronger than the Fire Arts, have limits to their strength. If you chose them, our chances of victory are a bit higher."

Glancing at the lecturer, Suo Jia shook his head, "No! I did choose mages, but not the wind elemental mages. Since our goal is to become the champion, then there's no point in considering any other places. Thus, I directly challenged the fire elemental mages!"

"What! Are you crazy? The Fire Arts mage apprentices are the strongest. That fact is certain. Why would you choose them!" The lecturer cried out in panic.

Coldly looking at the lecturer, Suo Jia profoundly said, "I'll say it again. Our goal is this year's championship. Aside from first place, even second place is of no value. In that case, we have to directly challenge the Fire Arts division, which has held the championship position for the last 18 years!"

The female lecturer gaped at Suo Jia. Just as she was going to reply, the

other seven captains walked off the platform. She knew that this meant the subgroup divisions had been completed, so anything she said at this point was meaningless.

The lecturer stayed silent. Suo Jia couldn't be bothered to mind her; instead he called Aimi and Aila over and whispered to them, "Listen, when we go against the Fire Arts group later, the first competitor will be Aimi, and the second will be Aila. Any objections?"

"Wa!" Aimi excitedly hugged Suo Jia's arm while happily shouting, "That's great Suo Jia, really amazing. To think that you gave me the limelight! Hehe...." Aimi stood on her tiptoes, and kissed Suo Jia on the cheek.

Suo Jia knit his brows. He had absolutely no reaction towards Aimi's kiss; he only felt that his previously clean face was now damp from the kiss.

Wiping his face clean, Suo Jia looked over at Aila and asked, "What about you? Do you have any objections to this arrangement? If you do, you can say them now."

Shaking her head, Aila replied, "This arrangement is very reasonable. However....are you really not going to go up first? Are you really willing to give such a great opportunity to us instead? You should know that the two of us alone are enough to blast off our three opponents. You won't have much of a chance to go up."

Helplessly smiling, Suo Jia said despairingly, "I also want to be the first to go out. However, if that happens, then won't the two of you have no chance to go up at all?"

Faced with Suo Jia's question, Aila pondered for a bit before resolutely shaking her head and saying, "No chance. Absolutely no chance at all. If you go out, then I'm afraid the competition might end in only a single minute."

Lightly patting Aila's shoulder, and moving closer to her ear, Suo Jia whispered, "Relax, I'll have my chance eventually. Moreover...since I'm the last one out, our victory in the competition is better ensured. There's

no way we'll lose, since.....we need to create history!"

Awkwardly shifting away, Aila tightly pursed her thin lips. It seemed that she was extremely uncomfortable with how close Suo Jia was to her. After subconsciously moving further away, Aila said, "You should be the one relaxing. I'll definitely use all my efforts to go forth in this competition, and strive to defeat the Fire Arts!"

Suo Jia nodded happily. Just as he wanted to say something else, the judge on the competition stage commanded that the Fire Arts group's and the Water Arts group's first members were to enter the stage.

Not daring to waste anymore time with words, Suo Jia hastily whispered in Aimi's ear, "Aimi, since you're the first one up, you have to be more cautious. We've already concluded that fire elemental mage apprentices are normally proficient in Fireballs, Sea of Fire, and the Soulfire Circle. As soon as you go up, immediately activate a Aqua Aegis, and then use the Swamp Technique to trap them in place. If they aren't captured by it, then just directly start blasting out Water Spheres, and see who consumes all of their magic power first!"

"Yea..." Confidently nodding, Aimi smiled and said, "Don't worry, with my Heaven's One Holy Aqua Aegis, their Fireballs and Sea of Fire won't harm me at all. This round is definitely my victory!" Aimi gracefully stood up, and began to stride towards the stage under the thousands of gazes from the audience.

Chapter 99: Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons (Part 1)

In everyone's eyes, the battle between the Fire Arts and the Water Arts would end within 30 seconds. A few Sea of Fires would be cast first, and once the people from the Water Arts were forced into a corner, one Fire Ball would be able to break the Aqua Aegis. By then, one more Fire Ball would be enough to defeat the opponent. Historically, most of the water elemental mage apprentices had been defeated this way.

Standing on the arena, the first person from the Fire Arts faced Xue Er. He looked below the platform where Suo Jia was standing, and his mouth twitched in disdain. The first competitor from the Fire Arts asked, "How come your captain didn't come, and you were instead sent to your death? Is your captain a man or not?"

"Hmph!" Delicately snorting, Aimi scornfully said, "I don't know whether or not our captain is a man, but I do know that if he came up, then we wouldn't be able to play. That's why he has to stay seated."

While speaking, Xue Er coolly pointed her staff at the fire mage and said loudly for everyone in the arena to hear, "Listen well. I, Aimi Xuete, will defeat you. We water elemental mages will bring about history right here and now!"

"Pfft....hahahahahaha!" The entire arena boomed with laughter. Even the nearby referee couldn't help but chuckle. This girl was really too naive. To think that she wanted to bring about history, it wasn't something that just anyone could create!

Not daring to tarry any longer, the referee suddenly raised his hand and loudly declared, "Alright, both team members get ready. Round...start!"

As soon as he heard the referee's command, the fire mage immediately retreated backwards. The staff in his hand lit up, and with a flash of red light, bright flames immediately rose from underneath Aimi's feet. Not bad...this was precisely the Fire Arts' auxiliary magic, similar to the

Swamp Technique: Sea of Fire!

Originally, the individual who trained in Water Arts would only be able to flee in desperation once trapped in the Sea of Fire. However, Aimi had absolutely no intention of running away. The instant before the Sea of Fire had risen, her Aqua Aegis had materialized with a ripple. The blue curtain of water had enshrouded and protected Aimi right before the Sea of Fire had been activated.

For a moment, the entire audience was unable to speak after witnessing this scene. Aimi stood there amidst the Sea of Fire like a fairy. Any flames near her Aqua Aegis were completely extinguished. Even the slightly further flames were eroded by the cold air, and were forced backwards from her.

Proudly looking down at her opponent, who was currently staring in shock at her Water Arts, Aimi said in disdain, "Let me offer you some advice. If you think my Water Arts are the same as other people's, then you are doomed to lose. I can clearly tell you now that I am not afraid of any of your Fire Arts in the slightest. In terms of elements, water subdues fire. Today, you will definitely lose!"

"Che..." Faced with Aimi's arrogance, the fire mage couldn't help but grit his teeth. His staff once again lit up, and a Fire Ball whizzed outwards, shooting towards Aimi as fast as lightning.

As the Fire Ball leapt towards her, the corners of Aimi's mouth drew backwards as she said with contempt, "You think that a Fire Ball of this level can hurt me? Stop deluding yourself!"

As Aimi moved, the Fire Ball had instantly arrived in front of her. The next moment.....made everyone dumbfounded as they gaped at the scene that had just occurred. Just as the Fire Ball was a meter away from the Aqua Aegis, the entire Fire Ball had quickly started to wither up. Once the Fire Ball finally passed through the meter mark and crashed into the Aqua Aegis, it had instantly been extinguished, just like a match dropped into water. During the whole scene, Aimi's Aqua Aegis hadn't even rippled once.

Looking down at the fire mage opposite of her, Aimi scoffed, "Just as expected. Do you have any other techniques? Oh! That's right...there's the Soulfire Circle too. Don't hold yourself back, and just activate that. Let's see if that can harm me at all!"

Faced with Aimi's provocation, the fire mage suddenly panicked. The Sea of Fire was useless, and even the Fire Ball had done nothing. What was he supposed to do now? Could it be that he really did have to rely on the Soulfire Circle? What a joke, the Soulfire Circle was an AOE attack. In terms of attack power, it wasn't much better than the Fire Ball.

Helpless, the fire mage could only continuously wave his staff, and shoot out Fire Balls one after another. Seeing this scene, Aimi smiled to herself. She leisurely walked towards the fire mage, completely ignoring any Fire Balls that collided into her Aqua Aegis.

All the people witnessing this couldn't help but be skeptical: could this all be a dream? Since when could a water elemental mage apprentice bully others like this? That's right...this was definitely bullying. Because she knew the other party couldn't do anything to her, Aimi was walking right into the fire mage's magics, almost as if she were an earth elemental warrior.

Under everyone's gazes, Aimi finally arrived about 10 meters in front of the other party. She slowly raised her water staff, and a blue Water Sphere instantly jumped out. It directly shot towards the fire mage, who had just ended his string of Fire Balls.

All long ranged attacks had the same characteristic; the closer the distance, the harder they were to dodge. Now that the distance between the two was only around 10 meters, it took less than half a second for the Water Sphere to cover the distance between the staff and its target. There was absolutely no way to evade it. At such a close distance, Aimi wasn't scared of the opposite party's magic attacks at all, but what about the fire mage? Could he also resist Aimi's Water Sphere?

Seeing the enormous Water Sphere instantly reach him, the fire mage couldn't help but close his eyes. At this point, he could only face it head

on. After all....the Water Sphere's strength was limited, and at such close quarters, it lacked momentum. There was no way it could cause that much damage.

"Peng!" A muffled sound rang out, and the enormous Water Sphere fiercely hit the Fire Arts contestant. Due to the magic's great force, the fire mage staggered back a few steps. At the same time, the entire Water Sphere burst with a huge splash, completely soaking his entire body.

"Dedede...." Just as all the people were expecting the fire mage to counterattack....another scene shocked the audience. After suffering the Water Sphere's attack, the fire mage tightly hugged his arms, and began shivering fiercely. His face had turned deathly white, and his lips had become ashen as well. Had the cold air invaded his body?

Gleefully watching the shivering fire mage, Aimi arrogantly pointed her staff at him and said, "Hey! What do you think? Do you still want to continue competing?"

Terrified, the fire mage shook his head and looked at Aimi with fear in his eyes as he chattered, "No....not competing any more. I concede....I concede!"

Hearing the fire mage's words, the referee stared blankly at him for a while, before announcing that the victory was Aimi's. At the same time, the shivering fire mage had completely lost his threatening manner, and walked off the arena.

Seeing the fire mage left, the crowd of fire elemental mage apprentices all rushed towards him, and scolded him, "What's wrong with you? How could you be so useless? You couldn't even defeat a female water elemental mage; why don't you just go die?"

The first contestant from the Fire Arts seemed to not have heard anyone's abusive words, and continued to shiver violently. Seeing this, the Fire Arts team captain knit his brows and asked, "What exactly is wrong with you? Even if you were defeated, there's no need to be like this, right? You were only hit with a Water Sphere, not a bullet, OK?"

Hearing the captain's words, the fire mage continued to violently shiver

as he slowly extended his hands. Seeing the first contestant's purple hands, the Fire Arts instructor shouted in shock, "God! He's been frostbitten! Hurry up and bring him to the infirmary. If he isn't healed right away, his hands will fester!"

Following the instructor's words, a few of the students immediately rushed the first contestant out of the tournament area. At the same time, the Fire Arts instructor turned around to look at the arena in amazement. At the moment....Aimi was proudly waving at the audience. Since she had been victorious, she was beyond happy.

On the other side, the Fire Arts team captain asked his instructor in confusion, "Teacher, I don't understand. The first contestant had only been hit with a Water Sphere. How could he have been frostbitten? Wasn't it the Ice Arts that could induce frostbite?"

Shaking his head, the Fire Arts lecturer solemnly replied, "Normally speaking, it's as you say. However, if the opponent has Heaven's One Holy Water, then the result is different!"

"Heaven's One Holy Water? What's that?" The Fire Arts captain asked.

Glancing at the student, the Fire Arts instructor said in a serious voice, "Heaven's One Holy Water is water that can never condense into ice. No matter how low the temperature is, it will always maintain its liquid state. Its freezing power far surpasses the Ice Arts' by at least 2 times!"

The Fire Arts instructor helplessly looked at the Fire Arts captain and continued, "Actually, Heaven's One Holy Water is the bane of any fire mage. Its extremely low temperature can completely cool any flames, and its liquid state can buffer the flames' explosive impulse. In general, unless there are many experts opposing the Heaven's One Holy Water at once, anyone that practices in the Fire Arts is doomed to die if they encounter Heaven's One Holy Water. Just like what you witnessed just now, the Fire Arts practitioner has no chance of countering!"

"What!" Hearing the instructor's words, the Fire Arts captain cried out in shock, "Could it be that we're fated to lose today? Do we really have no way of going against Heaven's One Holy Water?"

Chapter 100: Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons (Part 2)

Helplessly looking at the student he was most proud of, the fire mage instructor bitterly replied, "I also don't want to lose to the water mages. However, it's the truth that Heaven's One Holy Water is our worst nemesis. Moreover....that girl's training far surpasses yours!"

The fire mage instructor turned to face Aimi and he muttered, "Heaven's One Holy Water is the ruler of water. Perhaps...she might actually make history today. It can be said that both her talent and her training are magnificent!"

The referee still standing on the platform urged the next fire mage representative to enter. With no other option, the fire mage instructor turned around and bitterly said to the fire mage team captain, "Go tell the referee that we forfeit today's match."

"What!?" The fire mage captain replied incredulously, "How can we do that?! We haven't even started yet; it isn't guaranteed that we'll lose. No matter what, I want to fight till the end!"

Clenching his eyes in pain, the fire mage instructor said in a trembling voice, "And what's the point in that? You can't even break her Aqua Aegis, and since her Heaven's One Holy Water has twice the freezing power, she could paralyze you in an instant. If you think that seeking your own disgrace is the same as glory, then go ahead and lose by that girl's hands!"

The fire mage captain shook at the instructor's words. He knew that although his own strength was stronger than the first contestant's, it was obvious that he couldn't do anything the first contestant had failed to do either.

After painfully contemplating his choices for a while, finally....the fire mage captain strode up to the arena. He shot a dark look at Aimi and turned around to tell the referee, "We forfeit this match!"

Without paying any mind to the referee's shock, the fire mage captain turned back to Aimi and said through gritted teeth, "Heaven's One Holy Water, right? Don't be too proud of yourself; even though we admit we are not your equal today, I'll definitely come up with a way to defeat you next year. Just wait, you'll see for sure!"

Seeing the fire mage captain turned around angrily and walked away, Aimi couldn't help but gape, dumbfounded. She hadn't imagined that they wouldn't even try to compete, and would directly forfeit the match. In addition...they even knew that she had Heaven's One Holy Water!

Although she felt that she hadn't played enough, the other party had already conceded, so continuing to stay there was pointless. Pouting, Aimi walked off the platform in annoyance, and sat down hard on her chair.

Seeing Aimi leave the stage, the female lecturer walked over in excitement and said in a trembling voice, "God! How come I never knew before that you had Heaven's One Holy Water? This is really too wonderful, you know? You've already made history! You're the strongest eight year old water elemental mage apprentice in the last thousands of years!"

"Che..." Frowning in disdain, Aimi rolled her eyes at the teacher and said, "What are you saying? How am I the strongest water elemental mage apprentice!? Putting others aside, I can't even necessarily beat Aila."

"Ah!" The lecturer seemed to have frozen into a statue after hearing Aimi's words. Aimi continued, "What's so good about Heaven's One Holy Water? I can't even condense it into ice. I'd much rather have Aila's Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons. At least its destructive ability is much greater, and has a much more imposing manner!"

"What! Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons!" The lecturer couldn't believe Aimi's words at all. But seeing Aimi's envious expression, she didn't seem to be lying. This was too ridiculous; Heaven's One Holy Water was the ruler of water, while Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons was the ruler of ice. There was nothing more innately powerful than these two types!

In that instant, everyone's envious gazes locked onto Aila. The female lecturer said contently, "Heavens! This is really too amazing. I hadn't imagined that there would actually be such talents amongst my students. God is really doting on me."

The lecturer excitedly said to the two girls, "From now on, the two of you will definitely be the beautiful overlords, unrivalled in this generation. You two will be the strongest pillars of support amongst the Water Arts mage apprentices!"

"Please!" Aimi and Aili simultaneously interrupted the lecturer. As they looked at her, as well as the surrounding classmates, Aimi said in embarrassment, "We aren't overlords or anything. Compared to Suo Jia, we're nothing. Even against the two of us combined, Suo Jia could completely kill us in a single strike within 3 seconds!"

"What!" Hearing Aimi's words, the female lecturer's eyes seemed to glitter like stars. She gripped her hands tightly in excitement and asked Suo Jia, "Hurry up and say, what innate talent do you possess?"

Rolling his eyes in annoyance at the lecturer, Suo Jia replied, "Based on Teacher's knowledge, is there any innate talent better than Heaven's One Holy Water and Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons?"

"That...." The lecturer immediately calmed down at Suo Jia's words. That's right....no matter if it was Heaven's One Holy Water or Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons, both were the rulers of ice and water. There wasn't a third innate talent that could stand side by side with these two, let alone trump them.

Doubtfully looking at Suo Jia, the lecturer asked in confusion, "In that case, how could you be more formidable than either of them? And what exactly is your innate talent?"

Calmly looking at the lecturer and the other classmates, Suo Jia said, "Me? I'm no different from everyone else. Actually, in terms of talent, I'm inferior to everyone present."

"How could that be!" The lecturer cried out in shock, "How could someone with average talent be stronger than those with Heaven's One

Holy Water and Ice Fiend's Nine Prisons? This is utterly impossible!"

Coldly gazing at the lecturer, Suo Jia said in a biting tone, "Nothing is impossible. I have my own methods to become more powerful. As for how I did it, I cannot say. Even if I did say it, you guys wouldn't be able to replicate it!"

Suo Jia rubbed the Atlantis' Wisdom on his head. Although he didn't have the advantage of talent, he had Atlantis' Wisdom. He was always in the meditative state. Such fast progress wasn't something that anyone could achieve. This was his greatest secret; his way was something that nobody could replicate. Whether it was Atlantis' Wisdom or Faerie's Soul, only one of each existed in the entire world. There were no copies of either.

In addition, by just relying on his magic items, Suo Jia was able to enter a new realm after listening to Aila's advice. In terms of attack, defense, recovery and auxiliary he had generated completely new systems for all four of them. This was something only his balanced abilities could do. Neither Aimi or Aila could even dream of using water magic like he did.

After the victory from the match having broken a record in history, all of the class's girls began to cheer in joy. At the same time, all the fire mages had already left the area. This was the first time they had ever suffered from such a frustrating defeat, and they didn't have the face to stay there any longer.

The tournament continued on. By noon, the first round of the tournament had finally ended. The water mages, earth mages, fire warriors, and wind warriors were the four divisions that had made it to the second round. However, the second round didn't start till later in the afternoon.

At noon, a ton of people arrived at the school dining halls, and began eating. Suo Jia shooed off the crowds, and sat together with Aimi and Aila to discuss matters.

Carefully analyzing the next four opponents, Suo Jia asked, "Aimi, you've already been in the limelight this morning. Shouldn't you go

second in the next round?”

Although Aimi didn't want to agree with Suo Jia, she still nodded her head to confirm her consent. Seeing Aimi's reluctant expression, Suo Jia said in a low voice, "I'm doing this for your sake. No matter if it's the earth mage's Rock Thorn, or the fire warriors' and wind warriors' close ranged attacks, they aren't things that your fragile Aqua Aegis can resist!"

"This..." Aimi was at a loss after hearing Suo Jia's words. When she pondered this carefully, she couldn't help but begin sweating. That's right....the Aqua Aegis couldn't block Rock Thorns. As for warriors, there was no way she could get close enough to freeze them as she had done to her opponent earlier. In that case, she'd lose miserably; the fame she had gained this morning would disappear completely.

Credits

Translator: [Pika Translations](#) / [TaffyGirl13](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)